

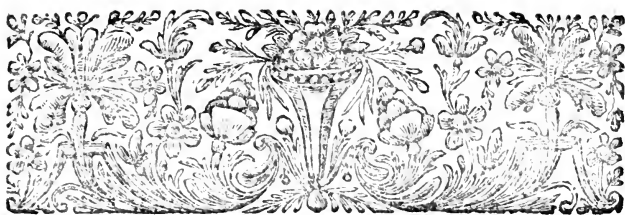


173.14

Froese

ADAMS 173.14





A L

Múí ilustre y nóble Señor

Don *GUILLELMO STANHOPE*,

Señór Barón de *HARRINGTON*,

Embaxadór que fue en la Corte de España, Plenipotenciário en los Congressos de Sevilla, y Soissons; y al presente úno de los Principales Secretarios de Estado de su Magestad Británica, del Consejo de su Mag<sup>d</sup>. &c.

Exc<sup>mo</sup>. Señor.



O dexára en mi de fer animosidad temeraria, el poner éste libro à los piés de V. Ex. si su buen índole y afabilidad no le quitássen el ser Offadía.

El Nombre de Stanhope es tan conocido en España, de tantos años à ésta parte; y su múí ilustre y nóble Profapia, tan altamente respetada y aplaudida, que nunca cederá al olvido su Memória: yá

## DEDICATION.

por las Muchas y continuadas Embaxadas conque han ilustrado aquella Corte ; yá por las heróicas hazañas, que, en tiempo de Guerra, han merecido los aplausos de la Europa toda ; ò yá por la tranquilidad, que han fegerido en vários Congrésos para el bién público. En tiempo de Páz, les ha venerado la España como Nativos de aquél País, y en tiempo de Guerra les há considerado tan Galanes como Valerosos. En recíproca benevolencia, siempre aquella familia há mostrado tal inclinación y Cariño à los de aquella nación, que, parece, le asiste una propensión innata à beneficiarles y protegerles.

!Esto es, loque esfuerza mi humildad à ofrecér à su Ex. éste tenuísimo obsequio ; pues V. E. há heredado, como que en compléxo, lo heróico y especiales prerogativas de la familia toda : há seguido los pasos, continuado los progresos, y adelantado la gloria de sus Antecésores. Há muchos, que consagran sus libros à Príncipes y Proceres, ajénos del conocimiento de que tratan, dando por motivo la necesidad de su proteccion contra los Malévolos (como si con el libro no se comprásse la libertad de murmurar del) : Mas cuerdos y menos Lisonjeros éran los Antiguos, que dedicaban los suyos, ò à sus Amigos, ò algún Príncipe inteligente, à quién, por razón del argumento, se le debía la obra. Y revocando yo al uso moderno la práctica de los Antiguos, Nadie podrá negar mi acierto en la elección de V. E. pues elijo à Persona tan benemérita, que puede juzgar y aprobar : luego en vano solicitara yo à V. E. para la acceptacion, quando de justicia se le debe esta dedicatória. Sé bién, que el tributárle elógios, será ofender su Modestia : Porloque suplico, solo, elque V. E. se digne de recibir y patrocinar ésta obrilla, como à demostración de mi Afecto y Veneración. En caso, que V. E. hallare algo de su agrado

## D E D I C A T I O N.

grádo y mereciére fu aprobación, me quedará el consuéio de decírle, loque Horácio à su Mecénas :

*Magnum hoc ego duco, quod placui tibi.*

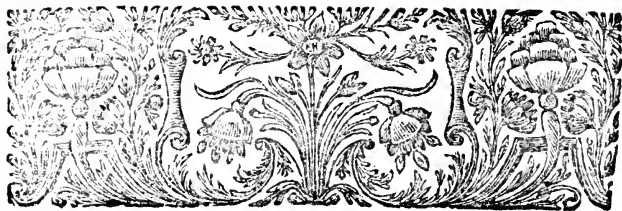
Y la obligación de rogár à Diós, le G<sup>de</sup>. y prospére por dilatádos años : Afsegurándole, que en tanto me tendré por feliz, en quanto publicaré que fói, con el debído rendimiento, de

*V. Exc<sup>a</sup>.*

*El mas humilde y Obediente fervidór*

*Q. B. S. M.*

SEBASTIAN PUCHOL, D. D.



# THE P R E F A C E.



*U* P O N a careful Examination of this Grammar, (altho' the best that is extant,) I found the Rules laid down so very deficient and incorrect, that I thought I could not do the Publick a greater Service, than by presenting them with one more perfect. This induced me to undertake the Correction of it; to lay down a new, modern, and approved Orthography and Etymology; and to add so many necessary Rules to it, that the Reader, who is acquainted with the former Edition, will hardly know that this is STEVENS'S GRAMMAR. I do not intend to undervalue what others have done of this Nature: What I can say without Presumption is, that I have consulted all former Grammars, and inserted in this what I have found well grounded: I have rectified Abundance of Mistakes, which other Authors have passed over, and corrected others laid down by them as established Rules; and I leave the Learned to Judge of the many Improvements made in this Edition.

## THE PREFACE.

*The Rules for the true Pronuntiati<sup>o</sup>n are as clearly expressed as can be done in Writing. The Articles and Parts of Speech are explained in a Manner easy and intelligible to young Beginners. The Conjugation of Verbs (one of the most intricate Parts of the Castilian Language) is laid down in the most plain Manner, to each of which is added that of the Passive, Reciprocal, Impersonal, and other irregular Verbs. I have also inserted two Tables, by which the Learned will, at first view, see the Difference between the three Conjugations.*

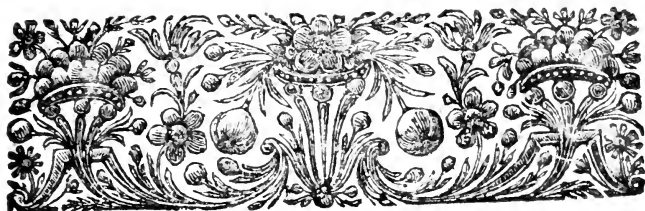
*The Curious will herein find all that is requisite and necessary, to lead them into the perfect Knowledge of the Castilian (commonly called the Spanish Tongue) which has been preserved in those Provinces, in a greater Purity and Perfection, than in any other of the more distant ones from the Court : This was the Reason that induced King Don Alonzo the Wise to order that all publick Writings, &c. should be made in the Castilian Tongue. I have laid down some sixt Rules in the Rudiments, to avoid ambiguity in the Pronuntiati<sup>o</sup>n of the Letters B, V, &c. erroneously used before, even among the Spaniards. The Vocabulary, Familiar Phrases, and the Colloquies are carefully amended; and all the Words are accented to avoid Mistakes in the Pronunciati<sup>o</sup>n.*

*It was high Time (nay there was an absolute necessity) to make a new Edition of the Spanish Grammar : For all Languages alter by Time and Custom ; and the Castilian has received so many Alterations, that no-body can pretend to teach it, or learn it in Perfection, as it is spoken at Court, and used by modern Authors, without some new Instructions. The c,*  
(called

## THE PREFACE.

(called cedilla) which was so much in use before, is now left off, and the Reasons for it the Reader will find in my Observations on that Letter, and the *z* is substituted in its Place. The *y*, which commonly passed as a Vowel, is now a Consonant in Composition. Some of the Spanish Words are softened, and others altered, as more conformable to the Latin; as instead of *Coraçon* we say *Corazón*: for *vezes*, *dezir*, *hazér*; *véces*, *decir*, *hacer*: instead of *estoy*, *doy*, *Reyno*; *estói*, *dói*, *Réino*: for *dava*, *iva*, *devo*, *escrivo*; *dába*, *íba*, *débo*, *escribo*: for *Cavállo*, *Govierno*; *Ca-bállo*, *Gobiérno*: for *abuelo* or *aguelo*; *avuélo*: *háí* for *ay* or *hay*: *Ahí* for *aí* or *haí*, &c. I have followed, in the Correction of this Grammar, the Dictionary lately published by the Royal Academy of Madrid, which is the only Standard for all those who aim at Speaking and Writing correctly and elegantly the Spanish Language.





THE  
R U D I M E N T S  
OF THE  
*Spanish Grammar.*



S there are many who study the CASTILIAN language, without understanding before-hand what Grammar is, and that every body may have certain rules for his guide, I think it may not be useless to make an epitomy of it and its parts.

GRAMMAR is the art of speaking and writing properly. And is divided into four parts, *viz.*

ORTHOGRAPHY, or the method of true writing.

ETYMOLOGY, or the knowledge of the original words.

SYNTAX, or the manner of forming the words into sentences.

PROSODY, or the knowledge of the accent or quantity of the syllables, as to their being pronounced long or short.

PART I.

Of ORTHOGRAPHY,

*Which contains some very curious and necessary observations to learn the Castilian tongue in perfection.*

CHAP. I.

*Of the Letters in general.*

THE *Spanish* language has not a peculiar alphabet of it's own, tho' it is not disputable, but that before the conquest of *Spain* by the *Romans*, the *Spaniards* had characters or letters to express their language in, and that the *Goths* also introduced theirs. But there is no memorial of the former, and the *Gothic* ceased in the year 1091 by decree of the national council at *Leon*, in the reign of Don *Alonso VI.* in which it was appointed that no characters should be used besides that of the *Roman*: Ever since which time they have continued the *Latin* letters; with the addition of a few borrowed from the *Greek*, in order to own their debt for such words as they took from that language, and these are *ch*, *k*, *ph*, *th*, *y*, correspondent to  $\chi$ ,  $\kappa$ ,  $\phi$ ,  $\theta$ , and  $\upsilon$ .

The *Castilian* alphabet consists of twenty-six letters, including the *b*: the twenty-three following are common to other languages.

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q,  
R, S, T, U, X, Y, Z.

a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s,  
t, u, x, y, z.

And



And the other three letters ç, j, ñ, for their different pronunciation are peculiar to the *Castilian* language.

Of the common, these five are vowels A, E, I, O, U, to which the Y is added for the Greek words, so called from their expressing a sound without the help of any other letter. The rest are consonants, so called from their having no sound alone, and are regularly divided into *mutes* and *semi-vowels*; or, as others say, into *natural* and *confus'd*: the *mutes* or *natural* are B, C, D, G, K, P, Q, T, Z, and the *semi-vowels* or *confused* are F, H, L, M, N, R, S, X, so called for their being pronounced with a vowel before and after it.

Of which L, M, N, R, S, are liquids: ç, j, ñ, v, and y, are likewise consonants in the *Spanish* language.

*Of the pronunciation of the letters.*

**A** Letter is nothing more (in the sense we speak here) than *a note of a peculiar sound, and an individual part of a syllable.*

Letters are (as some authors affirm) in comparison to the languages what notes are to Musick. If from the notes may be formed various and innumerable tones, whose sweet and pleasant harmony cherish, and with sounding eloquence persuades; so are the concerts of words infinite, which result from the letters, whose composition with an eloquent melody describes to us the thoughts, and brings the invisible to life: both as written, speak to the eyes, and as pronounced, to the hearing. And if nobody without the perfect knowledge of notes can boast of being a Musician; less can any one presume to know with delicacy a language without a full knowledge of the letters.

#### 4      *The R U D I M E N T S of*

For which reason, and as in the order of nature, the simple is first, and then the compound, it appears proper to begin by the vowels, whose sound is so simple as to be formed only by opening the mouth.

*Of the vowels.*

A    a

**I**S pronounced as in *English*, *aw*, as in the words *all, ball, call, ball*: without differing from the manner in which it is pronounced by other nations.

E    e

Is pronounced the same as in the *Latin, Italian,* and *French* tongues, nay even the same as in the English in the words to *blefs, to fend.*

Tho' *e* be doubled it never loses its pronunciation, so that when there are two *ee* in a word, both are plainly and distinctly pronounced, as *créér, to believe; léér, to read.*

I.    Y.

These letters are called *i Latin*, and *y Greek*: the former preserves it's natural pronunciation in composition, and is pronounced by all nations, as in these words, *visible, vision, terrible*: the latter has the same pronunciation; but when in composition is a consonant, and is pronounced as two *ii*, as *ayúda, help; ayúno, a fast.*

Of *j* called *i jóta*. See letter G.

O

Has the same pronunciation as in *Latin* and *English*, in these words *thróno, throne; obediente, obedient.*

U.

U. V.

The *Spanish* language has two *u*'s as well as the *Latin* ; *u* vowel called by the *Spaniards* an open or square *u* ; and *v* consonant called *v* close, or *de Corazoncillo*, which always goes before the vowels, and is never joined to a consonant, nor ends any word. *U* vowel is pronounced as double *o o* in *English*, and these words *Cupido* a *Cupid*, *Cúra* a Curate or a Cure, are pronounced as if they were written thus *Coopido*, *coora* ; because the pronunciation of the words book *libro*, cook *cozinéro*, is exactly the same as that of the *u* vowel in *Spanish*.

*V* consonant is pronounced by the *Spaniards* in the same manner as the *u* vowel ; tho' there are some authors who pretend to say, that it's pronunciation is a sound between that of *b* and *u*, but I see no manner of ground for this exception.

*Observations upon the vowels.*

A.

**T**HIS letter has often the masculine accent, as *amará*, he will love ; *bará*, he will do it ; and the feminine, as *amára*, when I might love, in the last syllable. There are four diphthongs formed of this vowel when it goes before other vowels, as we shall shew hereafter.

*A* when by itself, stands for a preposition which denotes the dative case, as *dói la preferéncia à Pédro*, I give the preference to Peter ; it governs also the accusative, as *yo ámo à Dios*, I love God ; denotes the part or place where one goes, as *vói à Róma*, I go to Rome, it also precedes the accusative when before an infinitive governed by another verb, as *vámos à cenár*,

*cenár*; let us go to supper ; *à passeár*, to walk ; *à jugár*, to play.

When before the adverbs or adverbial moods it denotes the manner in which an action is executed, as *à sabiéndas*, knowingly ; *à trúeco*, by changing ; rather purposely, *à brázo partido*, upon equal terms : *à* denotes likewise when a thing is to be done, as *à las doce del día*, at noon.

It is often an interjection, as *à señór fuláno*, ho there such a one ; *à señór Pédro*, ho there Peter.

It is taken for *con*, with, as *castíguese el oficiál à péna capitál*, let the officer be punished with a capital punishment.

For *bácia*, towards, as *volvió la cabeça à tal parte*, he turned his head towards such a place.

For *pára*, for, as *condúce à éste fin*, it is proper for this end.

For *por*, by, as *à fuérza ganó la ciudad*, by force he gained the city.

For *según*, according, as *à la móda de Francia*, according to the French fashion.

For *si*, if, as *à saber esto*, if I knew this—, upon knowing of this.

For *sino*, if not, unless, as *à no venir à tiémpo*, if he should not come in time, &c.

For *en*, in, as *à vista de tal procedér que quiere que bága?* upon sight of such proceeding what will you have me to do ?

And tho' there are many authors who are of opinion, that *à* stands for the third person singular of the present tense indicative of the verb *haver*, to have, saying *aquél á*, I say that then it is to be written with an *b* thus *aquél bá*, observing the same in all the tenses and moods ; for *haver* is derived from the Latin verb *habere*, and regard being had to this there will happen no mistake or equivocation.

There are other authors who assert, that *à* stands for *bái*, there is, which is absolutely false ; for in the speeches which denote time, as *à un año que vine à*  
*Lóndres,*

*Lóndres*, it is a year since I came to London, à must be written with *b* thus *bé* abbreviated, or by the figure Apocope, because then it is the third person singular of the present tense indicative of the verb *hacer*, to do, and is the same as *hace un año que vine à Lóndres*, according to the rule.

*Apocope demit finem, quem dat Paragoge.*

But of these we shall speak more at large in another place.

### E.

E either is masculine, as in the last syllable of *amaré*, I shall love; *aprenderé*, I will learn; *enseñé*, I have taught; *oiré*, I shall hear, &c. or feminine, as *quando amáre*, when I shall love; *quando olvidáre*, when I shall forget; and it is so because the accent is not acute in these last examples.

Of the *è*, when before other vowels, may be formed four diphthongs.

E is sometimes used as a first person of the verb *haber*, but then it must be written with *b*, saying *yo he comprado un anillo de oro*, I have bought a gold ring.

It is often a conjunction, and is used instead of *y*, when the following word begins with *i* vowel, as *los Holandéses è Ingléses*, the Dutch and the English *España è Italia*, Spain and Italy.

Poets often take the liberty to add the letter *e* at the end of some words using the figure Paragoge, saying *amóre* for *amór*, love, and this they do for the sake of the rhyme.

E is sometimes an interjection, but then *b* must be added to it, as *bé, que dices?* ha! what do you say? *bé, que quierés?* ha! what you will have? it stands likewise for an adverb, as *bé, la mugér*, see! the woman,

## I. Y.

The *Latin i* stands for a vowel in the *Spanish* language, and the *y* for a consonant ; but when a strong aspiration is required in the pronunciation, then *j* serves as a consonant, as *yá*, already ; *jústo*, just.

When the accent is laid on the *i* as *leí*, *ví*, then it has a masculine pronunciation, and when not, a feminine one.

There are four diphthongs also formed from this vowel.

When *y* is by itself in a speech, it is generally a conjunction copulative, and sometimes suspensive, as *Juán y Pedro*, *y búyen*, *y córren*, *y peléan*, John and Peter, fly, run, and fight : But it must be observed, that when the following word begins with *i*, then by Euphonia *è* must be made use of instead of *y*, as *los Españóles è Italiános*, *Francésès è Ingléses*, the Spaniards and the Italian, the French and the English.

*I* or *y* are sometimes put instead of *abí*, there, but as this use is meerly voluntary it must be never used.

## O.

This letter is also pronounced sometimes with a masculine accent, as *amó*, he loved ; *respondió*, he answered.

Four diphthongs are formed of this letter, when it precedes other vowels.

When the *o* is by itself in a speech, it is often a conjunction disjunctive, as *ò sábio*, *ò ignorante*, *ò bravo*, *ò covarde*, *ha de venir*, *con mígo*, let him be wife, or ignorant, or brave, or a coward, he must come with me.

It is likewise an interjection, as *ò maldad !* *ò dolor !* O wickedness ! O pain ! but of this we shall speak more largely in another place.

As an adverb, as *ò si yo fuéa rico*, O that I were rich.

U is

## U.

*U* is sometimes pronounced with a masculine accent, as *tú*, *fü*, thou, his; of it are likewise made four diphthongs.

When after a *g*, *u* is joined to *e* or *i*, then *u* loses its pronunciation; and these words, *Guedéja*, a lock of hair; *guía* a guide, are pronounced as in the English words of giddy, Guinea, or as in the French words *guerre*, war; *guérir*, to cure. *Aguéro*, an omen; *verguénza*, shame, &c. are excepted.

When it is by itself in a speech, then it is a conjunction, or interjection, instead of *o*, when the word following begins with an *o*, as *impediméto* is *obstáculo*, impediment or obstacle.

*Of the pronunciation of the Consonants.*

## B. b.

**T**HIS letter is pronounced as in other languages, closing the lips, and as if it had an *e* after it, as in the English word *Bay*.

As to the letter *b*, its difference, and similitude of pronunciation with the letter *v*, we must refer the reader to the 2d chapter as to its proper place.

## C, ç, Z.

*C* when before the letters *e i* is pronounced softer than *s*, as *cédro*, a cedar tree; *ciélo*, heaven: when before the vowels *a, o, u*, is pronounced as *k*, as *cára*, the face; *comér*, to eat; *cuérda*, a cord or rope.

When *b* follows the letter *c*, it is pronounced as in the English cheese, *quéso*; child, *níño níña*; thus are *chánza*, a jest; *chocoláte*, chocolate; *chíco*, little, small; *múcho*, much: these words excepted *charidád*, charity; *chóro*, a choir; *Archángel*, an Archangel, &c. which

are

are derived from the *Latin charitas, chorus, archangelus*, for *c* then is pronounced as *k*.

Upon the *Cedilla* formed with a small dash under it, I think it convenient to observe; first, that as by a resolution newly taken by the members of the Royal Academy at *Madrid*, the *ç* had been only invented to supply the defect of combination of *ce, ci*, in the three vowels *a, o, u*, in order to pronounce *ça, ço, çu*, instead of *ca, co, cu*; and this having taken place, and with the same softness as the *z*; the *ç* is reputed at present as superfluous; and the reason is, because *ç*, in the opinion of several authors, is not a different letter from the *z*, but the same differently formed, this being the reason why many authors have used both promiscuously, for their pronunciation are very much alike in these words, *çapatér, ozapatéro*, a shoe-maker; *cáça, cáza*, hunting, &c. Besides, because *ç* is not found in the mother tongues, and the *z* is; further the *z* is a general letter in the beginning, middle, and ending of any word, which cannot be said of the letter *ç*, for which reason, it often cannot be used in the middle of a word, and in the end never; no body having written as yet *almirantáçgo*, admiralty; *balláçgo*, a reward for a thing lost; *mereçco*, I deserve; *padeçco*, I do suffer; *desliç*, a slipping; *luç*, light; *paç*, peace; *veloç*, swift. Wherefore I am of opinion that *ç* is superfluous in the *Spanish* language, and as such it's use must be avoided, placing the *z* in it's stead in every word where *ç* used to be.

But as *ç* is found in most of the *Spanish* authors, I think it proper to acquaint the curious, that it's pronunciation is the same as that of *c* when before the vowels *e i*; because, as has been said, *ç* was invented to supply the combination in the vowels, *a, o, u*. And tho' a certain rule might be given to keep both the *ç* and the *z* in the said language, which is, to use the *ç* when a consonant precedes, as *alabánça*, a praise; *enseñança*, instruction, teaching,  
 &c.



&c. and to use *z* when a vowel goes before, and in the beginning and end of words, as *altéza*, highness; *razón*, reason; *zélo*, zeal; *lúz*, light, &c. but as the foregoing opinion is better grounded, I think it more right to take away the *ç* and to use the *z*, as the modern authors do, whom I follow. *Z* is pronounced as the *English* pronounce the double *ff*.

## D. d.

*D* has the same sound in *Spanish*, as in the *Latin* and other languages. And although there are several authors who are of opinion that *d* is not to be pronounced when at the end of a word, yet I am of a contrary opinion, and say that it always is to be pronounced if it is written, with this difference only, that when it ends a word, its sound is softer, laying the accent on the preceding vowel, as *amistád*, friendship; *bondád*, goodness, &c.

## F f

Does not differ in its sound from that of the *Latin*, or of other languages; but it must be observed, that the *Spaniards* never use *ff* in their writings, as will be said afterwards, and if some do double them it is by way of a voluntary affectation. A certain author takes notice, that the *Spaniards* confound *f* with *ph*, or, to speak more proper, they use *f* instead of *ph*; I don't doubt but that in every nation there are ignorant people, but those who are skilled in Orthography ought to conform to the manner in which words are written in the original.

## G. g. J. X.

*G* is only guttural before the vowels *e*, *i*, but *j* and *x* are always aspirated, or guttural letters in the whole combination of the vowels, because in the  
same

same manner is pronounced *ja, je, ji, jo, ju*, as *xa, xe, &c.* *x* is not guttural in some words derived from the *Latin*, as *eximír*, to exempt; *exámen*, examination, &c. as it will be said in the 2d chapter, and when it goes before a consonant, as *excedér*, to exceed; *excitár*, to excite; *excluír*, to exclude; *excreméto*, excrement, &c.

*G* before the vowels *a, o, u*, is not aspirated or guttural, and is pronounced as in other languages, as *gállo*, a cock; *gólpe*, a blow; *gústó*, taste, pleasure. I cannot agree with some authors, who say, that when *g* comes before *n* it is sunk in the pronunciation, because the men of learning in *Spain* generally pronounce it, as in *Ignácio*, Ignatius; *ignorár*, to be ignorant; *ignóto*, unknown; *magnánimo*, magnanimous; *magnífico*, magnificent, &c.

## H.

*Jórdan, Martinianus, Tominque*, in his *Elench. Elem. P. II. Art. III.* *Littleton* in his *Latin Dictionary* lett. *H*, and other authors are of opinion that *H* (called by *St Jerom* an extensive vowel) is a letter for the following reasons.

First, a Letter is nothing else than a note of a peculiar sound, and a single part of a syllable; *h* is the same: therefore the *b* is a letter.

Secondly, The *b* comes originally from the *Hebrew* and *Greek* tongues; it was a letter with them: why then should it not be the same in the living languages? &c.

The *Spanish* authors place the *b* among the semi-vowels, because before and after it has a vowel in its pronunciation. See the abovesaid authors. But as the public has received the *b* with *Priscianus* as a note of aspiration and not as a letter, we must conform to it whether with reason or without it. *H* is generally pronounced so gently, that in many words it can scarce be perceived, as *hómbre*, a man; *humilde*, humble;

humble ; but when *ue* follows *b*, then *bu* is pronounced as the *English w* ; *búerta*, a garden ; *buésped*, an host or guest ; *huéssó*, a bone : like *wérta*, *wésped*, *wéssó*.

*H* after *c* is pronounced as in *English*, *church*, *much*, *iglésia*, *múcho*. Although some authors observe, that the *Spaniards* very rarely use the *b* after *p* and *t*, I say, that the *Spanish* tongue does not allow them the liberty to do it, and thus the learned must conform themselves to the etymology of words, saying *Thomás*, Thomas ; *Theología*, Theology or Divinity ; *Philosophía*, Philosophy.

# K.

The *Spaniards* make use of this letter only in conformity to the etymology of the words derived from other languages, as *Kalendário*, a Kalendar ; *Kalendas*, Kalends, the first day of the month, *Kyrie eleison*, &c. Greek ; and in proper names of cities, towns, &c. at *Kelmo*, *Kenard*, *Kunigunda*, &c. Saxon.

# L. 1.

Besides the single *l*, there is a double *ll* in *Spanish* language as in the *Latin*, but differently pronounced : the single one is pronounced as in other languages, but the double *ll* as in the *Italian gl* in the words *Figli*, *Moglie*, &c. or as the double *ll* in *French* in the words *coquille*, *fille*, &c. which sounds as if an *i* was after the first *l*, as of *lláve*, a key ; *llovér*, to rain ; *callár*, to be silent, read *liáve*, *liovér*, *caliár*. *L* is never doubled in the end of words.

It must be observed, that all words that have a double *l* in the *Latin*, are written in *Spanish* with a single one.

# M.

*M* is pronounced as in other languages, as *máno*, a hand ; *camíno*, a way ; *mádre*, mother, &c. in what manner 'tis to be doubled, or when it is to be kept single

single in the composition we shall speak afterwards in chap. 3.

## N.

There are two *n*'s in the *Spanish* language, one which is common to all languages, and is pronounced alike with them ; another proper and peculiar to the *Spanish*, written thus *ñ*, which is equivalent to two *n n*, and is called *n con tilde*, and is pronounced as *gn* in *Italian* and *French*, or, as if it had an *i* after *n*, as in these words, *áño*, a year ; *níño*, a child ; *montaña*, a mountain ; saying thus, *agno* or *anio*, *nigno* or *ninio*, &c.

## P.

There is nothing to be observed in the letter *p*, but that its pronunciation is the same as in *Latin*, as *pán*, bread ; *Pédro*, Peter.

*Pb* are used as *f*, and pronounced in the same manner ; but that in writing *f* ought to be used for *pb* is an insupportable error : because with *pb* and not with *f* are to be written the following words, *Philósofo*, a Philosopher ; *Phyfico*, a Physician ; *Physiología*, Philosophy, &c.

The *Latin p* is often changed into *b*, as of *recipere*, *recebír*, to receive ; but of this we shall speak hereafter.

## Q.

*U* always follows this letter as in other languages, and is pronounced in the same manner. When *ui* follows after *q*, then it is pronounced as if there was a *k* instead of *qu*, saying *quinto*, *kinto*, fifth, *quince*, *kince*, fifteen ; but when it follows *ua* or *ue*, the *u* is pronounced, tho' not strong, as *questión*, a question ; *consequência*, a consequence ; *quátro*, four, &c. the following are excepted, *tóque*, let him touch or ring ;

ring; *repíque*, let him ring out; *líquido*, liquid; *que*, that; *querér*, to be willing; *quién*, who; which are pronounced as if they were written with *k*.

## R

No way differs in it's sound from the *Latin* and *English*; but it must be observed, that at the beginning of words it is pronounced stronger than at the middle and end, because the initial *r* is equal to two *r r*, which always are pronounced with vehemence.

## S.

*S* simple, as well as compound, is pronounced as in *Latin*: *cum amassem sanctos*, *como amásse los santos*, when I could love the faints; *ò altísimo Dios*, O most high God: from whence it may be inferred, that all the preterimperfects of the optative, and the superlatives, are written and accented as in the *Latin*.

*S* in the *Spanish* is doubled in words derived from the *Latin*, of which we shall give sufficient notice in its place, but never is doubled at the end of words; and when they begin in the *Latin* with *s* to which follows a consonant as *c*, *m*, *p*, *t*, then is added an *e*, as from *scholasticus* say *escolástico*; *scribere*, *escribír*; *smaragdus*, *esmerálda*; *spina*, *espína*; *spiritus*, *espíritu*.

## T.

This letter is pronounced as in *Latin*, in the combination of all the vowels, as *Tácito*, *Tacto*, *tenaz*, &c. still or quiet, the sense of feeling, tenacious, in the middle of several words *t* is changed into *c*, and especially in words ending in *tia* and *tio*, as from *beneficentia* say *beneficéncia*, from *essentia*, *essência*; *justitia*, *justícia*, &c. beneficence, essence, justice.

There

There is no double *t* in the *Spanish* language.

When the original words have *th*, they are to be written in the same manner in the *Spanish*; as *Cátbedra*, *Cathólico*, *Mathéo*, *Theología*, pronouncing the *th* as a single *t*.

## X.

This is a guttural letter. Vid. Let. G.

I do only observe here, that all the *Spanish* words that begin with *x* are *Arabick*, except the following that come from the *Greek*, *Xanthénia*, a precious stone like amber in its colour; *Xánto*, a precious stone of a very yellow colour; *Xeníolo*, a small gift; *Xenodóchio*, an hospice, or an inn for strangers; *Xenón*, an habitation, a dwelling-place, a lodging; *Xenopárochos*, officers appointed to provide for the Ambassadors; *Xyrothéca*, the case wherein the Barbers put their razors and scissars; *Xysto*, a gallery, a summer-house, or an open place to take the air about a garden.

Y. Vid. Let. I.

Z. Vid. Let. C.

## C H A P. II.

*Of the letters when in composition.*

**T**HE only and sure rule to reduce the *Castilian* language in perfection, is to write it as it is spoke, and really pronounced; it is by this only that it is distinguished, and exceeds all other languages, not excepting the *Latin*; I have said the *Latin*, because that language joins the diphthongs, pronouncing only one letter, when they are wrote with two as *Cælum* is pronounced *Celum*: but the *Castilian*

*Castellan* pronounces its diphthongs in such a manner, that without losing a letter it preserves the sound of both vowels in one syllable, as *alcáide*, *áire*, *réy*, *léy*, *buéy*, &c. this being agreeable to the sense which the Antients gave of the word *diphthong*, defining it thus: *Diphthongus est duarum in una syllaba vocalium sonus perceptus*, a diphthong is the distinct sound of two vowels in one syllable; for which reason I am of opinion, that the Antients pronounced *Latin* in the same manner that the *Spanish* is now pronounced; and if it was not foreign to my present purpose, I would prove clearly the time when and how the *Latin* pronunciation has been corrupted, and by what means the syneresis in the diphthongs was introduced, but as this suffices for the present, I shall proceed in my design.

In order to form the Orthography, it is necessary to observe the modifications by which time has smoothed the roughness of words, and reduced them to the modern stile and manner of discourse: But as there are many, who manage the *Castilian* tongue in proportion to their genius, confounding letters together in their pronunciation, and using the consonants at their pleasure; to avoid such abuse it is proper to know,

That the springs from whence flow such variety and confusion in the Orthography are the following. First, the similitude of the pronunciation of some letters, whose use is so uncertain, that they are often mixed, and by the meer pronunciation it is difficult to distinguish their proper use: such are the *B* and *V* consonant, the *C* and the *Z* in the proper combinations, and in those of the *C*, in the two vowels *e* and *i*, the *G*, *J*, and *X* in the two vowels *e*, *i*, the *J* and *X* in their entire combinations; the *C* and the *Q*, and the *G* and *H*, in the combinations where the *u* interposes. Secondly, the use of the double consonants, which are commonly found in compound words, as *accesión*, *immortál*, *annotár*,  
C *arreglár*,

*arreglár, dissimulár, &c.* Thirdly, the use of many consonants which come together in various words, as *assumpto, sanctidad, demonstración, redención, &c.* This being supposed.

I say, first, that the *B* ought not to be pronounced and written instead of the *V*, nor the *V* be confounded with the *B*; since every one knows that they are different letters, and therefore it is absolutely necessary that their sound should be likewise different. To surmount this difficulty, regard must be had to the original from whence proceed the words in which these letters are found, because if they are derived from a word written with a *B*, as *Baculus, Beatus, Beneficium, bibere, bonus, &c.* they must be written with a *B*; and if from a word written with a *V*, they must be wrote so; as *Vácuo, valér, váno, vapór, vendér, venír, vída, &c.* which are derived from the Latin *vacuus, valere, vapor, vendere, venire, vita.*

For which reason all the preterimperfects of the indicative mood must be wrote with *B*, and not with *V*, as is usual, saying, *amába, cantába, bablába, orába*, because they come from the Latin *amabam, cantabam, loquebar, orabam.*

It must be observed likewise, that when in the original of a word there is a *P*, then the *B* must be used and not the *V*, because from *caput, concipere, lupus, sapiens, &c.* comes *cabéza, concebír, lóbo, fábio.*

Before the letters *L* and *R*, the *B* must always be put and not the *V*, saying *amáble, dáble, dóble, háblar, abrír, brávo, Hómbre, Póbre.*

Therefore that barbarous distinction ought to be avoided which ignorance has introduced, viz. that there must not be two *BB*'s or two *VV*'s in one word; because, if they are in the root they ought to be used, as in *Bárba, Bebér, Bárbaro, vivacidad, vivír, viviente, volvér, &c.*



And when the original of words is doubtful, I am of opinion that we ought to use the *B*, and not the *V*, the pronunciation of the first being more agreeable to our manner of speaking than that of the second.

I say, 2dly, that the *ç* called *cedilla*, is now superfluous in the *Spanish* tongue, and therefore the *Z* ought to be used in its stead, in all words whatsoever, as was said in chap. 1. Lett. *C*.

But it ought to be taken notice of, that the words ending in *Z* which are derived from the *Latin*, ought to change the *Z* into *C* in the plural, because it is so found in the original, and thus *felíz*, *luz*, *páz*, *véz*, *vóz*, make in the plural *felices*, *lúces*, *páces*, *véces*, *vóces*.

Hitherto has been written *bazér*, *dezír*, but these verbs being derived from *facere* and *dicere*, now the *Z* is changed into *C*, conformable to the original, and now we say *bacér*, *decír*, observing the same rule in all their derivatives.

I say, 3dly, that *G* being guttural only before the *e* and *i*, it ought to be used only in the primitives and derivatives, such are *afligír*, *cogér*, *colegír*, *elegír*, *protegér*, *regír*, &c. writing *aflíge*, *cóge*, *colíge*, *elíge*, *protége*, *ríge*, without being extended to the derivatives of *j* and *x*.

When the infinitives in *gér* or *gír* change *ér* or *ír* into *a* or *o* as in the present, then the *G* is changed into *j*, that the true pronunciation of the infinitive may be preserved; and thus from *fingír* say *fínjo*, *fínja*, from *Regír*, *Ríjo*, *Ríja*, &c.

All words which in their original have *g*, *i*, or *l*, are written with *j* and not with *x*, as from *longe* say *léjos* from *Tagus*, *Tájo*; from *tegula*, *téja*; *jaētātia*, *jaētāncia*; *jāspis*, *jáspe*; *jurare*, *jurár*; *justitia*, *justícia*; *juvenis*, *jóven*; from *consilium*, *conséjo*; *Filius*, *Híjo*; *melior*, *mejór*, in all the combination of the vowels; and when the infinitives end in *jar*, the *j* must be kept in all the tenses without exception.

In these words *Mageftád*, *Mugér*, *Tráge*, &c. common use has prevailed in keeping the *g* instead of the *j*.

If the words have *x* in their original, as *Texér*, *exémpló*, *execución*, *perpléxo*, *vexíga*, &c. it would appear ridiculous to write them with *j*, and not with *x*; and it must be likewise observed, that when the words have the letter *f* in their original, as *cáxa*, *dexár*, *xabón*, *xémé*, *xúgo*, &c. derived from *cap-fa*, *deferere*, *fapo*, *semipes*, *succus*, are to be written always with *x* and not with *j*; and the reason of it is, because the *f* has the sound somewhat like the *x*, and as the *Spaniards* do take the guttural pronunciation from the *Arabians*, and they pronounce the double *ff* as *x*, it cannot be absurd to change *f* into *x*.

Nouns ending in *x*, as *Bóx*, *Baláx*, *Relóx*, &c. keep the *x* in the plural; as well as all the verbs, which have *x* in the infinitive mood are to keep it in all the tenses, as from *baxár*, *dexár*, &c. say *báxo*, *baxába*, *Baxé*, &c.

*Q* is frequently in vulgar writings changed into *C*, but the true rule is to be guided by the original *Latin*: otherwise the derivation is obscured, and the pronunciation corrupted; from *C* are formed *cuájo*, *cuénta*, *cuérda*, &c. and from *Q* *quál*, *questión*, *quátro*, &c.

It is an impropriety, that many fall into of using *u* and *i* vowels instead of *y* and *v* consonants: but this irregularity is cautiously avoided by all correct writers, and exploded by the *Spanish Academy*; having established the letter *y* to be always a consonant in the *Spanish* words, and the accent is always laid on the annexed vowel, as *ayúda*, help; *ayúno*, a fast; *arróyo*, a rivulet, or a brook. It must be likewise avoided to put the *y* immediately before or after a consonant, or at the end of a verb or word, except the following *Léy*, *Réy*, *Buéy*, &c.

The *Spaniards*, to retain the softness of the sound of the *Latin* consonant *j*, for want of an exact equivalent, change it into *y* consonant, as in *adjuvare*, *jejunare*, *jacere*, which the *Spaniards* make *ayudár*, *ayunár*, *yacér* : and in conformity to the *Greek*, in words borrowed from that language, they preserve it as a vowel, *Σύμβολον*, *Μυστήριον*, *Ἄζυμο*, *Μαρτύρ*. *Symbolo*, *Mystério*, *ázymo*, *Mártyr*. So likewise in the third conjugation of verbs, as *argúyo*, *argúyes*, *argúye*, I dispute, &c. but in the imperfect say thus : *arguía*, &c. the accent being to be put on the vowels and never on consonants, the same is the first person of the preterperfect, as *arguí*, I disputed, &c. the *Spaniards* likewise say at present, *dói*, I give ; *estói*, I am ; *bói*, to day, &c.

### C H A P. III.

#### *Of the use of letters doubled.*

**E** and **O** are often doubled in *Spanish*, to come the nearer to the radical pronunciation, as *Acree-dór*, *Creér*, *Leér*, *Cooperár*, *Loór* : in which both the vowels are pronounced distinctly. And it is on the contrary, wrong in some, who superfluously add *e* in words derived from the *Latin*, as in *Fee*, *Veer*, instead of *Fé*, *Vér*.

As to consonants, the variety is great, but to avoid all affectation, and speak properly it is to be observed, that **C** is never to be doubled before the vowels *A*, *O*, *U*, or before consonants, and we therefore write *Acaécér*, *Acomodár*, *Ocáso*, *Ocasiôn*, *Acusár*, *Acumulár*, *Aclamár*, &c. But before the vowels *E* and *I*, **C** is doubled in such words as are derived from the *Latin*, and had them originally, as *Accelerár*, *Accéso*, *Accénto*, *Occidente*, except the following words *Aceptár* and *Sucedér*,

because altho' in their original they have two *c c*, they are not specified in the pronunciation by the *Spaniards*.

*Latin* words terminating in *ctio*, change the *t* into *C*, as *Acción*, *Cocción*, *Dicción*, *Lección*, *Producción*. And if either of these two *C*'s were omitted, the derivation would be the less evident.

*M* and not *N* is always to be made use of before *B*, *M*, *P*, as *Ambiente*, *immortal*, *império*.

Words compounded of the *Latin* prepositions *In* and *Con*, follow the *Latin* rule of turning *In* into *Im*, and *Con* into *Com*, as *Immaculado*, *Immediato*, *Immemorial*, *Immortal*, &c. *Commensurar*, *Commovér*, *Commutár*, &c. In all which words the *M* is doubled, tho' in several other common words one *M* is lost, as *Comércio*, *Común*, *comunion*, &c. Some change *Im* into *Em*, as *Emmascarado*, *emma-grecér*, *Emmudecér*, &c.

*N* is likewise doubled in several words compounded with *An*, *En*, *In*, *Con*, as *Annexión*, *Annotár*, *Connatural*, *Connexión*, *Ennegrecér*, *Ennoblecér*, *Innato*, *Innocente*, *Innovár*, &c. except *Anulár*, *Anunciár*, *Anillo*, &c.

The letter *R* is doubled in the words that have a strong pronunciation in the middle ; as *Abórro*, *Bórro*, *Errór*, *Guerra*, *Pérro*, &c. Those words that have one *r* in the middle are pronounced softly, as *ára*, an altar ; *aréna*, sand ; *ira*, wrath. There is no word in the *Spanish* language that begins or ends with two *rr*, but the initial *R* has always a strong sound, as *rábia*, rage ; *razón*, reason ; *reñór*, rector ; *reñír*, to quarrel, &c. it must be observed, that when any consonant precedes the *R*, then *R* is never doubled, and it would look but barbarous to write these words with two *rr*, *bónrra*, honour ; *bonrrófo*, honourable ; *enriquecér*, to grow rich, &c. because the preceding consonant makes the pronunciation strong, so that the *r* is only to be doubled when between two vowels, as *tierra*, earth ; *errór*, an error.

*S* is to be doubled in the words that have two *ss* in their original, as *assár*, to roast; *cessár*, to cease; *essência*, essence; *necessidád*, necessity; the same is to be observed in the second preterimperfect of the subjunctive mood, as *amássé*, I might love; *enseñássé*, I might teach; *buviéssé*, I might have: in all the superlatives, as *amantíssimo*, most loving; *beatíssimo*, most holy, most happy; *doctíssimo*, most learned; and in adverbs superlatives, as *doctíssimamente*, wisely; so are the words *accesso*, access; *congresso*, congress; *excesso*, excess; *progreso*, progress; and all the compounds of simple words that begin with *s*, as of *saltár*, to jump, comes *assaltár*, to assault; of *sentír*, to be sensible, or to feel, comes *assentír*, to assent, of *susto*, fright, comes *assustár*, to frighten.

The two *l l*, which in *Spanish* have a peculiar pronunciation, are doubled before the vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, when in Latin *c*, *f*, *p*, &c. precedes *l*, as *llano*, plain; *llanto*, crying, grief; *llave*, a key; *llama*, flame; *lleno*, full; *llorar*, to cry; *llover*, to rain; *lluvia*, rain; as it will be said at large in the treating of the formation of the *Spanish* words from the *Latin*, which will be put at the end of this Grammar.

The said consonants only are to be doubled in the *Spanish* tongue, because no body now pronounces two *bb*, two *dd*, two *ff*, two *gg*, two Latin *ll*, two *pp*, two *tt*, nor double *w*. This is the method newly taken of the Royal Academy of *Madrid*, and this is that which the modern authors follow.

## C H A P. IV.

*Of the rules that are to be observed upon the concurrence of divers consonants.*

**F**ROM two to four are the consonants, which occur together between two vowels, of which there is some diversity in writing, which varies from the manner in which they are pronounced, and are *BST*, *BSTR*; *CT*, *CTR*; *MPC*, *MPT*; *NCCT*, *NSC*, *NSCR*, *NSP*, *NST*, *NSTR*; *SC*; *XC*, *XCL*, *XPL*, *XPR*, *XQ*, *XT*, *XTR*; to understand which observe the following rules.

Rule I. The letters *BST* and *BSTR* are to be pronounced in all the words in which they occur, according to their original, as *absténér*, to abstain; *abstinéncia*, abstinence; *obstáculo*, obstacle; *substituir*, to substitute; *abstrabér*, to make an abstract; *abstrácto*, an abstract; because they are all distinctly pronounced in the *Spanish*.

Rule II. *CT*, and *CTR*, are also to be pronounced and written as in the original, as *dócto*, learned; *doctór*, doctor; *récto*, right; *doctrína*, doctrine; *pléctro*, a quill, used to play upon the strings of a harp; and this without any exception, otherwise it would appear an affectation.

Rule III. In the words in which concur *MPC* and *MPT* the letter *P* is lost, because it is not really pronounced in *assumpción*, assumption; *exempción*, exemption; *redempción*, *redemptór*, *promptitud*, &c. so that they are to be written thus *assunción*, &c.

I cannot pass over an observation which occurs to me here, and is that the gentleman of the Academy change *MP* into *N*, being of opinion that the said words are to pronounced thus *assunción*, *redención*: for which resolution I cannot see nor find any other foundation,

foundation, than the mere affectation of pronouncing *M* as *N* (an abuse which I observed when at *Madrid*) confounding in it not only the *Spanish* but even the pronunciation of the *Latin* tongue: I say, that I observed many to pronounce the words of Transubstantiation thus: *hoc est enim corpus meum*, instead of saying with distinction and clearness, *hoc est enim corpus meum*. I can't but be much surprised that an academic body, and such as that of the Royal Academy of *Madrid* composed of persons of such learning and eminency, had taken no notice of the like abuse, and to give to the *M* the pronunciation as they ought in the combination of all the vowels, there being no reason to make the least alteration in it.

Rule IV. When *nēt* occur together in *Latin*, all the letters are often preserved in *Spanish* in writing, but the *c* is hardly, if at all pronounced in speaking, as *sānēto*, *sanētidād*, *distīnēto*, *pūnēto*, &c. write *sānto*, *santidād*, &c.

*N S C* and *N S C R* are to be pronounced in the words where they are found, as *transcendental*, *conscripto*, *inscripto*, this word *consciencia* excepted, in which the *f* is not specified.

*N S P* and *N S T* are retained in the *Spanish*, as *conspiración*, *transparēnte*, *transposición*, *transportár*, *transplantár*, *constár*, *constāncia*, *constitución*, *institución*, &c. the use of the letters *N S T R* must be kept in the words *constreñír*, *construír*, *construcción*, *demonstráble*, *demonstración*, *instruír*, *instrucción*, *ménstruo*, *mónstruo*, &c. which otherwise happens in *mostrar*, *mostrador*, *mostrénco*, and their derivations in which *n* is omitted.

*N. B.* It is to be observed by the by, that the *n* is lost in these words *Traстеár*, *Trasladár*, *Trasládo*, *Traslucír*, *Traсночár*, *Traспalar*, *Traспáссо*, *Trastro-cár*, for the reason of being so admitted: but is preserved in the following *Transferir*, *Transfiguración*,  
2 *Transgressión*,

*Trafgreffión, Translación, Transmigración, Transmulár, Transformár, Transsubstanciación, Transversál.*

Rule V. The two consonants *ſ C* are to be retained in those words, in which the vowels *a* or *u* follows them, as *escála, escáma, escóta, escuéla, escória, Pescádo, Pescuézo*: and although the *ſ* is not pronounced in the words *apacentár, adolecér, conciéncia, ciéncia, conocér, crecér, florecér, pacér*, yet it is retained in *ascendér, ascendéncia, ascendeñte, adolescéncia, condescendér, descendér, desceñír, aquiescéncia, disceptación, discernír, disciplina, discípulo, miscelánea.*

Rule VI. *X C*, when between two vowels, are to be pronounced if they are so in the original, as *excélso, éxcelénte, excídio, excommunión, excúsa, excusár, &c.* without exception. The like is to be observed in the concurrence of *X C L* and *X C R*, as *exclamár, excluír, excremento, &c.* as likewise when after *x* follow *p* alone, *pl*, or *pr*, as *experiéncia, exposición, explanár, explicár, explorár, exprimir.* And lastly, when *q* or *t* follow *x* their original is to be attended to, as *exquisíto, extendér, exterioridad, extinguír; extrabér, extrémó, extrangéro, extraordinário, &c.*

## C H A P. V.

### *Of the Diphthongs.*

**T**H E concurrence of two vowels, which compose but one syllable, is so frequent in the *Spanish* tongue, that the like is hardly to be found in any other. For tho' the vowels are but five, yet they admit twenty combinations; to which *Anthony*  
de



*de Nebríxa*, in his treatise of the Spanish Orthography, gives the name of diphthongs ; *Valéra*, *Sandoval*, on the Rudiments of the Grammar, and several other authors are of the same opinion, tho' *Renfígo* in his poetical treatise attributes the joining of the two vowels in one syllable to the figure Synerefis. But as it is said in the 2d chapter, a diphthong is a perceptible sound of the two vowels in one syllable, and as in the following examples, the combination of the vowels make only one syllable in the Spanish tongue, they are admitted as diphthongs, and both vowels pronounced with some distinction, and a perceptible sound, viz.

In *ae*, as *acaecimiénto*, accident ; *albalaes*, a sort of bills of the court of justice.

In *ai*, as *áire*, air ; *alcáide*, a governor of a castle.

In *ao*, as *chaos*, a confusion ; *daos*, do ye give, or give ye.

In *au*, as *causa*, cause ; *cautéla*, caution.

In *ea*, as *beatitúd*, blessedness, holiness ; *fêa* from *fêr*, to be, pres. optative.

In *ei* or *ey*, as *pêine*, a comb ; *rêino*, a kingdom ; *lêy*, the law ; *rêy*, king.

In *eo*, as *Geometría*, Geometry ; *beodéz*, drunkenness.

In *eu*, as *déuda*, a debt ; *fêudo*, a fief.

In *ia*, as *liadura*, a binding ; *fúfia* or *fúzia*, a foul dirty thing.

In *ie*, as *Ciêlo*, Heaven ; *miêdo*, fear.

In *io*, as *fúfio*, adj. dirty, foul ; *dió*, he gave.

In *iu*, as *ciudad*, a city ; *viudo*, a widower.

In *oa*, as *lóa*, praise ; *loáble*, praise-worthy.

In *oi*, as *dói*, I give ; *bói*, this day ; *fói*, I am.

In *oe*, as *héroe*, an hero ; *roedúra*, a gnawing.

In *ou*, as *Coutiño*, the surname of a family, or a shed in a park ; *Móura*, a town, or a surname of a family.

In *ua*, as *quál*, which ; *cuájo*, rennet to make cheese.

In *ue*, as *buéno*, good ; *fuégo*, fire.

In *ui*, as *búitre*, a vulture ; *cuidádo*, care.

In *uo*, as *águo*, I water, or mix water to wine, &c. *mútuo*, mutual.

But it must be observed, that not always the two vowels tho' joined together compose one syllable or a diphthong : because when the accent is put on the last, then they form two vowels, *cáe*, *hói*, *ráe*, *mútuo* are monosyllables, and the same vowels in *caér*, *ói*, *raér*, *mutuó* make two syllables.

It must be noted also, that in the concurrence of those vowels, the *i* is always the *Latin* one, and not *y* ; and so it would be a notorious error to make use of the *y* in these words, writing *áyre*, *búytre*, *réyno*, *toyfón*, when they are to be written thus *áire*, *búitre*, &c. because the *i* does not strike as the *y* on another vowel : except from this rule all the nouns terminated in *y* which in plural is made consonant, *réyes*, *léyes*, *buéyes*.

### *Of Triphthongs.*

**A** Triphthong is the sounding of three vowels put together in one syllable, and are five in *Spanish*, viz.

In *iai*, as *decíais*, ye did say ; *bebíais*, ye were drinking.

In *iao*, as *avíaos*, make ye ready ; *precíaos*, let ye be valued.

In *iei*, as *envicíeis*, that you may corrupt ; *sentenciéis*, that you may give sentence.

In *uai*, as *agúais*, ye put water into the liquor ; *gúai*, a lafs.

In *uei*, as *juguéis*, that ye may play ; *bueitre* for *búitre*, a vulture.

There are some authors who add another diphthong of *iue*, but in this they must be deceived, because the *i* or *u* in the nouns where *iue* is found, are consonants, as *Arroyuelo*, a little brook; *vive*, live thou.

---

## CHAP. VI.

### *Of the Accents, &c.*

**A**CCENTS are tones in speaking, of which there are two sorts in *Spanish*, the *Grave* and *Acute*. *Grave* is that which descends obliquely from the left to the right thus ` , and is only used in the *Spanish* language on the four vowels à, è, ò, ù, when each is separate, and makes a perfect sense by itself. *Acute* is that which descends from the right to the left thus ´ , and serves to prolong, make acute and strong the pronunciation, as *arnés*, armour; *amó*, he loved; *amará*, he will love; and it is also used to denote the quantity of the syllable.

But the most common use of the acute is to shew upon what syllable the strength of the pronunciation lies, for some words quite alter their signification according to the placing of the accent; as *cántara*, a sort of measure or pitcher; *cantára*, I would sing; *cantará*, he will sing; *libro*, a book; *libró*, he delivered, discharged, or gave a bill. When two or three consonants follow a vowel, there is no necessity to mark the accent upon it, their pronunciation being long by nature: the words whose consonants are mute or liquid are excepted, as *árbitro*, an arbitrator; *cátedra*, a chair in which a professor teaches

teaches any science ; *lúgubre*, mournful ; the same is to be observed in the words called *esdrúxulos*, dactyles ; as *águila*, an eagle ; *música*, musick ; *máximo*, greatest ; which have the accent in the antepenultima. From whence is inferred, how erroneous is the opinion of those who make use of the Grave accent instead of the Acute, without understanding the sense of these words ; because the accent Grave never makes a syllable long, but depresses and moderates the pronunciation.

To clear these things, and that it may be known where the accent might be laid on the *Spanish* words, I insert here the following rules.

## R U L E I.

All *Spanish* words are derived from the *Latin*, have their accent on the same syllable as in the *Latin* words, when in the ablative case of the singular, (because, as I intend to say hereafter, the *Spanish* words are formed from the ablative singular of the *Latin* words) except when they retain the *Latin* nominative, as *fénix*, *régimen*, *sál*, &c. viz.

Latin.	Spanish.	English.
<i>Aquila</i> ,	<i>Águila</i> ,	an Eagle.
<i>Amicus</i> ,	<i>Amigo</i> ,	a Friend.
<i>Baculum</i> ,	<i>Bacúlo</i> ,	a Staff.
<i>Clericus</i> ,	<i>Clérigo</i> ,	a Clergyman.
<i>Limes</i> ,	<i>Límite</i> ,	a Limit, or Bound.
<i>Pontifex</i> ,	<i>Pontífice</i> ,	a Pontiff, the Pope.
<i>Prudens</i> ,	<i>Prudente</i> ,	Prudent.
<i>Spiritus</i> ,	<i>Espíritu</i> ,	a Spirit.
<i>Terminus</i> ,	<i>Término</i> ,	a Term, or Limit.
<i>Vapor</i> ,	<i>Vapór</i> ,	a Vapor.

All the superlatives in *íssimo*, and *íssima*, have their accent in the antepenultima in *Latin*, as *aman-tíssimo-ma*,



Except *área*, an area ; *frámea*, a dart ; *foráneo*, belonging to the court of judicature ; *idóneo*, apt ; *incorpóreo*, incorporeal ; *mónstruo*, a monster, &c. which have the accent in antepenultima.

To this rule belong, all the words which carry the diphthongs in the penultima, as

*Amáine*, let him strike fail ; *báile*, a ball, *náipes*, playing cards ; *apláuso*, applause, &c. without exception.

The diminutives do likewise belong to this rule, as *asníco*, *asnillo*, a little ass ; *boníco*, *boníto*, somewhat pretty, &c.

### Rule III. *Of the last syllable.*

**A** L L nouns ending in *d, i, l, n, r, s, x, z*, have their accent on the last syllable, as those in

B. *Abád*, an Abbot ; *beldád*, beauty ; except *áspid*, an asp ; *buésped*, an host, a landlord.

I. *Albelí*, a clove-gilliflower-violet, *bocací*, buckram, &c. except *cási*, almost.

L. *animál*, *caracól*, a snail ; *generál*, except *ágil*, nimble, active ; *ángel*, angel ; *apóstol*, apostle, *cónsul*, consul ; *fácil*, easy ; *defícil*, difficult, &c.

N. *Afán*, labour, weariness ; *almidón*, starch ; except *crímen*, crime ; *exámen*, examination ; *imágen*, an image ; *jóven*, youth ; *márgen*, margin ; *órden*, order ; and other *Latin* words.

R. *Amór*, love ; *mugér*, a woman ; except *acíbar*, aloes ; *alcázar*, a castle, palace ; *almíbar*, sugar, boiled to a consistence , *ánsar*, a goose, &c.

S. *Ambagrís*, ambergreece ; *anís*, anniseed ; except *ántes*, rather ; *árlos*, shrubs ; *agátas*, on all four like a cat ; *à sabiéndas*, knowingly, designedly ; *de brúces*, with the mouth downwards ; *entónces*, then, &c.

X. *Almoradúz*, the sweet marjoram ; *baláu*, a precious stone, &c. without exception.

Z. *Arcadúz*, aqueduct ; *Albornóz*, a sort of upper garment used by the Moors, &c. except *Alférez*, an ensign, &c.

All adverbs of place have their accent on the last syllable, as *acá*, hither ; *aculá*, yonder ; *allá*, thither ; *allí*, there ; *dó*, where ; *adó*, to what place ; *dedó*, from whence ; *aquí*, here, &c. and the following words : *albalá*, a sort of writing ; *Alcalá*, a name of a city in Spain, &c.

As the accent will be put upon the verb through all their tenses and moods, according to order in the conjugations, it will be needless to speak of them here.

## C H A P. VII.

### *Of the manner of Pointing.*

THE want of distinctions in clauses makes writing very imperfect, and to put them in an improper place, causes such *equivocation* in the sense, that this sense either is not understood, or at least is confounded. For which reason, and for the proper division of words, and clauses of periods and speeches ; it must be known, that there are eight signs, notes, or particles, used to this purpose.

1. *Comma*, *subdistinction*, encise, or a stroke formed thus ( , ) and so called to denote the half suspension, or pause, which denotes the expectation of something else to follow ; it serves likewise distinctly

distinctly to separate one clause from another, as *Felicidad es de un Réino tener un Príncipe sábio, que abraze lo bueno, y evite lo malo, haciendo justicia à todos*, it is a happiness to a kingdom to have a wise Prince, that embraces the good, and shuns evil, doing justice to every body.

2. A full stop formed thus (.) serves to denote, that the period is quite formed, and that the speech is perfectly concluded: as *nadie se alabe, bastaque acabe*. Let no body praise himself, till he gets what he is about. *Albricias madre, que pregónan a mi padre*, give me something mother for my good news, for they are crying my father; said of people that mistake good news for bad, or rejoice in other's misfortunes.

3. Comma and a point thus (;) formed; (called by the *Greeks* an imperfect Colon, or Semicolon) is used to denote the implication and contradiction of things in the speech, or that they differ, as *los Padres son dignos de reverencia; Pero Dios de adoración*, Fathers deserve a reverence or respect; but God worship. *Pédro es sabio; pero su soberbia le deslúce*. Peter is a wise man; but his pride dishonours him.

4. Two points (called by the *Greeks* a perfect Colon) marked thus (:) serve to denote that the sense is not perfectly expressed in the speech, and that there is something wanting to perfect it: as *no hacer mal alguno es inocencia: no hacer mal à otro es justicia*, to do no evil is innocence: but justice to wrong no body. *La injuria si es verdad, tómala por advertencia: si es mentira, por crédito*, the injury if it is true, take it as a warning: if false, for reputation and credit.

5. Note of Interrogation formed thus (?) denotes that something is asked or questioned: as *à donde vás?* where you are going? &c.

6. A note of Admiration thus (!) expresses the affection of mind and surprise caused by a sudden news



news or consideration of something: as *O Cielos!* *O Heaven!* *ò bondad divina!* *O divine goodness!* *ò tiempos!* *O times!* *ò vicios!* *O vices!* *ò costumbres!* *O customs!* *ò depravados siglos!* *O corrupted age!*

7. A Parenthesis thus ( ) serves to separate a clause, without which the speech may have a perfect sense, to the end that it may be more plain, and to avoid confusion: as *el ministro sábio (que juntamente es desinteresado) es digno de toda alabanza*, a wise minister (who is altogether disinterested) is worthy of every body's praise.

8. Diæresis thus: ( " ) is a *Greek* word (called by the Printers *Crema*, and signifies a severing or division) and serves to separate two vowels which might be joined in one syllable, and to note that both are to be pronounced plainly and with distinction. Anciently this mark was put upon the *u*, and *i* vowels, when before another vowel; because there was no difference made in writing between the *i* and *u*, to shew when they ought to be vowels and when consonants; now this division is to be put on the *u*: as *eloqüente*, eloquent; *frequencia*, frequency. And this only in the words where *u* is pronounced plainly and openly; so that there is no need of a Diæresis in these *guerra*, war; *guía*, guide; *guinda*, a common cherry; *quince*, fifteen.

To these add the note of Division or stroke figured thus ( - ) which is put at the end of a line, when the word is divided or cut, that it may be known that it is not finished: as in these (carefully dividing each syllable as children in spelling) *á-nimo*, *áni-mo*, courage, mind; it cannot be divided thus: *án-imo*, nor thus *anim-o*: in the words where two *ss*, *rr*, &c. are found, then the first consonant is pronounced with the preceding vowel, and the second with the following, and so *accidente*, accident; and

*boníffimo*, the best, the most pretty or better are to be divided thus *ac-cidente* or *acciden-te*, *bonif-simo*.

Apostrophe is a stroke put over some letters to denote that another letter, which ought to be there, is left out, and lost by the figure *Synaléphe* of the following vowel : as *d'el* of him, *del'água*, of water ; *qu'éra*, which was ; *s'omíte*, it is omitted. Which manner is much used in the *English*, and *French* languages ; and tho' in old *Spanish* books it is often observed, yet common use has left it off in the *Spanish* language, as an insignificant thing, which often confounds ; so that by joining the letters are single words formed, saying *del*, *effótro*, the other ; *estótro*, this other ; or writing the two *ee* or *eo* for better intelligence, thus *de el*, *éffe ótro*, *éste ótro*, *que éra*, *se ofende*, &c.

*Of the use of capital letters.*

**W** I T H capital letters are to begin any writing, paragraph, period, or speech, after a final point ; all the proper names, as well of persons, provinces, kingdoms, districts, cities, towns, villages, mountains, rivers, fountains, &c. as the surnames, renowns of authority or fame ; those of dignities, titles, honourable employments, and other names of distinction, as King, Prince, &c. and altho' capital letters should be used at the beginning of each verse ; yet the *Spaniards* are not exact in this point, for they only begin the verses of their heroic and grand Poems with capital letters, being careless in other species of poetry.

## PART II.

## Of ETYMOLOGY.

GREAT is the difference between the motherly or dead tongues, and the modern or living ones: because what the first of its firmness or stability will not allow the liberty of inventing or changing a word, case, nor tense, without the risk of committing a barbarism or solecism; the latter, being in the arbitrary power of the living, is nourished, either by adding some words, perfecting those in use, or forgetting those which in it's stuttering age were used. To this was likewise subject the *Latin* tongue, till it was cultivated by *Cicero*, *Plautus*, *Virgil*, &c. it sprang up in time of *Janus* and *Saturnus*, in whose language the priests of *Mars* wrote those verses called by their name *Salmi*, which are kept in reverence or respect of the age, which shews the unpolished infancy of that language: it increased in time of *Latius*, from whence was derived the *Latin*, when the twelve law tables were written in *Latin*; and was perfect in the flourishing age of the *Romans*: but as soon as their empire finished, the language fell with it, degenerating in such a manner, that at present is looked on as half corrupted, there being so many barbarisms in its Latinity.

For which like reason, many are the words which the tyrant Use has introduced in the *Spanish* language, whose root has no other trench than the good pleasure of men; and other words are so much degenerated from their original, that almost deny their birth: as *desabuciér*, to desert (is called Physician's verb, and is only used to express when

a man is given over by the Physicians) from the *Latin fiducia*, but has quite opposite sense ; *lavár*, to wash ; from *lodo*, mud, mire, or dirt.

Many have been the authors who treated on Etymologies, but who treated with better order and method was St *Isidore*, a *Spaniard*, whose rules has followed the Royal Academy at *Madrid* in their new dictionary of the *Spanish* language ; to which I refer the curious.

Etymology (as a part of the Grammar) denotes and shews the way to find out the cases of nouns, tenses of verbs, their regularity and irregularity, and the variety of parts in a speech ; some authors define Etymology thus : *The knowledge and discretion of the parts and particles of a speech*. And to proceed to particulars, we think it proper to begin with

## C H A P. I.

*Of the eight parts of speech, and especially of Nouns.*

**I**N *Spanish* as well as in *Latin*, there are eight parts of speech.

Noun, Pronoun, Verb, Participle.	}	declin'd.	Adverb, Conjunction, Preposition, Interjection,	}	undeclin'd.
---	---	-----------	--	---	-------------

*Of a Noun.*

**A** Noun is a part of speech, which signifies a thing without any reference to time, &c. as *máno*, a hand ; *cása*, a house.

Nouns

Nouns are divided into substantives and adjectives.

A noun substantive is that which can stand by it self, without an adjective, as *bómbre*, a man; *cabállo*, a horse, &c. whereas the adjective cannot stand by it self, as being of no value without the addition of the substantive, as *buéno*, good; *briófo* mettlesome, &c. give no perfect notion of themselves, but are explained by being conjoined to the substantives, as *bómbre buéno*, a good man; *cabállo briófo*, a mettlesome horse.

Nouns substantives are divided into proper names and appellatives. The proper names are such as signify certain determinate things, as *Juán*, John; *Róma*, Rome. Appellatives are those that signify things undeterminate, as *iglésia*, a church; *cása*, a house. Some of the nouns are called *primitives*, that is original; others derivatives for their being derived of others, as *lección*, *óido*. Nouns are again divided into simple, as *justó*, just; and compound, as *injústó*, unjust.

There are also diminutives and augmentatives, in both which the *Spanish* abounds more than any other language, there being no word but what admits of several diminutives, to represent the thing spoken of, little; and augmentatives, to represent it greater.

Diminutives are formed by adding to the word *illo*, *íco*, *íto*, *éte*, *uélo*, or *éjo*, and sometimes *ote*.

For Example,

*Hómbre*, a man; forms *Hombrecillo*, *Hombrecíco*, *Hombrecíto*.

*Muchácho*, a boy; *Muchachillo*, *Muchachíco*, *Muchachíto*, *Muchachuélo*.

Where observe the difference between these several sorts, which is that those ending in *illo* and *uélo*, as

*Hombrecillo*, *Muchachuélo*, and the like, denote something of contempt, as, a pitiful little man or boy ; whereas those ending in *ico*, or *ito*, only denote smallness, and sometimes kindness, as when we say *Juanico* or *Juanito*, which is *Johnny* or *Jacky*.

Diminutives in *ete* and *ino* likewise denote nothing but smallness, as *mózo*, a youth ; *mozéte*, a young lad ; *palóma*, a dove ; *palomino*, a young pigeon ; whereas those in *ejo* imply at the same time something of contempt or dislike, as *cuchillo*, a knife ; *cuchilléjo*, a pitiful little knife ; *bidálgo*, a gentleman ; *bidalgóte*, an inconsiderable gentleman.

The same is also used in adjectives, as *grande*, large or great ; *grandezillo*, *grandezico*, *grandezuelo*, *grandéte*, all which signify *largish*, as we may express it, or *somewhat large*.

There are moreover diminutives formed upon diminutives ; as *chico*, small ; *chiquito*, smaller than the other, and *chiquitico*, very small.

There are on the other hand augmentatives, as has been said, which enlarge, or represent a thing bigger, without any degree of comparison ; and these are formed by adding *ázo*, *on*, or *óte*, to the word, as *bómbre*, a man ; *bombrázo*, *bombrón* or *bombróte*, a great lusty man ; *pérro*, a dog ; *per-rázo*, *perrón*, or *perrote*, a great large dog.

The nouns numeral, or of number, called cardinals, are as follows :

Uno, *one*.

Dos, *two*.

Tres, *three*.

Quátro, *four*.

Cinco, *five*.

Séis, *six*.

Siéte, *seven*.

Ocho, *eight*.

Nuéve, *nine*.

Diéz, *ten*.

Once, *eleven*.

Dóce, *twelve*.

Tréce, *thirteen*.

Catórce, *fourteen*.

Quince, *fifteen*.

Diez y séis, *sixteen*.

Diez

Diez y siete, <i>seventeen.</i>	Quatrocientos, <i>four hundred.</i>
Diez y ocho, <i>eighteen.</i>	Quiniientos, <i>five hundred.</i>
Diez y nueve, <i>nineteen.</i>	Seiscientos, <i>six hundred.</i>
Veinte, <i>twenty.</i>	Setecientos, <i>seven hundred.</i>
Veinte y uno, <i>twenty one.</i>	Ochocientos, <i>eight hundred.</i>
Veinte y dos, <i>twenty two.</i>	Núvecientos } <i>nine hundred.</i>
&c.	or
Tréinta, <i>thirty.</i>	Novcientos, }
Quarénta, <i>forty.</i>	Mil, <i>a thousand.</i>
Cincuénta, <i>fifty.</i>	Mil y Quiniientos, <i>a thousand five hundred.</i>
Sesénta, <i>sixty.</i>	Dos mil, <i>two thousand.</i>
Seténta, <i>seventy.</i>	Tres mil, <i>three thousand,</i>
Ochénta, <i>eighty.</i>	&c.
Novénta, <i>ninety.</i>	Cien mil, <i>an hundred thousand.</i>
Ciento, <i>a hundred.</i>	Millón, <i>a million.</i>
Ciento y uno, <i>a hundred and one, &amp;c.</i>	
Dociéntos, or Ducientos <i>two hundred.</i>	
Treciéntos, <i>three hundred.</i>	

N. B. That all these cardinals are undeclined, and of the common gender, except *uno, una, uno*, in plural *unos, unas*, and *ciento, dociéntos, dociéntas*. *Uno* masculine (in the singular only) when it comes before a noun loses *o*, as *un libró*, a book ; *un soldádo*, a soldier. *Ciento* likewise loses *to* when before a noun, either masculine, or feminine, as *cién soldádos*, hundred soldiers ; *cién mugéres*, hundred women : but when another number follows it with a conjunction between, then it retains *to*, as *ciento y uno, ciento y dos*, &c. When *ciento* has *un* before, then it is made substantive, and governs a genitive, as *un ciento de cabállos*, or *un centenár de cabállos*, an hundred of horse.

All the numbers from *ciento* to *mil*, are masculine, and may be made feminine, changing *os* in *as*, as *duciéntos, ducientás*, *mil* is undeclined, and of the common gender, but *millén*, a million,

42     *The RUDIMENTS of*  
 is masculine and declined, as, *un millón, dos millones.*

*The ordinals which declare the order of time, or place, are*

Primero, <i>first.</i>	Trigésimo, or Treinteno, <i>thirtieth.</i>
Segundo, <i>second.</i>	Quadragesimo, or Quarenteno, <i>fortieth.</i>
Tercero, <i>third.</i>	Quinquagesimo, or Cincuenteno, <i>fiftieth.</i>
Quarto, <i>fourth.</i>	Sexagesimo, or Sesenteno, <i>sixtieth.</i>
Quinto, <i>fifth.</i>	Septuagesimo, or Setenteno, <i>seventieth.</i>
Sexto, <i>sixth.</i>	Octuagesimo, or Ochenteno, <i>eightieth.</i>
Séptimo, <i>seventh.</i>	Nonagesimo, or Noventeno, <i>ninetieth.</i>
Octavo, <i>eighth.</i>	Centésimo, Cienteno, or Centeno, <i>hundredth.</i>
Nóno, or Noveno, <i>ninth.</i>	Docientésimo, or Docienteno, <i>two hundredth.</i>
Décimo, or Deceno, <i>tenth.</i>	Trecentésimo, or Trecenteno, <i>three hundredth.</i>
Undécimo, or Onceno, <i>eleventh.</i>	Quatrocentésimo, or Quatrocienteno, <i>four hundredth.</i>
Duodécimo, or Doceno, <i>twelfth.</i>	Quingentésimo, or Quinienteno, <i>five hundredth, &amp;c.</i>
Décimotercio, or Treceño, <i>thirteenth.</i>	Milésimo, <i>thousandth.</i>
Décimoquarto, or Catorceño, <i>fourteenth.</i>	
Décimoquinto, or Quinceño, <i>fifteenth.</i>	
Décimo sexto, <i>sixteenth.</i>	
Décimo séptimo, <i>seventeenth.</i>	
Décimo octavo, <i>eighteenth.</i>	
Décimo nono, <i>nineteenth.</i>	
Vigésimo, or Veinteno, <i>twentieth.</i>	

*Note, that the Spaniards make use of the ordinals and cardinals promiscuously, as en el año de mil seiscientos y ocho, for en el año milésimo seiscientos y ocho: el año quince, for décimo quinto; ciento y setenta*



*setenta y siete*, for *centésimo septuagésimo séptimo*, this must be understood only in the computation of years, chapters, &c. the ordinals are masculine, and by changing *o* in *a* are feminine, as *primero*, *primera*.

*The nouns numeral called distributives, or of order, are*

De uno en uno, *one by one.*

De dos en dos, *by two and two.*

De tres entres, *by three and three.*

De quatro en quatro, *by four and four.*

De cinco en cinco, *by five and five, &c.*

as *los Fráiles van de dos en dos fuera del convento*, the Fryars when they go out of the convent they go by two and two.

*Note*, that when the letter *a* is put between the two cardinals as *uno a uno*, then *a* stand instead of *contra*, against ; as *dos a dos*, two to or against two : the same is in these, *tantos a tantos*, so many against so many, as *riñamos quatro a quatro*, or *tantos a tantos*, let us fight four to four, or so many against so many, that is even or equal in number.

### Of ADJECTIVES.

THE termination of Spanish adjectives is for the most part in *e*, or *o*, as *grande*, large ; *dulce*, sweet ; *breve*, short ; *bueno*, good ; *santo*, holy, &c.

But there are other adjectives also, whose termination is in *l*, as *útil*, useful ; *débil*, weak ; *frágil*, frail ; *fértil*, fruitful ; and others in *z*, as *capáz*, capable ; *rapáz*, ravenous.

Those that terminate in *e*, never vary in any gender ; so in the adjectives, *grande*, great ; *dulce*, sweet ; *terrible*, terrible, we say in the masculine gender,

gender, *bómbre gránde*, a great man ; in the feminine, *múger gránde*, a great woman ; and in the neuter, *lo gránde*, that which is great.

Those that terminate in *o*, in the feminine gender, change their termination into *a*, as in *buéno*, good, the masculine is, *bómbre buéno*, a good man ; the feminine, *múger buéna*, a good woman ; but the neuter is again in *o*, as *lo buéno*, that which is good.

Such as terminate in *l*, or *z*, never change in any gender.

The adjectives *gránde*, great ; and *buéno*, good ; are often placed before the substantives, and then sometimes they loose the last syllable, as is usual to say, *gran bómbre*, a great man ; *buén cabáullo*, a good horse ; but the feminine gender, *buéna*, is not liable to that abbreviation, because the cutting off the *a*, would make it masculine, and therefore it must always be said, *buéna múger*, a good woman ; *buéna cása*, a good house.

*Sánte*, when it signifies a saint, has always the last syllable cut off before the proper name, and we say, *San Pédro*, St Peter ; *San Andrés*, St Andrew, &c. except only out of this general rule, *Sánte Domíngo*, *Sánte Thomás*, *Sánte Toribío*, and any saints names that begin with *Do*, or *To*, because the cutting off the last syllable of *Sánte*, before them would sink the sound of the name. In speaking of a female saint, no letter is cut off, but it is pronounced at length, as *Sánte Apolónia*, *Sánte Margaríta*, &c.

### *The degrees of comparison.*

**A**LL Adjectives have their three degrees of comparison ; the positive, which plainly and simply denotes the thing, as *dócto*, learned ; *discreto*, discreet, &c.

The comparative either enhances or debases the thing, making a comparison, as *mas dócto*, more learned ;

learned ; *ménos docto*, less learned ; *mas santo*, more holy ; *ménos santo*, less holy.

The superlative raises the thing to the highest pitch, or debases it to the lowest, as *caballo velocísimo*, a most fleet horse ; *cara bellísima*, a most beautiful face.

In *Spanish* there is no comparative degree formed from the positive, as in the *Latin*, but that defect is supplied, by adding the article *mas*, more, or *ménos*, less, to the positive ; as *claro*, clear ; *mas claro*, clearer, or more clear ; *oscuro*, dark ; *ménos oscuro*, less dark.

The superlative degree is formed when the positive ends in a vowel, by changing that last vowel into *ísimo*, as from *claro*, clear ; make the superlative *clarísimo*, most clear ; or by the adverb *muy*, very ; or by *mucha mas*, saying *muy*, or *mucho mas claro* : but if the positive ends in a consonant, add *ísimo*, as from *vil*, base ; *vilísimo*, most base ; from *capaz*, capable, *capacísimo*, most capable.

The six following words are an exception from the rules above, in relation to the comparative degree, for their superlatives follow the common rule, where note that in these the comparative quite varies from the positive, as follows.

*Bueno*, good ; *mejor*, better ; *bonísimo*, or *óptimo*, best of all.

*Malo*, bad ; *peor*, worse ; *peísimo*, or *malísimo*, worst of all.

*Grande*, great ; *mayor*, greater ; *grandísimo*, or *máximo*, greatest of all.

*Pequeño*, little ; *menor*, less ; *pequeñísimo*, or *minimo*, least of all.

*Mucho*, much ; *mas*, more ; *muchísimo*, most of all.

*Poco*, little ; *ménos*, less ; *poquísimo*, least of all.

These two are without a positive and comparative,

*Acérrimo*,

*Acérrimo*, extraordinary eager, tenacious, &c.  
*Ubérrimo*, extraordinary fruitful.

### Of G E N D E R S.

**I**T is no easy matter to determine, whether there are as many genders in *Spanish*, as in the *Latin*, which has five, *viz.* the masculine, the feminine, the neuter, the common of two, and the common of three. The question arises from the *Spanish*, having no substantives of the neuter gender, whence it follows that no adjectives can have it, as being only an accident of the other, and there cannot be that in the accident which is not in the subject; whence it will follow that there can be only three genders, the masculine, the feminine, and the common of two.

But this notion, though supported by many, must needs be erroneous; for it is plain that when adjectives, pronouns, and participles, are used as substantives, there is a neuter gender, as appears by the three several articles that express them, for *el* is the masculine, *la* the feminine, and *lo* the neuter; for example, *el hombre*, the man; *la muger*, the woman; and *lo bueno*, that which is good. This is again demonstrable in the articles, *éste caballo*, this horse; *ésta Burra*, this she ass; and *ésto*, this thing; which exactly answer to the *Latin*, *hic*, *hæc*, *hoc*: and therefore it is infallible that these three genders must have a being. As to the others, take the following rules.

1. All adjectives, pronouns, and participles, are of the common gender of three, that is, they will admit of three articles, *éste*, *ésta*, *ésto*, by which the three genders are expressed, which is not only to be supposed when they alter their termination, as *bueno*, *buena*, *buéno*, but also when they always retain the same, as *amante*, *prudente*, &c.

2. All nouns that are under one and the same termination expressing both man and woman, or the male and female of any sort of living creature, are of the common gender of two, as *éste guarda*, this man keeper ; *ésta guarda*, this woman keeper.

3. The epicene under one termination denotes both the male and female of all animals, and yet has only the masculine, or the feminine article, to express both kinds, for which reason the words *mácho*, male ; or *bembra*, female ; are added to make the distinction, as, *ésta codorniz mácho*, this cock quail ; *éste zarzál bembra*, this hen thrush.

4. All names signifying the males of any sort of animals, are of the masculine gender, as *Pédro*, Peter ; *bómbre*, a man ; *cónde*, an earl ; *León*, a lion. And all that signify the female of any sort, are of the feminine gender, as *María*, Mary ; *mugér*, a woman ; *marquésa*, a marchioness.

Those words are of the doubtful gender, which have sometimes the masculine, and sometimes the feminine prefixed by authors. But for as much as this ambiguity at first proceeded from ignorance, it will be proper for those who understand better, notwithstanding the privilege grounded on custom, to give every word its proper gender. Some words of this sort that occur, are *árte*, *canál*, *colór*, *eclípse*, *embléma*, *mar*, *órden*, *márgen*, *orígen*, *théma*. These we frequently find used with either of the articles *el*, or *la*, as, *el árte*, or *la árte*, the art ; and yet it ought certainly to be *la*, to denote the feminine, as in the *Latin*, from whence it is derived ; the same may be said of all others which of right should ever follow their original.

## Rules to know the gender of nouns.

**A**LL nouns ending in *a* are of the feminine gender, as *pláza*, a square, or market ; *rósa*, a rose ; *cása*, a house. The exceptions are *planéta*, a planet ; *cométa*, a comet, or blazing star ; *día*, a day ; *prophéta*, a prophet ; *evangélista*, an evangelist ; *poéta*, a poet ; *Calvinísta*, a Calvinist ; *Jesuíta*, a Jesuit ; also such as are derived from the Greek, as *dógma*, a dogma, or a received opinion, *probléma*, a problem ; which are masculine, but *embléma*, an emblem, is of doubtless gender.

Nouns ending in *e* are generally of the masculine gender, as *diénte*, a tooth ; *mónte*, a mountain. Except, *fé*, faith ; *fuénte*, a fountain ; *lláve*, a key ; *léche*, milk ; *ménte*, the mind ; *tórre*, a tower ; *tróxe*, a granary ; *ánade*, a duck ; *alvayálde*, ceruse ; *áve*, a fowl ; *cálle*, a street ; *cárne*, flesh ; *cláve*, a key of an organ ; *cóрте*, a prince's court ; *corriénte*, a current ; *dóte*, a dowry ; *espécie*, a species ; *frénte*, the forehead ; *génte*, people ; *muérte*, death ; *niéve*, snow ; *nóche*, night ; *núbe*, a cloud ; *náve*, a ship ; *puénte*, a bridge ; *párte*, a part ; *serpiénte*, a serpent ; all which are feminine ; but *cóрте*, when it signifies cutting, shaping, or contriving, is masculine.

Again, all nouns ending in *re*, that have a mute letter before it, are feminine, as *costúmbre*, custom ; *sángre*, blood, &c. From which general rule are likewise excepted, *cóbre*, coper ; *cófre*, a trunk ; *enjambré*, a swarm ; *nómbre*, a name ; and the names of months, *Setiémbre*, *Octúbre*, *Noviémbre*, *Deciémbre*, which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *i* are masculine, if derived from the Arabick, as *albelí*, a violet, according to *Nebrissensis* ; yet some will have it to be a clove gilliflower ; *albolí*, or *alborí*, a granary ; *zaborí*, one that pretends to see into things that are not transparent,

transparent, as stone-walls, &c. But such words taken from the Greek are feminine, as *éxtasi*, an extasy ; *Sintáxi*, Syntax.

Nouns ending in *o* are masculine, as *cámpo*, a field ; *témplo*, a church ; except *máno*, a hand ; *náo*, a ship ; *pró*, good ; for we say, *buéna pro os hága*, much good may it do you.

Nouns ending in *u* are masculine, as *Espíritu*, the spirit ; *ímpetu*, violence.

Nouns ending in *y* are feminine, as *léy*, law ; *gréy*, a flock. Except *Réy*, a King.

This is all that can be said of nouns ending in vowels ; next follow those that end in consonants.

Nouns ending in *d* are generally of the feminine gender, as *charidád*, charity ; *habilidad*, ability ; except *césped*, a turf ; *huésped*, an host, or guest ; *ardid*, a stratagem ; *Adalíd*, a leader ; *Ceníd*, the Zenith ; *almúd*, a certain measure ; *ataúd*, a coffin ; *laúd*, a lute, which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *l* are masculine, as *pardál*, a sparrow ; *arancel*, a list or roll. The exceptions are *cál*, lime ; *sál*, salt ; *señál*, a sign, or token ; *cárcel*, a prison ; *hiél*, gall ; *miél*, honey ; *piel*, the skin.

Nouns ending in *n* are masculine, as *carbón*, coal ; *Rabadán*, a chief among shepherds ; *almazén*, a storehouse. Except *fién*, the temple of the head ; *fartén*, a frying-pan ; and all words derived from the Latin termination in *go*, as *imágen*, an image, from *imago* ; *márgen*, a margin ; from *margo*, &c. Likewise those ending in *ion*, as *región*, a region ; *elección*, election ; and those ending in *azón*, as *razón*, reason ; from which again except, *corazón*, the heart ; *tarazón*, a piece ; which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *r* are masculine, as *amór*, love ; *Alcázar*, a palace ; except *segúr*, an axe, *flór*, a flower ; *labór*, work ; *mugér*, a woman.

Nouns ending in *s* are masculine, as *combés*, the deck of a ship ; *País*, a country, or landskip. Ex-

cept *miés*, harvest ; *Rés*, a head of cattle ; *tós*, a cough ; and proper names of women, as *Ignés*, Agnes.

Nouns ending in *x* are masculine, as *relóx*, a clock ; *carcáx*, a quiver.

Nouns ending in *z*, are for the most part feminine, as *páz*, peace ; *niñéz*, childhood ; *naríz*, the nose ; *bóz*, a sickle ; *lúz*, light. Except *agráz*, verjuice ; *soláz*, comfort ; *antífaz*, a veil, or covering for the face ; *almiréz*, a mortar ; *dobléz*, a fold, or falshood ; *jaéz*, furniture for a horse ; *pez*, a fish ; *axedréz*, a chequer, or draught-board ; *varníz*, varnish ; *tapíz*, a carpet ; *matíz*, a shadowing in painting ; *albornóz*, a moorish coat ; *arróz*, rice ; *altramúz*, a lupine ; all which are masculine.

To these rules may be added, that all nouns signifying the male, must of course be masculine, as *Dúque*, a Duke ; *gállo*, a cock ; *león*, a lion ; and those denoting a female, must be feminine, as *Condesa*, a Countess ; *gallína*, a hen.

It is further to be observed, that whatsoever the termination happens to be, the proper names of rivers are always masculine, as *el Guadiána*, and so of any others, &c.

*Of the other accidents belonging to a Noun.*

**T**H E accidents usually belonging to a noun, are its declination, cases, numbers, and articles ; but all these particulars must be explained in the following manner.

*Of Declensions or Declinations.*

**N**OUNS in *Spanish* are not declined by altering or varying the termination, or last syllable, as is done in the *Latin*, but by adding and varying



varying the articles, as they are peculiar to each case.

And if the declensions are known by the variation of the nouns ; it being certain that the *Spaniards* only vary in the plural number : it may be said by deduction that there are five distinct declensions in *Spanish*, as in *Latin* : because the plural numbers end in

*As*, as *régla*, *réglas*, a rule.

*Es*, as *pádre*, *pádras*, a father.

*Is*, as *rubí*, *rubís*, and *rubies*, a ruby.

*Os*, as *témplo*, *témplos*, a temple or church.

*Us*, as *tribu*, *tribus*, a tribe.

There are three particles or notes to denote the cases of a Noun, viz. *De* for the genitive and ablative, *a* or *para* for the dative, and *o* for the vocative. These particles are called by other authors *Articles*, but without reason, because the *article* is declinable, and the above particles can never be declined.

### Of the Cases.

THE *Spaniards* have six cases, like other languages, being

*Nominative*, or that which names the thing, and generally goes before the verb, as *Pédro perdió su capa*, Peter lost his cloak.

*Genitive*, or that which shows to whom the thing belongs, or from whom it proceeds, as *éste es el perro de Pédro*, this is the dog of Peter ; *María es hija de Joseph*, Mary is Joseph's daughter ; so that this case answers to this question, *whose* or *whereof* ?

*Dative*, or that which shows the place or person to whom the thing is given, and answereth to this question, *to whom* or *to what* ? as *dí mi espada a mi hermano*, I gave my sword to my brother.

*Accusative*, or that which declares the subject of the verb, and answers to this question *whom or what?* and follows generally the verb, as *ésta mañana recibí éste presente*, this morning I received this present.

*Vocative*, is called the case of calling, admiring, or saluting, as *O Pédro ven aquí*, O Peter, pray come here, &c.

*Ablative*, or that which denotes the place or person from whom the thing is taken, and is generally joined to a preposition, as *procédo de la tierra*, I proceed from the earth.

### *Of the Numbers.*

**T**HE *Spaniards* like the *Latins*, have two numbers, viz.

<i>Singular</i> , which speaketh of	}	as	{	<i>cása</i>	a house
one,					
<i>Plural</i> , which speaketh of	}		{	<i>cáfas</i>	houses
many,					

The singular *Spanish*, if end with a vowel is made plural by adding the letter *s* after it, as *hombre*, *hombres*; *témplo*, *templos*; if end with an *i* vowel is made plural by adding *s* or *es*, as *rubí*, *rubís*, or *rubíes*, a ruby; *borceguí*, *borceguís*, or *borceguíes*, but generally in *es*, except *maravedí*, which makes *maravedís*, or *maravedises*, &c. if the noun end with a consonant in singular, then is made plural by adding *es*, as *dolór*, *dolóres*; *Apóstol*, *Apóstoles*; *páz*, *lúz*; *véz*, *vóz*, change *z* into *c* in plural, as has been observed before, saying *páces*, *lúces*, &c. *x* is not changed into *g* in plural, as some authors wrongfully observe, but is retained, and so from *relóx* say in plural *relóxes*; *carcáx*, *carcáxes*.

## Of the Spanish articles.

**T**HERE are three articles in the *Spanish* language, as well as in the *Latin*, and are borrowed of the pronoun, viz. *el* for the masculines, *la* for the feminines, and *lo* for the neuters. An article (which is an accident to the Noun, and a necessary one to the modern languages) is a *monosyllable*, or a *diction composed of one syllable*, it is *declinable*, and *serves to distinguish the genders*. The *Spaniards* make use of the articles before all the nouns, except the proper names as in the *English* tongue. Note, that the *English* have but one undeclined article, viz. *the* for the masculine and feminine, and the particle *it* which often serves for the neuter : so that the *English* make no difference in genders by their article, when they speak of inanimates, except only the word *ship*, which is feminine, and then they make use of the relative *she*, *élla*, saying *she is a 20 gun ship*, *élla es una náve de 20 cañones*.

*El.*

This article is irregular in the plural, and make *los*, and tho' always placed before nouns masculine, as *el hombre*, the man : it is also used before the feminine nouns beginning with *a* (and this only in singular, because in plural we say *las álmás*, *las águas*) as *el águá*, the water ; *el álma*, or *ánima*, the soul ; which is permitted *euphoniæ gratia*, for the better sound, to avoid two *a*'s coming together, or the cutting one off, which is little used in *Spanish* ; because *la águá*, would sound like *l'águá*, and therefore for the more distinction they say *el águá*, as in *French* they say *mon ame*, tho' *ame* be of the feminine gender, and not *ma ame* or *m'ame*. Yet is not this a general rule, for the most received

custom is to preserve *la* for the words of three or four syllables, as *la antigüedad*, antiquity; *la Académia*, the academy.

*El* is often put before the verb in the infinitive mood, when followed by another verb, as *el comer en tiempo es bueno, como tambien el dormir quando se necesita*, to eat when 'tis convenient does good, as it is also to sleep when it is wanted.

When the particles *de* or *a* are joined to *el*, often happens that the Spaniards make one syllable of both, as instead of *de el* or *a el* they say *del* or *al*, as it is said before in the Orthography.

*Le* in singular, and *les* in plural are often taken as articles by some authors, but without any grounds for so saying; because they never are used before nouns, but only as relatives after verbs in dative or accusative, according to the case governed by the verb, they are likewise used before the verbs, as *díxele esto*, I told him this; *les acompañé*, I accompanied them.

### *La*

Is to be placed before nouns feminine, as *la mugér*, the woman; except those nouns that begin with *a*, as has been said just above: it is likewise used before and after the verb, tho' not as article, but as relative, as *la llamé*, I called her; *llamadla*, call her; the plural of *la* is *las*, and often supplies the noun substantive, as *béso las de v. m<sup>d</sup>* that is *las manos*.

### *Lo*,

As has been said, is the article of the neuter gender, and only used before adjectives, made substantives or taken in that sense, as *lo grande*, that which is great; *lo bueno*, that which is good, this article has no plural number, sometimes *lo* is taken absolutely,

lutely, as *tódo lo que me mandáre v. m<sup>d</sup>. baré con gústo*, I will do with pleasure every thing that you will or shall command me. It is used likewise before and after a verb as relative, as *lo díre*, I will say it ; *bázlo*, do it.

What has been said of the articles as articles, I think is sufficient for the present, and for the rest I refer the reader to the chapter of Pronouns, and to the Syntax.

*The Masculine article is thus declin'd :*

*The Singular Number.*

Nominative, *el*, the  
Genitive, *del*, or *de el*, of the  
Dative, *à el*, or *al*, or *pára el*, to the  
Accusative, *el*, the  
Ablative, *del*, or *de el*, from the

*The Plural Number.*

Nominative, *los*, the  
Genitive, *de los*, of the  
Dative, *à* or *pára los* to the  
Accusative, *los*, the  
Ablative, *de los*, from the.

*The Feminine thus :*

*The Singular Number.*

Nominative, *la*, the  
Genitive, *de la*, of the  
Dative, *à*, or *pára la*, to the  
Accusative, *la*, the  
Ablative, *de la*, from the

*The Plural Number.*

Nominative, *las*, the  
Genitive, *de las*, of the  
Dative, *a las*, to the  
Accusative, *las*, the  
Ablative, *de las*, from the.

*The Neuter article thus :*

*The Singular Number.*

Nominative, *lo*, the  
Genitive, *de lo*, of the  
Dative, *à*, or *pára lo*, to the  
Accusative, *lo*, the  
Ablative, *de lo*, from the

It has no Plural Number.

Nor are these articles capable of any vocative, without we say, *O* is general to them all, as, *O hómbre*, *O* man, *O mugér*, *O* woman.

*Examples of the Nouns in their several Terminations.*Words end in *a*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Hembra, <i>a Female</i>	Hémbra, <i>Females</i>
Frúta, <i>Fruit</i>	Frútas, <i>Fruits</i>

Words ending in *e*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Hómbre, <i>a Man</i>	Hómbres, <i>Men</i>
Liébre, <i>a Hare</i>	Liébres, <i>Hares</i>

Words ending in *i*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Rubí, <i>a Ruby</i>	Rubís, <i>or Rubíes, Rubies</i>
Javalí, <i>a Wild Bear</i>	Javalís, <i>or Javalíes, Wild Bears</i>

Words ending in *o*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Cabállo, <i>a Horse</i>	Cabállos, <i>Horses</i>
Milágro, <i>a Miracle</i>	Milágros, <i>Miracles</i>

Words ending in *u*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Espíritu, <i>a Spirit</i>	Espíritus, <i>Spirits</i>
Tribu, <i>a Tribe</i>	Tribus, <i>Tribes</i>

Words ending in *y*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Réy, <i>a King</i>	Réyes, <i>Kings</i>
Léy, <i>a Law</i>	Léyes, <i>Laws</i>

Words ending in *d*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Verdád, <i>Truth</i>	Verdádes, <i>Truths</i>
Mercéd, <i>a Favour</i>	Mercédes, <i>Favours</i>

Words ending in *l*.

Animál, <i>an Animal</i>	Animáles, <i>Animals</i>
Gentíl, <i>a Pagan</i>	Gentíles, <i>Gentiles</i>

Words ending in *n*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Pan, <i>Bread</i>	Pánes, <i>Loaves</i>
Celemín, <i>a Peck</i>	Celemínes, <i>Pecks</i>

Words ending in *r*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Pesár, <i>Grief</i>	Pesáres, <i>Sorrows</i>
Dolór, <i>Pain</i>	Dolóres, <i>Pains</i>

Words ending in *s*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Diós, <i>God</i>	Dióses, <i>Gods</i>
Mes, <i>a Month</i>	Méses, <i>Months</i>

Words ending in *x*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Carcáx, <i>a Quiver</i>	Carcáxes, <i>Quivers</i>
Relóx, <i>a Clock</i>	Relóxes, <i>Clocks</i>

Words ending in *z*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Paz, <i>Peace</i>	Páces, <i>Peaces</i>
Juéz, <i>a Judge</i>	Juéces, <i>Judges</i>

*Examples of declining the three several Genders.*

Example of the Masculine Gender.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> El Pádre, <i>the Father</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Los Pádras, <i>the Fathers</i>
<i>Gen.</i> Del Pádre, <i>of the Father</i>	<i>Gen.</i> Delos Pádras, <i>of the Fathers</i>
<i>Dat.</i> Al Pádre, <i>or pára el Pádre, to the Father</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A los Pádras, <i>or pára los Pádras, to the Fathers</i>
<i>Accusf.</i> Al or El Pádre, <i>the Father</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Los Pádras, <i>the Fathers</i>
<i>Voc.</i> O Pádre, <i>O Father</i>	<i>Voc.</i> O Pádras, <i>O Fathers</i>
<i>Abl.</i> Del Pádre, <i>from the Father</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De los Pádras, <i>from the (Fathers)</i>

Example of the Feminine Gender.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> La Mádre, <i>the Mother</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Las Mádras, <i>the Mothers</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De la Mádre, <i>of the Mother (ther)</i>	<i>Gen.</i> Delas Mádras, <i>of the Mothers (thers)</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A la Mádre, <i>to the Mother (ther)</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A las Mádras, <i>to the Mothers (thers)</i>
<i>Acc.</i> La Mádre, <i>the Mother</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Las Mádras, <i>the Mothers</i>
<i>Voc.</i> O Mádre, <i>O Mother</i>	<i>Voc.</i> O Mádras, <i>O Mothers</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De la Mádre, <i>from the Mother (ther)</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De las Mádras, <i>from the (Mothers)</i>

Example of the Neuter Gender.

<i>Sing.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> Lo buéno, <i>that which is good</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De lo buéno, <i>of that which is good</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A lo buéno, <i>to that which is good</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Lo buéno, <i>that which is good</i>
<i>Voc.</i> O bueno, <i>O that which is good</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De lo buéno, <i>from that which is good.</i>

These Adjectives used as Substantives have, as has been said before, no Plural Number.

Common Adjectives are declined as Substantives, according to their Genders, and therefore there needs no Examples of them,

*Some*



*Some observations concerning derived and compound Nouns.*

THE Nouns of dignity given to Men, are some of them Substantives, and others Adjectives; the nature of Substantives requires, that they be not given to women, who are possessed of the like dignity, without deriving the Feminine from the Masculine; and thus from *Dúque*, a Duke is deriv'd *Duquesa*, a Duchess; from *Cónde*, an Earl, *Condésa*, a Countess; from *Príncipe*, a Prince, *Príncesa*, a Princess; because *Príncipe* in *Spanish* is of the Masculine Gender. But when the Name of Dignity is a Noun Adjective, as *Teniente*, a Lieutenant, or a Deputy; *Asistente*, an Assistant; *Presidente*, a President, it serves both Sexes without any Variation; for in speaking of a President's Lady, she is not to be called *la Presidenta*, but *la Presidente*; and so in the rest of that sort.

They are guilty of the like Error who speaking of a wild, or mountain She-Goat, call her *Cábra monteza*, because the Adjective *Montés* shews both Genders, and therefore the Female is to be called *Montés*, as well as the Male. However the Adjectives that denote Kingdoms, or Nations, ending in *es*, are only applied to the Masculine Gender, and the Feminine has the addition of *a*, as in speaking of a *Frenchman*, or an *Englishman*, he is called *Francés*, or *Inglés*, but a Woman of those Nations is *Francésa*, or *Inglésa*.

## CH A P. II.

### *Of Pronouns.*

PRONOUNS are certain words put into the place, or substituted instead of Nouns, serving  
to

to shew, or express the person, or thing before named, without naming it over again.

There are several sorts of Pronouns, some of them are called Primitives, as *yó*, I, *tu*, you, *si*, himself, *nos*, or *nosótro*s, we ; *vos*, or *vosótro*s, ye.

Others are Derivatives, or Possessives, because derived from those above, and denoting possession, as *mío*, mine, *tuyo*, thine, *suyo*, his, *nuéstro*, ours, *vuestro*, yours ; with their feminine gender, *mía*, *tuya*, *suya*, *nuéstra*, *vuestra*. It is to be observ'd, that these pronouns, of the singular number when placed before substantives, always lose their last syllable, and for *mío*, *tuyo*, *suyo*, must be said, *mi*, *tu*, *su*, as *mi Padre*, my Father ; *tu Madre*, your Mother ; *su Abuelo*, his Grandfather. But when a question is asked, then the answer must be *mío*, *tuyo*, or *suyo*, as *¿cuyo es este guante?* whose glove is that ? The answer is *mío*, mine, or *tuyo*, yours, or *suyo*, his. When they are absolute, or taken as neuter, then they have the article *lo* before, as *lo mío*, that which is mine ; *lo tuyo*, that which is thine, &c. The same is practised in the feminine gender.

To form the plural number of these pronouns *mío*, *tuyo*, *suyo*, or *mi*, *tu*, *su*, add the Letter *s*, as was before said in the nouns, and you have *míos*, *tuyos*, *suyos*, *mis*, *tus*, and *sus*.

There are also demonstrative pronouns, as *éste*, *ésta*, *ésto*, This ; *ése*, *éssa*, *éso*, that ; and *el*, *ella*, *éllo*, he, she, that, *este*, *esta*, *esto*, *essa*, and *el* are always placed before nouns, as *este libro*, this book, *essa carne*, that flesh ; but *ésto*, *éso* and *éllo*, are spoken absolutely, without being joined to any noun ; *ésto*, signifying this thing ; *éso*, that thing ; and *éllo*, the thing.

The particles making the cases in declining, when they come before these pronouns beginning with *e*, are not always contracted, and it may be said *de este*, or *deste*, *de esto*, or *desto*.

The relative pronouns are, *qual*, which, *quién*, who, *qué*, what.

For declining of pronouns, see the following examples.

The pronoun of the first person *Yo* is thus declin'd.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> Yo, <i>I</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Nos, or Nosótro <span>s</span> , <i>We</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De mi, <i>Of me</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De nos, or de nosótro <span>s</span> , <i>Of us</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A mi, <i>To me</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A nos, or a nosótro <span>s</span> , <i>To us</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Me, or a mi, <i>Me</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Nos, or nosótro <span>s</span> , <i>Us</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De mi, <i>From me</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De nos, or de nosótro <span>s</span> , <i>From us.</i>

The second person *Tu* is thus declined:

<i>Nom.</i> Tu, <i>You</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Vos, or vosótro <span>s</span> , <i>Ye</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De ti, <i>Of you</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De vos, or vosótro <span>s</span> , <i>Of ye</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A ti, <i>To you</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A vos, or vosótro <span>s</span> , <i>To ye</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Te, or a ti, <i>You</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Vos, or vosótro <span>s</span> , <i>Ye</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De ti, <i>From you</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De vos, or vosótro <span>s</span> , <i>From ye</i>

The third person *Si* thus:

<i>Sing.</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De si, <i>Of himself,</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A si, <i>To himself,</i>
<i>Accus.</i> Se, or a si, <i>Himself,</i>
<i>Ablat.</i> De si, <i>From himself.</i>

And has no plural number, nor feminine gender, unless *mismo* be added to it for the masculine, and then *misma* must be for the feminine, and then it has *mismos* and *mismas* in the plural.

These pronouns in the singular number serve both the masculine and the feminine genders, as does *nos* and *vos* in the plural; but *nosótros* and *vosótros* are masculine, and the feminine is made by turning the last *o* into *a*, that is, instead of *nosótros* say *nosótras*, and instead of *vosótros* *vosótras*.

The

The *Spaniards* frequently in speech and writing use this pronoun *nos* with the first person plural of the imperative mood, taking away the *s* from the verb, as *vámonos*, for *vámos nos*, let us go ; *dexémonos*, for *dexémos nos*, let us leave ; and so they do of *vos*, losing the *v*, as *ídos*, let ye go, instead of *ídvos*, or losing *d* in the second person plural, as *amáos*, let ye love, instead of *amádos*, or *amádvos*.

It is proper to observe, that the genitive case of these pronouns, seems to be in a manner superfluous, as never in use ; for if we are to speak by way of possession, we must not say *el libro es de mí*, which would be in *English*, the book is of me, but instead thereof, we must use the word, *mío*, viz. *el libro es mío*, the book is mine. So *el cavállo es de ti*, is not *Spanish*, and would signify, the horse is of you ; but it must be *el cavállo es tuyo*, the horse is your's ; and lastly, *el fáyo es de sí*, is as false, being the Coat is of him, but it must be, *el fáyo es suyo*, or *de v. m<sup>d</sup>* the coat is his. And if the question be asked, *cuya obra es ésta* ? whose work is this ? the answer must be, *mía*, mine, or *tuya*, yours, or *suya*, his.

These pronouns serve after a verb, which is then rather in the ablative, than the genitive case, as *que se dirá de mí* ? what will be said of me ? *que será de ti* ? what will become of you ? *el habla de sí*, he talks of himself.

The possessives *mío*, *tuyo*, *suyo*, mine, thine, his, and *mi*, *tu*, *su*, my, your, his, as also, *nuéstro*, and *vueéstro*, need not be declined here, all of them following the same rule, without any variation.

The three pronouns, *yo*, *tu*, *el*, are used in composition with the word *mismo*, signifying itself, as *yo mismo*, I myself, *tu mismo*, you yourself, *el mismo*, he himself ; where it is to be noted that *el mismo*, also signifies the same, but then *el* is the article *the*. These three are declined as before, only that the *mismo* has a singular and a plural number, and

therefore we must say, *yo mismo*, *tu mismo*, and *el mismo*, in the singular, and *nosotros mismos*, *vosotros mismos*, and *ellos mismos*, in the plural ; and so *mismo* and *mismos* for the masculine gender, and *misma* and *mismas* for the feminine.

The pronouns possessive are *Mío*, *Tuyo*, *Suyo*, *Nuestro*, *Vuestro*, and the feminine gender of them *Mía*, *Tuya*, *Suya*, *Nuestra*, *Vuestra* ; but if placed before the substantive, then it must be *Mi*, *Tu*, *Su*, and in the plural *Mis*, *Tus*, *Sus*. It is proper also here to speak of the pronoun of interrogation, *Cuyo*, in the masculine, and *Cuya*, in the feminine gender, and *Cuyos* and *Cuyas*, in the plural number, which always denotes the genitive. To explain the proper use of these words, take these examples : Asking the question, *Cuyo es este caballo ?* that is *de quien es este caballo ?* Whose Horse is this ? The answer is, *Mío*, mine, *Tuyo*, yours, *Suyo*, his ; and so in the feminine gender, only changing the *o* into *a*, as *cuya*, *mía*, &c. and in the plural number adding *s*, as *cuyos* or *cuyas*, &c.

Note, That *Cuyo* is likewise relative, as *el Rey, en cuya Mano está el hacer bien*, &c. the King in whose Hand or Power is, to do good, &c. *este reo, cuyos delitos son grandes*, &c. This guilty person whose crimes are great, &c.

The Demonstratives *Este*, *Éste*, *Aquel*, *El*.

**E**'STE, This, as *este Hombre*, this Man, *este Caballo*, that Horse ; *aquel* is also *that*, but yet with this difference, that *este* signifies *that* which is near to the person who is spoken to, whereas *aquel* denotes *that* which is neither near him who is spoken to, nor him who speaketh.

These

These pronouns are thus declined :

Sing.	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
<i>Nom.</i>	éste	ésta	ésto	<i>This</i>
<i>Gen.</i>	déste, or de éste	désta, or de ésta	désto, or de ésto	<i>Of this</i>
<i>Dat.</i>	a éste	a ésta	a ésto	<i>To this</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	éste, or a éste	esta, or a ésta	esto, or a ésto	<i>This</i>
<i>Abl.</i>	déste, or de éste	désta, or de ésta	désto, or de ésto.	<i>From this</i>
Plur.	Masc.	Fem.	No Neut.	
<i>Nom.</i>	éstos	ésta		<i>These</i>
<i>Gen.</i>	déstos, or de éstos	désta, or de éstas		<i>Of these</i>
<i>Dat.</i>	a éstos	a éstas		<i>To these</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	éstos, or a éstos	éstas, or a éstas		<i>These</i>
<i>Abl.</i>	déstos, or de éstos	désta, or de éstas.		<i>From these</i>

*Esse, éssa, éssó*, is declined in the same manner, the plural number being *éssos, éssas*. The like of *Aquéel, Aquélla, Aquéllos, Aquéllas*.

So is *el*, he, *élla*, she, *éllo*, the or that thing, *ellos*, they, masculine, *ellas*, they, feminine. There is no neuter plural. The cases need not to be repeated, being the same as those before. The word *ótro*, is often joined to *éssé*, or *éssa*, as *Essótro*, or *Esseótro*, the other Man or Thing; *Essótra*, or *Essaótra*, the other Woman.

There are two other pronouns, which have only a plural number, as signifying two, which are *ámbos*, and *entrámbos*, both. To the first of them is often added *a dos*, that is, *Ámbos a dos*, both together, and *Entrámbos*, imports much the same. Note, that of *éste*, and *éssé*, is made *aquéste, aquéssé*, this or that very Man. And so in the feminine and neuter gender.

The relatives, *Quién*, *Que*, *Qual*.

**Q**UIEN, is either interrogative, or relative, as *Quién lo dice?* Who says it? *No háí quién lo fúfra*, no Man can endure it.

*Qué*, is also interrogative, and relative, as *Que es ésto?* What is that? *El bómbré que yo dígo*, The Man I speak of.

*Qual*, signifies Which, as *Qual déllós?* which of them? To this is sometimes added *el*, for the masculine, *la* for the feminine, and *lo* for the neuter, as *el qual*, *la qual*, *lo qual*.

The declining of these consisting only in the addition of the articles, it is needless to run the same over again; only it must be observed, that *Que* has no plural number, as signifying What, which is incapable of it; and yet *Quién* and *Qual*, though they signify *Who*, and *Which*, have a plural, which is *Quiénes*, and *Quáles*, as *Quiénes son aquéllos?* Who are those? and *Quáles son los que dices?* What sort of people are those you speak of, or what are they?

*El*, is frequently joined to *Qual*, which we cannot so properly express in *English*, as signifying *Who*; but *lo qual*, is expressed, the which, these two conjoined are declined as follows?

Sing.	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	El qual	la qual	lo qual
Gen.	del qual	de la qual	de lo qual
Dat.	al qual	a la qual	a lo qual
Acc.	el qual, <i>or</i> al (qual)	la qual, <i>or</i> a la (qual)	lo qual, <i>or</i> a lo (qual)
Abl.	del qual	de la qual	de lo qual

Plur.	Masc.	Fem.	No Neuter.
<i>Nom.</i>	los quáles	las quáles	
<i>Gen.</i>	de los quáles	de las quáles,	
<i>Dat.</i>	a los quáles	a las quáles	
<i>Acc.</i>	los quáles, <i>or</i> (a los quáles	las quáles, <i>or</i> a las (quáles	
<i>Abl.</i>	de los quáles	de las quáles	

When the word *Quiéra*, is added to *Quién*, or *Qual*, it quite alters the meaning, so *Quienquiera* signifies any person, or man whatsoever ; and *Qualquiera*, is any one, whether man, or woman, or other thing. When *que* is added to *tal* thus, *que tal*, then stands for *qué* in *Spanish*.

*Of the Reciprocals, or Relatives, me, te, se.*

THESE three are only of the dative and accusative Cases, and have always a verb either before, or after them, as *Díme quién éres?* Tell me who you are? *Dóte el Parabién?* I give you Joy. *Fuése de aquí*, He went away from hence. They are also placed before verbs, as, *Pédro me dixo*, Peter told me. *Juán te dará*, John will give you. *El se alába*. He praises himself. Many other examples might be brought wherein these pronouns are variously used ; but those things are better learnt by practice, than set down as rules.

*Mi, ti, si*, before spoken of as genitive Cases, the first two of *yo*, and *tu*, and the third without a proper nominative, are often join'd to the word *con*, with, and the syllable *go*, added to it, thus *Conmigo*, with me ; *Contigo*, with you ; *Consiigo*, with himself. They have no variation for the genders, but serve both the masculine, and the feminine.

*Note*, That *proprio* stands often for *mismo*, as *yo propio*, or *yo mismo*, *tu propio*, &c.



The possessive *su*, and in plural *sus*, stands for his, her's, their, &c. as *el Réy con su Hijo el Príncipe*, the King with his Son the Prince ; *la Réyna con su hija la Princesa*, the Queen with her Daughter the Princess.

*Los subditos deben obedecér, y pagar tributo à su Réy*, the Subjects ought to obey, and pay tribute to their King.

*El General comió con sus oficiáles subalternos*, the General dinned with his subaltern Officers.

*Su* stands also for *el*, or *la*, as *el hombre tiéne su-fer (el ser) de Dios*, Man has the being from God. *Su firma del capitán*, *su* for *la* ; but to speak properly, read always *el sér*, the being ; *la fírma*, the sign, or one's name.

Add to these

The imperfect Pronouns, or properly these Nouns relatives: *Cierto*, certain ; *úno*, one ; *algúno*, *álguien*, somebody, or *álgo* in neuter, something ; *cadaúno*, each, every body ; *nádie*, no body (these two last mentioned have no plural) *ótro*, other ; *sólo*, alone ; *tódo*, all ; *taí*, such ; *tanto*, so much ; *quanto*, how much. And the two *punique* words *fuláno* and *zutáno*, such a one. *Note*, That these are called by *Salv. Náves*, pronouns indefinites.

There are three persons in the Pronouns, *viz.*

*Sing.*

*Plur.*

1. Yo, *I*
2. Tu, *Thou*
3. El, or aquél, *he*

*nos, or nosótro*s, *we*  
*vos, or vosótro*s, *ye*  
*éllos, or aquéllos*; *they*

## C H A P. III.

## Of V E R B S.

**A** Verb is a part of speech, that signifies to be, to do, or to suffer, as *ser hombre*, to be a Man; *ámo*, I love; *foi amado*, I am loved: Is conjugated through Moods and Tenses; by Moods the Verb is changed according to the circumstances, as *yo hablo*, I speak, is the indicative; *habla tu*, speak thou, the imperative, &c. Tenses are the distinction and variety of times, as *venía*, I was coming; *vine*, I came, &c.

Verbs are divided into personals, (so called because they have persons) as *yo ámo*, I love; *tu ámas*, thou lovest, &c. and impersonals, (because without persons) as *conviene*, it behoveth, *consta* it is plain.

The personals are subdivided into

Active		Neuter
Passive		Reciprocal.

Active signifies to do, as *enseñar*, to teach; *leer*, to read; and may be made passive by the auxiliary Verb *ser*, and the participle passive of the Verb, as *ser enseñado*, *foi enseñado*, &c.

Passive signifies to suffer, as *foi amado*. But note, That in the third person singular, and the third of the plural are conjugated not only with the the auxiliar *ser*, but even with the particle *se*, as *Diós es amado*, or *Diós se áma*, God is beloved. *Buénos es que la virtud sea hallada*, or *se halle en un Príncipe*, it is good that Virtue be found in a Prince. *Que los Buénos sean amados*, or *se ámen*, that the virtuous

virtuous may be loved. By which you may see, that the participle Passive is varied in the conjugation of this Verb, saying, *Tú fué amado, nosotros somos amados.*

*Neuter* properly is that which signifies neither action nor passion, as *colorár*, to colour; *coloreár*, to recover a colour, or to give colour; *corrér*, to run, *assentír*, to assent. This Verb makes a perfect sense by itself, in which it differs from the active, as *duérmo*, I sleep, *nieva*, it snows.

The verb *Active* says the same thing in the active and passive voices, as *yo amo à diós*, or *dios es amado de mí*, which can't be said by the Neuter in a proper manner.

The Neuter is either substantive, as *ser*, to be; or absolute (so called for its making a sense by itself) by action, as *blasphemár*, to blaspheme, *lluéve*, it rains; or by passion, as *coloreár*, *ennegrecér*.

The verb reciprocal is that which return the sense backward, and is conjugated thus, *apercibirse*, to be prepared or provided for, *me apercibo*, I prepare myself, *te apercibes*, thou preparest thyself; and always has the particle *se* in the infinitive.

*Note*, That in the *Spanish* language, one Verb may be made *active*, *passive*, *neuter*, and *reciprocal* by the different senses that it may be applied to it, as *acostár*, to put one in it's bed, is active, and is made passive by the Verb *auxiliár* *eslár*, and the participle passive, as *estoi acostado*, I am put in my bed, or I lay down. When it signifies to follow one's party, or opinion, or to declare himself partial for a Prince, is *Neuter*, as *Pédro, dexado el servicio de Fráncia, por proméssas de adelantamiento acostó à la parte de España.* Peter having left the *French* service, by the promises he had on his being promoted, enlisted himself in the *Spanish* service. And when it signifies to come near to a place, as *acostarse aquí*, to come near to this place, then is reciprocal, as *si te acuéstas aquí*,

*aquí, te mataré*, if you come near to this place, I will kill you.

Some of the Verbs are regular, (so called for their being confined to rules) and others irregular (so called, because they have no rule); but as their irregularity is various some time in the present tense of the indicative, in the preterperfect, future, in the imperative, preter imperfect and future of the optative, and otherwise in their participles, I shall take care to mention it in the Conjugations.

### *Of Conjugations.*

**T**HERE are three Conjugations in the *Spanish* Tongue, viz.

- |                 |      |   |                              |
|-----------------|------|---|------------------------------|
| 1. in <i>ár</i> | } as | { | <i>Amár</i> , to love        |
| 2. in <i>ér</i> |      |   | <i>Respondér</i> , to answer |
| 3. in <i>ír</i> |      |   | <i>Venír</i> , to come.      |

So that the *Spanish* Verbs are to be looked for in the Dictionaries by their infinitives.

### *Of Moods.*

**T**HE Moods are six, as in *Latin*, viz. The *Indicative*, or that which shows, or declares; the *Imperative*, or that which commands; *Optative*, or that which wishes, or desires; *Subjunctive*, which supposes something; *Potential*, or that by which something is expected; and the *Infinitive*, which leaves all undetermined.

### *Of Tenses.*

**T**HE Tenses, which are the times of action, or passion, are three properly, being the present, the past, and the time to come: And with those

those made by circumlocution are ten in the indicative Mood, viz. the present, preterimperfect, three preterperfects, the plus perfect, and four futures: And in the optative Mood there are nine, viz. the present, three preterimperfects, preterperfect, two preter plus perfects, and two futures.

*Of the Indicative Mood.*

**T**HE Present Tense of all Conjugations of regular verbs, is formed by changing *ar*, *er*, or *ir* of the infinitive into *o*, as from *amár* say *ámo*, from *leér*, *leo*, from *cumplír*, *cúmplo*; this tense extends itself to a future time, as *mañana es día de fiesta*, to-morrow is a holy day.

The Preterimperfect of the first Conjugation is formed by changing *ár* into *ába*, as *amába*, I did love, or properly I was loving; and of the second and third Conjugation, is formed by changing *ér* and *ír* into *ía*, as *perdía*, *pedía*.

*Note*, That this Tense has two ways of explaining the second person plural through all Conjugations, as *amábadeis* or *amábais*; *perdiádeis* or *perdiáis*; *pediádeis* or *pediáis*.

The first Preterperfect of the first Conjugation by changing *ár* into *é*, as *amár*, *amé*; but of the second and third Conjugations by changing *ér* and *ír* into *í*, as *perdér*, *perdí*, *pedír*, *pedí*. This tense is called *Definite*, because it is a time perfectly past and expressed; as *el mes pasado hablé con él*, I spoke with him last month.

The second Perfect of all the Conjugations is formed of the auxiliar verb *haver*, and the participle passive of the verb treated of, as *he hablado*, I have spoken, *he perdido*, I have lost; *he pedido*, I have asked.

The third Perfect is formed in the same manner, as *húve hablado*, &c. but not so frequently used in *Spanish* as the other two.

*Note*, That these two latter are called Preterperfects indefinites, for their time is not determined, as *le he hablado*, I have spoken to him, but we don't say when.

So that the difference between the first preterperfect and the others, is that the former should express time, and the latter not; besides, that the first extends itself farther than the others (which are referred to time but lately past) you may say, *le hablé dos años ha*, I spoke to him two years ago; but you can't say *le he hablado dos años há*, I have spoken to him two years ago; because *he hablado* does only extend to a time so lately past, that it appears to have something of the present. These are *Valéra's* Observations, which I advise the Reader to observe, in order to avoid the frequent Equivocations that often happens in speaking and writing.

The Preterplusperfect thus: *había hablado*, *había perdido*, *había pedido*, I had spoken, lost, &c.

The first Future is formed of the infinitive, adding *é* after *r*, as of *hablar*, adding *e* say *hablaré*; *perder*, *perderé*; *pedir*, *pediré*, having always the accent on the last letter.

The second Future with the auxiliary *bé*, *tengo*, or *débo*, and the infinitive Mood with *de* before it, as *be* or *tengo de dar*, I am to give, *débo de dar*, or *débo dar*, I am oblig'd, I must give.

The third thus: *Havré de hablar*, I shall be obliged to speak, &c.

The fourth (which properly is the second Preterplusperfect) thus: *Havía de hablar*, I had, or I was to speak, &c.

### Of the Imperative.

THE Imperative is made of the third person of the present of the indicative Mood, and of the present of the optative, as *ama tu*, love thou;  
*áme*

*ame aquél*, let him love ; *pierde tu*, loose thou ; *pierda el*, let him loose, &c.

So that the third person of the indicative is the second of the imperative, and the third of the imperative is the first of the optative. The second plural is formed from the infinitive by changing *r* into *d*, of *amár* say *amád*, let ye love ; *perder*, *perdéd* ; *pedir*, *pedíd* ; and often the *d* is lost, saying *amaos* for *amád vos*, or *amád os*, and sometimes is transposed after *l*, as *amálos*, *amáles* for *amádlos*, or *amádles* ; and so it is often said *decilde* for *decidle*.

*Of the Optative, Potential, and Subjunctive Moods.*

**O**PTATIVE, or that wishes, or desires, has always annexed an adverb, as *óxala*, *ò sí*, *pluguiesse à Diós*, would to God, I pray God, or God grant ; *aunque*, *no obstante que*, *sin embargo que*, altho', notwithstanding.

Potential properly has no signs in *Spanish*, but in *English* has these, *can*, *may*, *might*, *could*, *should*, or *ought*, which are equal to these *Spanish* expressions, *puede ser que*, *es menester que*, as some authors will have it.

*Subjunctive* has always some conjunction annexed, as *sí*, *cómo*, *que*, *quando* : *if*, *as*, *that*, *when*, as *como yo áme*, as O may love ; but the tenses are all alike in these three Moods.

The present of the Optative is formed by the present of the Indicative changing *o* into *e* in the first conjugation, and into *a* in the second and third conjugations, as from *ámo* say *áme* ; *piérdo*, *piérda* ; *pído*, *pída*.

The first and second Preterimperfects are formed from the first person of the first preterperfect of the Indicative, as from *amé* in the first conjugation changing *e* into *ára* or *ásse* is made *amára*, *amásse* ; in the second and third conjugations add to the preterperfect

terperfect *éa* or *éſſe*, as from *perdí* ſay *perdiéra*, *perdiéſſe*, from *pedí* ſay *pidiéra*, *pidiéſſe*.

The third Preterimperfect is formed from the infinitive, adding *ía*, as from *amár* ſay *amaria*, from *leér*, *leería*, from *pedír*, *pidiría*.

Obſerve here, That theſe tenſes have two ways to explain the ſecond perſon plural, as *amarádeis* or *amúrais*, *amáſſedeis*, or *amáſſeis*, *amariádeis*, or *amaríais*, and ſo in the other two conjugations.

Obſerve likewiſe, That theſe three tenſes vary one from another, ſpeaking in a right method; tho' there is ſuch a confuſion in explaining them, that hardly there is any difference made by the *Spaniards*. Some Authors adapt them to the three Moods, viz. *amára* to the Optative, *amáſſe*, to the Subjunctive, and *amaria* to the Potential; as *oxala yo amára la virtud*, God grant that I might love virtue; *como yo amáſſe a Diós, el me amaria*, as I could love God, he would love me.

Other Authors, as *Tominque*, *Ceſſér* in Gram. Rud. and *Villalba*, are of opinion, that *amára* denotes the diſpoſition of a thing, or the readineſs for an action; *amáſſe* the beginning of it, and *amaria* the poſſibility to obtain it; or as *Terebio*, ſays the firſt imperfect is a tenſe of motion, *exquo* from whence, and related to the medium, as *de los veinte pésos le diéra diez para comprarse un vestido*, of the twenty pieces of eight I would give him ten, that he might buy himſelf a ſuit of cloaths; the ſecond a tenſe medium, or *inquo*, as *como le hallaſſe haciendo loque le díxe*, as I ſhould find him in doing what I told him. And the third a conditional tenſe, as *ſi lo haría, como el fuéra bueno*, I would do it, if he would be good.

One thing is certain amidſt all theſe, that *aunque, como, oxala*, &c. follow the two firſt preterimperfects, and the third imperfect tenſe is uſed by way of interrogation, or ſuſpenſion, ſaying:  
*haría*



*baria v. m<sup>d</sup>. esto ?* Would you do this ? *O que bien lo baria yo !* O that I could do it well ! or with *si*.

The Preterperfect is formed from the auxiliar verb *haver*, and the participle passive thus ; *háya amado*, *haya perdido*, *háya pedido*, when I have loved, &c.

The first Plusperfect thus : *Húviéra amado*, when I had loved.

The second, *buviéſſe amado*, when I had loved.

1. Future is made of the first Preterimperfect, by changing *ra* into *re*, as *amára*, *amáre* ; *perdiéra*, *perdiére* ; *pediéra*, *pidiére*, with the same accent on all the syllables.

2. Future of the first Plusperfect by changing *ra* into *re*, and participle passive, as from *húviéra amado*, say in the future *húviére amado*. So that there are nine tenses in the Optative Mood, as well as in the Subjunctive and Potential.

### *Of the Infinitive Mood.*

**I**NFINITIVE signifieth to do, to suffer, or to be ; and hath neither number, nor person, nor nominative Case before as *amár*, to love ; *perder*, to loose ; *pedir*, to ask, to beg.

When two Verbs come together without any nominative Case between them, then the latter shall be in the infinitive Mood, as *deséo aprender*, I desire to learn : And often times the infinitive supplies the nominative case, as *amár à Diós, y hacer bien al Próximo*, son los dos aētos Principáles de un Christiāno, to love God, and do good to the Neighbour, are the two principal Actions of a Christian.

When *le*, *la*, *lo*, *les*, *las*, *los*, are added to the infinitive, then *r* is often changed into *l*, as *amálle* for *amárle*, *perdélle* for *perderle*, *decélle* for *decírle*, to love him, to loose him, to tell him. And when *me*, *te*, *ſe*, *nos*, *os*, &c. follow the infinitive immediately, then they are pronounced as monosyllables, as *decírle*, *decírselo*, &c.

76      *The RUDIMENTS of*  
*A general Scheme of the Termination of Verbs of the*  
*three Conjugations in their simple Tenses.*

Singular.				Plural.		
Persons	yo,	tu,	el	nosotros,	vosotros	ellos,
	I,	thou,	he	we	ye	they
Indicative Mood.	do	doſt	doth	do	do	do.
	1. o	as	a	amos	áis	an
	2. o	es	e	2. émos	éis	en
	3. did	didſt	did	3. ímos	is	en
				did	did	did
	1. ába	ábas	ába	ábamos	abádeis	ában
					ábais	
	2. ía	ías	ía	íamos	íadeis	ían
					íais	
	have	haſt	hath	have	have	have
Imper.	1. é	áſte	ó	amos	áſteis	áron
	2. í	íſte	ó	imos	íſteis	éron
	ſhall	will	have			
	1. ré	rás	rá	rémos	réis	rán
	2.					
	3.					

	do thou,	let him do,	let us,	let ye,	let them
1. a tu,	e el	emos	nosotros,	ad vosotros	en ellos
2. e	a	amos		ed	an
3. e	a	amos		id	an

Persons	yo, I	tu,	el he	nosotros,	vosotros,	ye	ellos
		thou,		we			they
	may	mayſt	may	may	may		might
Potential Mood.	or can						
	1. e	es	e	émos	éis		en
	2. a	as	a	amos	áis		an
	3. might	mightſt	might				
	or could			might	might	might	
	1. ára	áras	ára	áramos	áradeis-árais		áran
		áſſe	áſſes	áſſemos	áſſedeis-áſſeis		áſſen
	2. ária	arias	aría	aríamos	aríades-aríais		arían
		éra	éras	éramos	érades-érais		éran
	3. éſſe	éſſes	éſſe	éſſemos	éſſedeis-éſſeis		éſſen
Imper. tenes	1. ría	rías	ría	ríamos	ríadeis-ríais		rían
	ſhall	ſhall	ſhall				
	or will have			ſhall	ſhall	ſhall	
	1. áre	áres	áre	áremos	áredeis-áreis		áren
	2. ére	éres	ére	éremos	éredeis-éreis		éren
	3.						

*Infinitive*

*Infinitive Mood.*

Pref. Ten.	1. ár	} to have		Gerun.	ándo	} having		par. pa.	ádo	} ha
and	2. ér				éndo				ído	
Pret. imp.	3. ír				iéndo				ído	

*The Termination of Verbs of the three Conjugations in their compound Tenses.*

Singular.				Plural.			
Persons	yo	tu	el	nos.	vos.	ellos	
	I,	thou,	he	we,	ye,	they,	
Indicative Mood.	I have, &c.						
	2. pre-per.	1. {	héc, hás,	hémós or havéis, han			{ ádo
		2. {	ha	havémós			{ 2.ído
		3. {	ido				{ 3.ído
	I have, &c.						
	3. perf.	1. {	húve,	huvímós, huvístéis			{ ádo
		2. {	húviste,	huvieron			{ 2.ído
		3. {	húvo				{ 3.ído
	I had, &c.						
	pluiper.	1. {	havía,	havíámós, { haviádeis,			{ ádo
		2. {	havías,	{ haviáis			{ 2.ído
		3. {	havía	havían			{ 3.ído
	I am to						
	2. futu.	1. {	he or tengo	hemós, havéis, han de			{ ár
		2. {	has, há de				{ er
		3. {	ír				{ ír
	I must, or shall be obliged to						
	3. futu.	1. {	havré,	havrémós, havréis,			{ ár
		2. {	havras,	havrán de			{ er
		3. {	havrá de				{ ír
	I had, or I was to						
	4. futu.	1. {	havía,	havíámós, { haviádeis,			{ ár
		2. {	havías,	{ haviáis,			{ er
		3. {	havía de	havían de			{ ír

Persons		<i>yo tu el</i> I, thou, he <i>might or could</i> <i>have, &amp;c.</i>	<i>nosotros, vosotros, ellos</i> we, ye, they
Potential Mood.	pre-per.	1. } háya, } ádo	hayámos, { hayádeis } ádo { háyas, } 2 <sup>ido</sup> { háya } 3 <i>I had, &amp;c.</i>
		2. }	
		3. }	
	1 plusp.	1. } huviéra, } ádo	huviéramos, { adeís, } ádo { huvieras } 2 <sup>ido</sup> { huviéra } 3 <i>I had, &amp;c.</i>
		2. }	
		3. }	
	2 plusp.	1. } huviéſſe } ádo	huviéſſemos, { edeis, } ádo { éſſes } 2 <sup>ido</sup> { éſſe } 3 <i>ſhall or will</i>
		2. }	
		3. }	
	2 futur.	1. } huviére, } ádo	huviéremos, { edeis, } ádo { éres, } 2 <sup>ido</sup> { ére } 3
		2. }	
		3. }	

*Infinitive.*

Pret. perf.	1.	} <i>haver</i> {	1.	} <i>to have, &amp;c.</i> {		Gerunds	1.	} <i>haviendo</i> {	1.	} <i>having.</i> {
and	2.		2.				2.			
Plusperf.	3.		3.				3.			
Future	1.	} <i>haver de</i> {	1.	} <i>to have hereafter</i> {			1.	} <i>orhavien</i> {	1.	} <i>do</i> {
	2.		2.				2.			
	3.		3.				3.			
Supine	1.	} <i>à</i> {	1.	} <i>to have</i> {			1.	} <i>de</i> {	1.	} <i>ir</i> {
	2.		2.				2.			
	3.		3.				3.			

*Observations on the Verbs.*

**T**HE regular and irregular Verbs, generally speaking, agree in this, that the first Futures of the Indicative Mood, and that of the Optative are always the same through out all the Conjugations, with this difference, that the first has the accent on the last syllable, and the second in the *ante penultima*.

When

When the first Preterperfect of the indicative is irregular, the first and second Preterimperfects, and the first Future of the Optative are irregular, as

<i>dár</i> , to give ;	<i>tenér</i> , to have, or hold,	<i>decir</i> , to say.
Pret. Perf.	Pret imperf. opt.	Future.
di, <i>I give</i>	diéra, or diése, <i>I might give.</i>	diere, <i>when I shall give.</i>
túve, <i>I had</i>	tu viéra, or tu viése, <i>that I might have.</i>	tu viere, <i>when I shall have.</i>
dixe, <i>I said</i>	dixéra, or dixése <i>that I might say.</i>	dixere, <i>when I shall say.</i>

The third Preterimperfect of the Optative is always the same, and ends in *ría*, as *daría*, *tendría*, *diría* for *deciría*.

*Note*, Likewise, that generally the third person singular of the present tense of the Indicative Mood, is the second person of the Imperative, and the third of the Imperative is the first of the Optative, as *aquel áma*, he loveth ; *áma tu*, love thou ; *áme aquel*, let him love ; *que yo áme*, that I may love.

There are few exceptions in the Imperative, as from *ponér*, *tenér*, *hacér*, *decir*, &c. say *pon tu* instead of *pone tu*, *ten tu* for *tiene tu*, *haz* for *hace*, but this is in use, *di tu*, or *dice tu*, &c.

### Of the Participle.

**A** Participle is a part of a speech, it comes from the verb, and participates its force, that is, has the same signification, and governs the cause of the verb ; it taketh of a Noun the gender, case, and declension ; and of both, number and figure.

In *Spanish* there are four Participles, as in *Latin*, viz. of the

<i>Latin</i>		<i>Spanish.</i>	
Pres. Ten. in	<i>ans</i>	as	<i>ante</i>
	<i>ens</i>		
	amans		amante
	audiens		oyénte

N. B.

*N. B.* That this Participle is likewise supplied in the *Spanish* language by the third person of the present tense of the indicative Mood, the relative *el* and *que*, as *elque áma*, he who does love ; it governs generally in *Spanish* a genitive, as *amante de Dios* ; and is of the gender of common of three, as *el amante*, *la amante*, *lo amante*.

	<i>Latin</i>	<i>Spanish</i>
Of the pret.	tus amatus	do
or	in fus as visus	in to as
Passive	xus connexus	xo, &c.
		{ amádo, loved, visto, seen, connéxo, &c. join'd or added.

	<i>Latin</i>	<i>Spanish</i>
Of the future	in rus as futurus	úro
	venturus	in éro, as
		&c.
		{ futuro venturo venidéro, &c.
		{ which is to come.

*Note*, That this Participle is supplied in *Spanish* by the auxiliar verb *havér*, or by *tenér*, with the particle *de*, and the infinitive of the verb, as *amaturus fueram*, *havía de amár*, I had to love ; *tengo*, or *he de amár*, I am to love, &c.

Of Fut. in { dus as *Amandus* : But this in *Spanish* is supplied by the auxiliar Verbs *havér* and *sér*, the particle *de*, and the participle of the preter of the Verb, as *Amandus est*, *há de sér amádo*, he is to be loved, &c.

### *Gerunds.*

The Gerunds are terminated in *Spanish* in { ando as amádo, loving,  
endo as oyédo, hearing,

And govern the case of the Verb, as *amando a Dios*, loving God : The Gerund of genitive is formed of the particle *de*, and the infinitive of the Verb thus, *de amar*, of loving ; and that of accusative thus, *à amar*, to love.

*Supines.*

# SUPINES.

THERE are two Supines in *Spanish*, by way of circumlocution, one active, as *à amár*, to love; the other passive, as *à ser amádo*, to be loved.

This, it is hoped, will be sufficient to bring the Reader into the knowledge of every thing required for the conjugation of verbs; as for the rest, we refer him to the third part of this Grammar, where under their proper heads he will find every thing necessary for the construction.

# PERSONS.

THERE are also in Verbs three Persons in both numbers, *viz.*

Sing.	yo <i>I</i>	as	yo ámo, <i>I love</i>
	tu, <i>thou</i> ,		tu ámas, <i>thou lovest</i>
	el, or aquél <i>he</i>		aquel áma, <i>he loveth.</i>
Plur.	nos, or nosotros, <i>we</i>	as	nosotros amámos, <i>we love</i>
	vos, or vosotros, <i>ye</i>		vosotros amáis, <i>ye love</i>
	ellos, or aquellos, <i>they</i>		aquellos aman, <i>they love.</i>

By the first person, we note, he who speaks; by the second, to whom we speak; and by the third, the person of whom we speak.

*N. B.* That the *Spaniards* very seldom make use of the second Person singular or plural, but when through a great familiarity among friends; when they speak to God, wife and husband to themselves, to children, or servants; instead thereof, when they speak to others, they make use of *Usted* in singular, or *Ustedes* in plural, or of *Vuestra Mercéd*, and *Vuestras Mercedes*, you, your Worship, your Merits, or Deservings; which are signs of the third person, of which they make use of in speaking: In writing they do always make use of

*Vuestra Merced*, thus *v. m<sup>d</sup>*. in singular, or *v. m<sup>ds</sup>*. in plural.

Observe here, that when an adjective comes after *Vuestra Merced*, it does not agree in the gender with *v. m<sup>d</sup>*., but with the person to whom we speak, or spoke of; when to a Man, thus *Vuestra Merced sea bien venido*, you are welcome: when to a Woman, thus, *Vuestra Merced sea bien venida*, you are welcome, and so in the plural. It can't be amiss, if at present I take notice of

*The manner used by the Spaniards in saluting or complimenting one another.*

THEY make use of *Usted*, or *Vuestra Merced* in general for persons, or among persons below those of the Nobility and Gentry, as *como está v. m<sup>d</sup>.?* or *como le va a v. m<sup>d</sup>.?* or *como se hálla v. m<sup>d</sup>.?* or as newly introduced by strangers, *como se porta v. m<sup>d</sup>.?* how do you do, &c. Answer, *Mui bien para servirle*, (or *para servir a v. m<sup>d</sup>*.) or *Bueno* (that is *ensalúd*) *para que me mande*, &c. *Caballero buenos dias* (that is, *este y otros mas*) *tenga v. m<sup>d</sup>*., Good morrow, Sir; *Buenas noches tenga v. m<sup>d</sup>*., Good Night to you, Sir; it is used in Spanish *buen día tenga v. m<sup>d</sup>*., but not *Buena noche* in singular.

*Béso las Máños de v. m<sup>d</sup>*., I kiss your Hands; answer, *Y yo las* (sup. *Máños*) *de v. m<sup>d</sup>*.

For *v. m<sup>d</sup>*. *me ága* (or *ágame*) *la Mercéd*, or *favór de ésto*, they say generally *v. m<sup>d</sup>*. *me la* (viz. *Mercéd*) *ága de ésto*, do me the Favour of this, or grant me the favour, &c.

We use to say *Buen día*, or *buenos días dé Dios a v. m<sup>d</sup>*., God give you a good Day, for good morrow, Sir, &c. as for the other ranks of persons, we say, to the King, *Vuestra Magestad*, Your Majesty; to the Pope, *Santidad*, *Beautitud*, *Sanctísimo Padre*, *Beatísimo Padre*, Holiness, Most Holy Father (*Titles which should be given only to God*); to a Prince



*V. Altéza*, your Highness; to a Cardinal, *V. Eminéncia*, your Eminency; to the Grandees, Dukes, Generals, and Ambassadors *V. Exceléncia*, your Excellency; to a Bishop, *Vuestra Señoría ilustríssima*, your illustrious Lordship; to Earls, Marquesses, *Vuestra Señoría*. Note, That some use *Vuéstra*, and *Vuéssa* promiscuously; but I am of opinion that *Vuéssa* is a word out of use, &c.

I observed, that some of the Nobility in *Spain*, when they speak to any Gentleman inferior in rank, never did make use of *Béso las Manos de v. m<sup>d</sup>*, but *Servidor de v. m<sup>d</sup>*; and so they say *v. m<sup>d</sup> sea bien venido*, or *bien venido séa el Señor Fuláno*; *buénos días dé Dios al Sr. Fuláno*, &c. And when an inferior spoke to them he would be better off, if he said *Béso las Mános de V. Señoría*, than saying *Servidór de V. Señoría*; but at present this difference is almost left off, &c.

The preceding *Spanish* Words are abbreviated thus in writing: *V. Mgd*; *V. Santd*, or *Beatd*, *SS.* or *BB.* *Pádre*; *V. Alt*; *V. Em*; *V. Exc*; *V. S. il*; *V. S.*; *V. M<sup>d</sup>*.

### Of the Auxiliar Verbs.

AUXILIAR Verbs take their etymology of the *Latin Auxilium*, *Auxílio*, help, so called, because they are wanted, and help to the conjugation of other Verbs. There are auxiliar or helping Verbs in all the living languages, and in the *Spanish* there are more than in any other, as *podér*, *tenér*, *solér*, *ir*, &c. without which we can't rightly explain the meaning of some tenses; but there are three Principal, viz. *havér* (instead of whom we do likewise use the Verb *tenér*) to have, *estár* and *sér*, to be; the two first serve for the active, neuter, and reciprocal Verbs; *havér* serves also for the passive Verbs in their compound

§4      *The RUDIMENTS of*  
 tenses, as in the Preterperfect, Pluperfect, &c. and  
 the Verb *ser* serves for the passive Verbs. And as  
 the other Verbs can't be conjugated without these,  
 we think it proper to begin by

*The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb Havér, To have.*

The Indicative Mood. Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>	
Yo hé,	<i>I have</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Nosótro} \text{ } \text{hemos,} \\ \text{or havémos,} \\ \text{Vosótro} \text{ } \text{havéis,} \\ \text{Ellos or aquéllos} \\ \text{han,} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>We have</i>
Tu has,	<i>Thou hast</i>		<i>Ye have</i>
El or aquél há	<i>He hath</i>		<i>They have</i>

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>	
Havía,	<i>I had</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Havíamos} \\ \text{Havíadeis, or havíais} \\ \text{Havían} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>We had</i>
Havías	<i>Thou hadst</i>		<i>Ye had</i>
Havía,	<i>He had</i>		<i>They had</i>

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>	
Húve	<i>I have had</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Huvimos,} \\ \text{Huvíste} \text{ } \text{es,} \\ \text{Huvieron,} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>We have had</i>
Huvíste	<i>Thou hast had</i>		<i>Ye have had</i>
Húvo	<i>He hath had</i>		<i>They have had</i>

Second Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Yo hé} \\ \text{Tu has} \\ \text{El há} \end{array} \right.$	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Havido,} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{I have had} \\ \text{Thou hast had} \\ \text{He hath had} \end{array} \right.$
<i>Plur.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Nosótro} \text{ } \text{hemos} \\ \text{Vosótro} \text{ } \text{havéis} \\ \text{Ellos han} \end{array} \right.$		$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{We have had} \\ \text{Ye have had} \\ \text{They have had} \end{array} \right.$

The third Preterperfect thus :

Yo húve havid,

*Is in no use in Spanish!*

A

Preter-

# Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havía	}	Havido,	{	<i>I had had</i>
		Havías				<i>Thou hadst had</i>
		Havía				<i>He had had</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havíamos				<i>We had had</i>
		Havíadeis				<i>Ye had had</i>
		Havían				<i>They had had</i>

# First Future.

Sing.	{	Havré,	}	I shall or will have
		Havrás,		You shall or will have
		Havrá,		He shall or will have
Plur.	{	Havrémos	}	We shall or will have
		Havréis		Ye shall or will have
		Havrán		They shall or will have.

# The other Futures are

Second,	Yo hé de haver	I must have.
Third,	Havré de haver	I shall be obliged to have
Fourth,	Havía de haver	I was to have

# Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Háyas tu	}	Have thou
		Háya aquél, or el		Have he, or let him have
		Hayámos nosotros,		Have we, or let us have
Plur.	{	Havéd vosotros,	}	Have ye, or let ye have
		Háyan aquéllos or ellos		Have they, or let them have.

The Spaniards use, instead of this Imperative Mood, the Word *Ten*, of *Tengo*, I have or hold; which *Tengo* is often used for this Verb *He*.

This Imperative Mood *Ten*, of *Tengo*, so commonly used for *áyas*, *ayá*, is thus declined :

Sing.	{	Ten tu,	}	Have, or hold thou
		Tenga el		Let him have or hold
Plur.	{	Tengámos nosotros	}	Let us have or hold
		Tened vosotros		Do ye have or hold
		Tengan ellos,		Let them have or hold.

See this Verb among the Irregulars.

*Note*, The Optative Mood is us'd with these signs, as I have said, *Oxalá*, or *O si*, or *Plugiéssse a Dios*, Would to God, I pray God, or God grant. The Potential like the *Latin*, with these signs, *may*, *can*, *might*, *could*, *should*, or *ought*; both declined like the Subjunctive following.

### Subjunctive Mood. Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Háya,	}	<i>If, or when I may have, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Háyas		
<i>como</i>	{	Háya		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayámos	}	<i>If, or when We may have, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Hayáis		
<i>como</i>	{	Háyan		

### Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Si, or</i>	{	Huviéra, huviéssse, havría	}	<i>If, or when I might, could, or should have.</i>
<i>como</i>		Huviéras, huviésses, havrías		
<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviéra, huviéssse, havría		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéramos, huviésssemos, havriámos		
<i>Si, or</i>		Huviéradeis, huviéssedeis, havriádeis		
<i>como</i>		Huviéran, huviéssen, havrían.		

### Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Háya,	{	Havido	}	<i>If, or when I had, or when I have had.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		Háyas				
<i>como</i>		Háya				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayámos	{	Havido	}	<i>If, or when We had, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		Hayáis				
<i>como</i>		Háyan				

### Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviéra, or huviéssse	{	Havido	}	<i>If, or when I had had, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		Huviéras, or huviésses				
<i>como</i>		Huviéra, or huviéssse				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéramos, or huviésssemos	{	Havido	}	<i>If, or when We had had, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		Haviéradeis, or huviéssedeis				
<i>como</i>		Huviéran, or huviéssen				

# First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviére	}	<i>If, or when I shall have hereafter, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Huviéres		
<i>como</i>	{	Huviére		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéremos		
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Huviéredeis		
<i>como</i>	{	Huviéren		

# Second Future.

Huviére	} Havido {	<i>If, or when I shall have had, &amp;c.</i>
Huviéres		
Huviére		
Huviéremos		
Huviéreis		
Huviéren		
<i>or otherwise</i> <i>havré havido.</i>		

# Infinitive Mood.

Havér	<i>To have.</i>
Haver havido	<i>To have had.</i>
Haver de haver	<i>To have hereafter;</i>
<i>Gerund.</i> Haviendo,	<i>Having.</i>

# Participles.

<i>Pres.</i> El que ha	<i>The person who hath</i>
<i>Paf.</i> Havido	<i>Had</i>
<i>Supine</i> à havér	<i>To have, in having, &amp;c.</i>

*Note,* That the *Spanish Academy* hath changed *havrér* into *habér* ; but as this innovation is against the practice both of ancient and modern Authors, I thought proper to conjugate and retain *havrér*.

*The other Auxiliary Verbs* *Estar, and Ser, To be.*

# Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Yo estói	Yo fói	}	<i>I am</i>
		Tu estás	Tu éres		<i>Thou art</i>
		El está	El es		<i>He is</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Nosótrof estámo\$	Nosótrof fómo\$	}	<i>We are</i>
		Vosótrof estáis	Vosótrof fóis		<i>Ye are</i>
		Ello\$ están	Ello\$ fon		<i>They are</i>
G 4					Preter-

## Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Yo éstaba	Yo éra	{	<i>I was</i>
		Tu estabas	Tu éras		<i>Thou wast</i>
		El estaba	El éra		<i>He was</i>
Plur.	{	Nosotros estábamos	Nosotros éramos	{	<i>We were</i>
		Vosotros estábais or	Vosotros érais, or		<i>Ye were</i>
		estábadeis	éradeis		
		Ellos estaban	Ellos éran		<i>They were</i>

## First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Estuve	Fuí	{	<i>I have been</i>
		Fuiste	Fuiste		<i>Thou hast been</i>
		Estuvo	Fué		<i>He hath been</i>
Plur.	{	Estuvimos	Fuimos	{	<i>We have been</i>
		Estuvisteis	Fuisteis		<i>Ye have been</i>
		Estuvieron	Fuieron		<i>They have been</i>

## Second and Third-Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or hube	He, or hube	{	<i>I have been, &amp;c.</i>
		estado	sido		
		Has, or huviste	Has, or huviste		
Plur.	{	estado	sido	{	<i>I have been, &amp;c.</i>
		Ha, or huvo	Ha, or huvo		
		estado	sido		
Plur.	{	Havemos, or	Havemos, or	{	<i>I have been, &amp;c.</i>
		huvimos estado	huvimos sido		
		Havéis, or	Havéis, or		
Plur.	{	huvisteis estado	huvisteis sido	{	<i>I have been, &amp;c.</i>
		Han, or	Han, or		
		huvieron estado	huvieron sido		

## Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía estado	Havía sido	{	<i>I had been, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías estado	Havías sido		
		Havía estado	Havía sido		
Plur.	{	Havíamos estado	Havíamos sido	{	<i>I had been, &amp;c.</i>
		Havíadeis, or havíais	Havíais, or havíadeis		
		estado	sido		
		Havían estado	Havían sido		

# First Future.

Sing.	{	Estaré	Seré	}	<i>I shall, or will be, &amp;c.</i>
		Estarás	Serás		
Plur.	{	Estará	Será	}	
		Estaremos	Seremos		
		Estareis	Sereis		
		Estarán	Serán		

# Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or Téngo de estar	He de fer	}	<i>I must be, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de estar	Has de fer		
Plur.	{	Ha de estar	Ha de fer	}	
		Hémos de estar	Hémos de fer		
		Havéis de estar	Havéis de fer		
		Han de estar	Han de fer		

# Third Future.

Havré de estar, or fér *I shall be obliged to be*

# Fourth Future.

Havía de estar, or fér *I had to be, or I was to be.*

# Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Está tu	Se tu	}	<i>Be thou</i>
		Esté el	Séa el		<i>Be he</i>
Plur.	{	Estémos nosótro	Seámos nosótro	}	<i>Let us be</i>
		Estád vosótro	Sed vosótro		<i>Be ye</i>
		Estén ellos	Séan ellos		<i>Let them be.</i>

Subjunctive

Subjunctive Mood.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Esté	Séa	} <i>If, or when I am, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Estés	Séas	
<i>como</i>	{ Esté	Séa	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Estémos	Seámos	
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Estéis	Seáis	
<i>como</i>	{ Estén	Séan	

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Estuviéra estuviéſſe, or	Fuéra, fuéſſe, sería	} <i>If, or when I was, &amp;c.</i>
		estaría		
		Estuviéras estuviéſſes, or	Fuéras, fuéſſes, serías	
<i>Si, or</i>	{	estaríaſ		
<i>como</i>		Estuviéra estuviéſſe, or	Fuéra, fuéſſe, sería	
		estaría		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Estuviéramos estuviéſſe-	Fuéramos, fuéſſemos,	} <i>If, or when I was, &amp;c.</i>
		mos, or estaríaſmos	seríaſmos	
		Estuviéradeis,	Fuéradeis, fuéſſedeis,	
<i>Si, or</i>	{	estuviéſſedeis,	seríaſdeis	
<i>como</i>		or estaríaſdeis		
		Estuviéran estuviéſſen,	Fuéran, fuéſſen, se-	
		or estaríaſn	rían	

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Haya eſtádo	Haya ſído	} <i>If, or when I have been, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Hayas eſtádo	Hayas ſído	
<i>como</i>	{ Haya eſtádo	Haya ſído	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hayáſmos eſtádo	Hayáſmos ſído	
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Hayáis eſtádo	Hayáis ſído	
<i>como</i>	{ Hayan eſtádo	Hayan ſído	

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	{	{	<i>If, or when I had been, &amp;c.</i>	
<i>Si, or</i>		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				
<i>como</i>		Huviéra, or huviéſſe				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos		{		<i>sído</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				
<i>como</i>		Huvierán, or huviéſſen				

First



# First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Estuviére	Fuére	} <i>If I shall, or should be, or If, or when I had been, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or como</i>	{ Estuviéres	Fuéres	
	{ Estuviére	Fuére	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Estuviéremos	Fuéremos	
<i>Si, or como</i>	{ Estuviéredes	Fuéredes	
	{ Estuviéren	Fuéren	

# Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére	} <i>Estádo</i>	} <i>Sído</i>	} <i>When I shall, or should have been, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or como</i>	{ Huviéres			
	{ Huviére			
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéremos			
<i>Si, or como</i>	{ Huviéredes			
	{ Huviéren			

*or quando havré estádo, or sído.*

# Infinitive Mood.

<i>Pres.</i>	Estár,	Sér	} <i>To be. To have been. To be hereafter. Being.</i>
<i>Pret. perf.</i>	Havér estádo,	Havér sido,	
<i>Future</i>	Havér de estár,	Havér de ser,	
<i>Gerund.</i>	Estando, siendo		

# Participles.

<i>Pres.</i>	Elque esta, or es,	<i>The Person who is.</i>
<i>Paf.</i>	Estádo, Sído,	<i>Been.</i>
<i>Sup.</i>	à estár, à ser	<i>To be in being.</i>

*The Optative is the same as the Subjunctive.*

**B**OTH these Verbs *Estár* and *Sér* signify *To be*, the *English* having no word to distinguish between them, and yet they cannot be indifferently used, there being a considerable difference between them, which is, that *Ser* signifies the proper and inseparable Essence of a Thing, denoting the Quality, or Quantity, as *Ser bueno*, to be good ; *Ser malo*, to be wicked ; *Ser grande*, to be big ; *Ser pequeño*, to be little, &c. But *Estár* denotes Place, or some adjunct

adjunct Quality, as *Estár en cása*, to be at home; *Estár buéno*, to be well; *Estár málo*, or *enférmo*, to be sick. For in enquiring after a Man's Health, the Spaniards make use of the word *Estár*, as *como estáis*? How do you? The Answer is, *Estói buéno*, or *málo*. I am well or ill. Though sometimes the Answer is without the Verb, saying only, *buéno*, or *málo*, well or sick; or placing the Verb after the Adjective, as *buéno estói*, I am well. Where it is to be observed that *buéno* and *málo*, do not signify good and bad, as they do upon other occasions, but well or ill. In short, *estár*, is us'd to express any thing that concerns the affections, or passions of the Soul, as *estói trísté*, I am melancholy, *estói alégre*, I am merry. So that as has been said *ser* must be used to denote the inseparable Essence, or Being, whereas *estár* implies Accidents, as *El vestido es buéno*, *peró está mal bécho*, the Cloaths are good, but they are ill made; where we see the essential Being of the Thing itself under the word *ser*, or *es*, and the accidental fault of its being ill made under the word *estár*. *Ser* likewise is used to express the condition, or temper of a Man in its nature, as *éste hombre es colérico de condicion*, this Man is of a colerick disposition; and *estar* expresses the fit or action, as *éste hombre está colérico*, this Man is actually angry, or is in a colerick fit.

*Example of the first Conjugation of Verbs regular in ar, as Revelár, to reveal, -or discover.*

### Indicative Mood.

#### Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo revélo	<i>I reveal.</i>
		Tu revélas	<i>Thou, or you reveal.</i>
		El revéla	<i>He reveals.</i>
Plur.	{	Nosotros revelámos	<i>We reveal.</i>
		Vos reveláis	<i>Ye reveal.</i>
		Ellos revelan	<i>They reveal.</i>

Preter-

### Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Yo revelába	<i>I did reveal, or I was revealing.</i>
		Tu revelábas	<i>You did reveal.</i>
		El revelába	<i>He did reveal.</i>
Plur.	{	Nosotros revelábamos	<i>We did reveal.</i>
		Vosotros revelábadeis, <i>or</i>	<i>Ye did reveal.</i>
		revelábais	
		Ellos revelában	<i>They did reveal.</i>

### First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Revelé	<i>I revealed.</i>
		Reveláste	<i>You revealed.</i>
		Reveló	<i>He revealed.</i>
Plur.	{	Revelámos	<i>We revealed.</i>
		Revelásteis	<i>Ye revealed.</i>
		Revelaron	<i>They revealed.</i>

### Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, <i>or</i> hube	}	Reveládo,	{	<i>I have revealed</i>
		Has, <i>or</i> huviste				<i>Thou hast revealed</i>
		Ha, <i>or</i> hubo				<i>He hath revealed</i>
Plur.	{	Havemos, <i>or</i> huvimos				<i>We have revealed</i>
		Havéis, <i>or</i> huvisteis				<i>Ye have revealed</i>
		Han, <i>or</i> huvieron				<i>They have revealed.</i>

### Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Reveládo,	{	<i>I had revealed</i>
		Havías				<i>Thou hadst revealed</i>
		Havía				<i>He had revealed</i>
Plur.	{	Havíamos				<i>We had revealed</i>
		Havíadeis				<i>Ye had revealed</i>
		Havían				<i>They had revealed.</i>

## First Future.

Sing.	{	Revelaré,	<i>I shall or will reveal</i>
		Revelarás,	<i>You shall or will reveal</i>
		Revelará,	<i>He shall or will reveal</i>
Plur.	{	Revelaremos,	<i>We shall or will reveal</i>
		Revelaréis,	<i>Ye shall or will reveal</i>
		Revelarán,	<i>They shall or will reveal.</i>

## Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de revelár,	} <i>I am to or must reveal, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de revelár,	
		Ha de revelár,	
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos de re-	
		velár,	
		Havéis de revelár,	
		Han de revelár,	

## Third Future.

Sing.	{	Havré	} <i>I shall be obliged to reveal, &amp;c.</i>
		Havrás	
		Havrá	
Plur.	{	Havrémos	
		Havréis	
		Havrán	

## Fourth Future.

Sing.	{	Havía	} <i>I had, or I was to re-</i>
		Havías	
		Havía	
Plur.	{	Havíamos	
		Haviádeis	
		Havían	

## Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Revéla tu,	<i>Do you reveal, or reveal thou</i>
		Revéle el,	<i>Let him reveal.</i>

Plur.

Plur.	{	Revelémos nosótroſ,	<i>Let us reveal.</i>
		Revelád voſótroſ,	<i>Do ye reveal, or let ye reveal.</i>
		Revélen éſloſ,	<i>Let them reveal.</i>

*The Optative and Subjunctive Moods, with their Signs Si, Cómo, Oxalá, Aunqué.*

*If, When, would God, God Grant.*

Preſent Tenſe.

Sing.	{	Yo revéle	}	<i>When, or God grant, &amp;c. I reveal, &amp;c.</i>
		Tu revéles		
		El revéle		
Plur.	{	Noſótroſ revelémoſ	}	
		Voſótroſ reveléiſ		
		Elloſ revélen,		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Revelára, reveláſſe, revelaría	} <i>When, or would to God I did reveal, &amp;c.</i>
		Reveláras, reveláſſes, revelaríaſ	
		Revelára, reveláſſe, revelaría	
Plur.	{	Reveláramoſ, reveláſſemoſ, revelaríaſmoſ	
		Reveláradeiſ, reveláſſedeiſ, revelaríaſdeiſ	
		Reveláran, reveláſſen, revelarían.	

Three Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Haya,	}	Reveládo,	{	<i>When, or would to God, &amp;c. I have reveal, &amp;c.</i>
		Hayas,				
		Haya,				
Plur.	{	Hayámos	}			
		Hayáis				
		Hayan				

## First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, <i>or</i> huviéſſe	}	Reveládo,	{	<i>When or would</i>		
		Huviéras, <i>or</i> huviéſſes				<i>to God, &amp;c.</i>		
Plur.	{	Huviéra, <i>or</i> huviéſſe	}			<i>I had reveal-</i>		
		Huviéramos, <i>or</i> huviéſſemos				<i>ed, &amp;c.</i>		
		Huviéradeis, <i>or</i> huviéſſedeis						
		Huviéran, <i>or</i> huviéſſen						

## First Future.

Sing.	{	Reveláre,	}		{	When or would to God, &c.		
		Reveláres,				I ſhall or will reveal, &c.		
Plur.	{	Reveláre,	}					
		Reveláremos						
		Reveláredeis						
		Reveláren,						

## Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére	}	Reveládo,	{	When or would to		
		Huviéres				God, &c. I ſhall		
Plur.	{	Huviére	}			or will have re-		
		Huviéremos				vealed, &c.		
		Huviéredeis						
		Huviéren						

*or otherwiſe* *havré* *reveládo.*

## Infinitive Mood.

## Present.

Revelár,

*To reveal.*

## Preterperfect.

Havér reveládo

*To have revealed.*

## Future.

Havér, or *esperár* de revelár*To reveal hereafter.*

Gerund.

Gerund.

Revelando, *Revealing.*

Supine of the Active Signification,

A revelár, *To be about to reveal.*

Supine of the Passive Signification,

A fer reveládo, *To be revealed.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice,

Revelante, or el que revéla, *Revealing.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice,

Reveládo, *Revealed.*

All regular Verbs that have their Infinitive in *ar*, are conjugated in all Points like this. The Irregular shall be treated of, after the following List of regular Verbs in *ar*, above spoken of.

*Regular Verbs in ar.*

**L** AMár, *to call.*  
 Ayunár, *to fast.*  
 Comprár, *to buy.*  
 Recompensár, *to requite.*  
 Apartár, *to set aside.*  
 Separár, *to separate.*  
 Apelár, *to appeal.*  
 Acomodár, *to adjust.*  
 Peleár, *to fight.*  
 Cantár, *to sing.*  
 Llorár, *to weep.*

Aprovechár, *to profit.*  
 Cenár, *to sup.*  
 Hallár, *to find.*  
 Topár, *to find.*  
 Ganár, *to gain.*  
 Contestár, *to contest.*  
 Despojar, *to strip.*  
 Arrastrár, *to drag.*  
 Fiár, *to trust.*  
 Pagár, *to pay.*  
 Saqueár, *to plunder.*

Amenazár, *to threaten.*Injuriár, *to revile.*Afrentár, *to affront.*Aventurár, *to venture.*Matár, *to kill.*Curár, *to cure, or heal.*Sanár, *to heal, or recover health.*Amedrantár, *to put into fear.*Españtár, *to frighten.*Manchár, *to spot, or stain.*Alzár, *to take up.*Levantár, *to raise.*Sudár, *to sweat.*Remediár, *to remedy.*Cortár, *to cut.*Atár, *to tie.*Azotár, *to whip.*Estimár, *to esteem.*Borrár, *to blot out.*Lavár, *to wash.*Nadár, *to swim.*Hurtár, *to steal.*Robár, *to rob, to steal.*Besár, *to kiss.*Cabár, *to dig.*Cazár, *to hunt.*Hechár vino, o agua, *to pour out wine, or water.*Hechár de beber, *to fill out drink.*Hechár de casa, *to turn out of doors.*Hechár una ayuda, *to give a chylster.*Despavilar la vela, *to snuff the candle.*Despavilar una cosa, *to make a thing vanish.*Despavilar los ojos, *to awake from sleep.*Alumbrár, *to light.*Tomár, *to take.*Quitar, *to remove, or to take away.*Alabár, *to praise.*Alquilár, *to hire.*Perdonár, *to pardon.*Caminár, *to travel.*Reculár, *to draw back.*Adelantár, *to forward.*Rehusár, *to refuse.*Mandár, *to command.*Disimulár, *to dissemble.*Engañár, *to deceive.*Desengañár, *to undeceive.*Bailár, *to dance.*Danzár, *to dance.*Domár, *to tame.*Lisongeár, *to flatter.*Martyrizár, *to torment.*Encantár, *to exchant.*Desnudár, *to strip.*Reposár, *to repose.*Canear, *to tire.*Animár, *to encourage.*Jurár, *to swear.*Rezár, *to pray.*Esternudár, *to sneeze.*Callár, *to be silent.*Passeár, *to walk.*Alejár, *to set at a distance.*Condenár, *to condemn.*Dexár, *to leave.*Olvidár, *to forget.*Porfiár, *to contend.*Gastár, *to spend.*Acusár, *to accuse.*Aparejár, *to make ready.*Despreciár, *to despise.*Menospreciár, *to undervalue.*Maltratár, *to misuse.*Empeñar, *to engage.*Acabár, *to finish.*Amparár, *to protect.*Desamparár, *to forsake.*Mirár, *to look.*Declarár, *to declare.*Procurár, *to procure.*Entrár, *to come in.*Criár, *to breed.*Embiár, *to send.*Apeár, *to alight.*Retirár, *to retire.*Abordár, *to come to shore.*Arrebatár, *to snatch.*Arrancár, *to tear up.*Desarraigar, *to root up.*Amansár, *to tame.*Presentár, *to present.*

Representár,



Representár, *to represent.*  
 Desafiár, *to challenge.*  
 Ayudár, *to help.*  
 Difamár, *to defame.*  
 Honrár, *to honour.*  
 Tapár, *to cover.*  
 Sitiár, *to besiege.*  
 Enojár, *to anger.*  
 Usár, *to use.*  
 Casár, *to marry.*  
 Amár, *to love.*

Conformár, *to conform.*  
 Visítár, *to visit.*  
 Confrontár, *to confront.*  
 Comparár, *to compare.*  
 Adorár, *to adore.*  
 Tartamudeár, *to flammer.*  
 Galanteár, *to court.*  
 Escaramuzár, *to skirmish.*  
 Disparár, *to discharge.*  
 Enfanchár, *to widen.*  
 Bembaleár, *to totter.*

It would be endless to pretend to mention all the Verbs of this sort, and therefore these may suffice ; but we may now proceed to the irregular Verbs of this Conjugation, which are many, and must be particularly taken notice of.

Here follow the irregular Verbs, which being under no certain Rule, must all be particularly conjugated.

*The first Conjugation of Verbs irregular in ar.*

Dar, *To give.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo dái	<i>I give</i>
		Tu dás	<i>You give</i>
		El da	<i>He gives</i>
Plur.	{	Nosotros damos	<i>We give</i>
		Vosotros dáis	<i>Ye give</i>
		Ellos dan	<i>They give.</i>

## Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Dába		<i>I did give, or I was giving</i>
		Dábas		<i>You did give</i>
		Dába		<i>He did give</i>
Plur.	{	Dábamos		<i>We did give</i>
		Dábadeis, or dábaís		<i>Ye did give</i>
		Dában		<i>They did give</i>

## First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Dí		<i>I gave</i>
		Díste		<i>You gave</i>
		Dió		<i>He gave</i>
Plur.	{	Dímos		<i>We gave</i>
		Dísteis		<i>Ye gave</i>
		Diéron		<i>They gave</i>

## Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Yo he, or hube dado		<i>I have given</i>
		Tu has, or huviste dado		<i>You have given</i>
		El ha, or hubo dado		<i>He has given</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos, or huvimos dado		<i>We have given</i>
		Havéis, or huvisteis dado		<i>Ye have given</i>
		Han, or huvieron dado		<i>They have given.</i>

## Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía		Dádo,	{	<i>I had given, &amp;c.</i>		
		Havías						
		Havía						
Plur.	{	Havíamos			{			
		Havíadeis						
		Havían						

## First Future.

Sing.	{	Daré,	}	<i>I shall, or will give, &amp;c.</i>
		Darás,		
		Dará,		
Plur.	{	Darémos,		
		Daréis,		
		Darán,		

Second

## Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, <i>or</i> Téngo de dár	}	<i>I am to, or must give, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de dár		
		Ha de dár		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havémos de dár		
		Havéis de dár		
		Han de dár		

## Third Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havré	}	De dár,	{	<i>I shall be obliged to give, &amp;c.</i>
		Havrás				
		Havrá				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havrémós				
		Havréis				
		Havrán				

## Fourth Future, *aliàs* a Tense of Circumlocution.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havía	}	De dár,	{	<i>I had to give, or I was to give, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havíamos				
		Havíadeis				
		Havían				

## Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Da tu,	<i>Give thou</i>
		De el,	<i>Let him give</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Démos nosótro,	<i>Let us give</i>
		Dád vosótro,	<i>Give ye</i>
		Den ellos,	<i>Let them give.</i>

*Subjunctive and Optative Moods, with the Signs.*

{ C6mo, Aunque, Oxal6,  
{ *When, God grant, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Yo de, Tu des, El de,	}	<i>When or God grant I do give, &amp;c.</i>
Plur.	D6mos,		
	D6is,		
	D6n,		

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Di6ra, di6sse, dar6a	}	<i>When, or God grant I did give, or when I might, could, or should give.</i>
		Di6ras, di6sses, dar6as		
Plur.	{	Di6ra, di6sse, dar6a		
		Di6ramos, di6ssemos, dar6amos		
		Di6radeis, or di6rais, dar6adeis, or		
		dar6ais, di6ssedeis, or di6sseis		
		Di6ran, di6ssen, dar6an		

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	H6ya,	}	D6do,	{	<i>When, or would to God, &amp;c. I had given, or when I have given, &amp;c.</i>
		Hayas,				
Plur.	{	H6ya,				
		Hayamos				
		Hay6is				
		Hayan				

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Huvi6ra, or huvi6sse	}	D6do,	{	<i>When, or would to God I had given, &amp;c.</i>
		Huvi6ras, or huvi6sses				
Plur.	{	Huvi6ra, or huvi6sse				
		Huvi6ramos, or huvi6ssemos				
		Huvi6radeis, or huvi6ssedeis				
		Huvi6ran, or huvi6ssen				

First

First Future.

Sing.	{ Diere- Diéres	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall give, &amp;c.</i>
	{ Diere		
	{ Diéremos		
Plur.	{ Diéredeis		
	{ Diéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré	}	Dádo,	{ <i>When, or God grant I shall or will give, &amp;c.</i>
	{ Huviéres			
	{ Huviére			
	{ Huviéremos			
Plur.	{ Huviéredes			
	{ Huviéren			

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dar	<i>To give</i>
-----	----------------

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér dado	<i>To have given</i>
------------	----------------------

Future.

Havér de dár	<i>To give hereafter</i>
--------------	--------------------------

Gerund.

Dándo	<i>Giving</i>
-------	---------------

Participle Passive.

Dádo	<i>Given</i>
------	--------------

Participle of the Present Tense, Active Voice,

Dante, *or* el que da      *Giving*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, *or* espera de dar      *To give hereafter*

First Supine.

à Dár      *To be about to give*

Second Supine.

A ser Dado      *To be given*

*The next Irregular Verb of this Conjugation is,*

Almorzár, *To breakfast.*

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.	{	Almuérzo	<i>I breakfast</i>
		Almuérzas	<i>You breakfast</i>
		Almuérza	<i>He breakfasts</i>
Plur.	{	Almorzamos	<i>We breakfast</i>
		Almorzáis	<i>Ye breakfast</i>
		Almuérzan	<i>They breakfast</i>

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Almorzába	<i>I did breakfast, or I was breakfasting</i>
		Almorzábas	<i>You did breakfast</i>
		Almorzába	<i>He did breakfast</i>

*Plur.*

Plur.	{	Almorzábamos	<i>We did breakfast</i>
		Almorzábais, or	<i>Ye did breakfast</i>
		Almorzábadeis	
		Almorzában	<i>They did breakfast</i>

### Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Almorzé	<i>I have breakfasted</i>
		Almorzaste	<i>You have breakfasted</i>
		Almorzó	<i>He has breakfasted</i>
Plur.	{	Almorzámos	<i>We have breakfasted</i>
		Almorzásteis	<i>Ye have breakfasted</i>
		Almorzaron	<i>They have breakfasted</i>

### Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or hube almorzado	<i>I have breakfasted</i>
		Has, or huviste almorzado	<i>You have breakfasted</i>
		Ha, or hube almorzado	<i>He has breakfasted</i>
Plur.	{	Hemos, havemos, or huvimos almorzado	<i>We have breakfasted</i>
		Havéis, or huvisteis almorzado	<i>Ye have breakfasted</i>
		Han, or huvieron almorzado	<i>They have breakfasted</i>

### Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía almorzado	<i>I had breakfasted</i>
		Havías almorzado	<i>You had breakfasted</i>
		Havía almorzado	<i>He had breakfasted</i>
Plur.	{	Haviámos almorzado	<i>We had breakfasted</i>
		Haviadéis almorzado	<i>Ye had breakfasted</i>
		Havían almorzado	<i>They had breakfasted</i>

### First Future.

Sing.	{	Almorzaré	} <i>I will, or shall breakfast,</i> <i>&amp;c.</i>
		Almorzarás	
		Almorzará	
Plur.	{	Almorzaremos	
		Almorzaréis	
		Almorzarán	

### Second

## Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, <i>or</i> tengo de almorzár	}	<i>I am to, or must breakfast, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de almorzár		
		Ha de almorzár		
Plur.	{	Hémos, <i>or</i> havémos de almorzár	}	
		Havéis de almorzár		
		Han de almorzár		

Havré de almorzár  
Havía de almorzár

*I shall be obliged to breakfast*  
*I was to breakfast.*

## Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Almuérza	<i>Do you breakfast</i>
		Almuérze	<i>Let him breakfast</i>
Plur.	{	Almorzémos	<i>Let us breakfast</i>
		Almorzád	<i>Do ye breakfast</i>
		Almuérzen	<i>Let them breakfast</i>

*The Optative and Subjunctive Moods, with the Signs Si, Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.*

*If, When, would God, God grant.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo almuerze	}	<i>If, When, would to God I breakfast, &amp;c.</i>	
		Tu almuerzes			
		El almuerze			
Plur.		Almorzémos			
		Almorzéis			
		Almuérzen			



### Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Almorzára, almorzásse, almorzaría	} <i>If, when, would to God I did breakfast, &amp;c.</i>
		Almorzáras, almorzásses, almorzarías	
		Almorzára, almorzásse, almorzaría	
Plur.	{	Almorzáramos, almorzássémos, almorzariámos	
		Almorzáradeis, almorzássedeis, almorzariádeis	
		Almorzáran, almorzássen, almorzarían	

### Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya	} Almorzádo, { <i>If, when, would to God I have breakfasted, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas	
		Háya	
Plur.	{	Hayámos	
		Hayáis	
		Háyan	

### First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéssé	} Almorzádo, { <i>If, when, would to God I had breakfasted, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviésses	
		Huviéra, or huviéssé	
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéssémos	
		Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
		Huviéran, or huviéssen	

### First Future.

Sing.	{	Almorzáre	} <i>If, when, would to God I shall breakfast, &amp;c.</i>
		Almorzáres	
		Almorzáre	
Plur.	{	Almorzáremos	
		Almorzáredeis	
		Almorzáren	

### Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	} Almorzádo, { <i>If, when, God grant I shall or will have breakfasted, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres	
		Huviére	
Plur.	{	Huviéremos	
		Huviéredeis	
		Huviéren	

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood,

Present.

Almorzár

*To breakfast*

Preterperfect.

Havér almorzáo

*To have breakfasted.*

Future.

Havér, or esperar de almorzár,

*To be to breakfast hereafter*

Gerund.

Almorzándo

*breakfasting*

First Supine.

à Almorzár

*To be about breakfasting*

Second Supine.

à fer almorzáo

*Having breakfasted*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que almuérza

*Breakfasting*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Almorzáo

*Breakfasted, &c.*

*The*

The following Irregular Verbs of the first Conjugation, terminating in *ar*, are all conjugated after the same manner as *Almorzar*, changing the Penultima *o* into *ue* in the three Persons Singular, and the third of the Plural in all the Present Tenses.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Present.</i>	<i>Preterperfect.</i>
Contár, <i>to count</i>	Cuénto	Conté
Defollár, <i>to flea</i>	Defuéllo	Defollé
Refollár, <i>to breathe</i>	Refuéllo	Refollé
Acordár, <i>to remember</i>	Acuerdo	Acordé
Mostrar, <i>to show</i>	Muéstro	Mostre
Afollar, <i>to destroy</i>	Afluélo	Afollé
Volár, <i>to fly</i>	Uuélo	Volé
Apostár, <i>to wager</i>	Apuésto	Aposté
Hollar, <i>to trample on</i>	Huéllo	Hollé
Soltár, <i>to let loose</i>	Suéto	Solté
Forzár, <i>to force</i>	Fuérzo	Forcé
Provar, <i>to try, or prove</i>	Pruévo	Prové
Sonar, <i>to sound</i>	Suéno	Soné
Atronár, <i>to thunder</i>	Atruéno	Atroné
Degollar, <i>to behead</i>	Deguéllo	Degollé
Consolar, <i>to comfort</i>	Consuélo	Consolé
Encontrár, <i>to meet</i>	Encuéntro	Encontré.

But *jugár* to play, changes *u* into *ue*.

All the Verbs ending in *gar* have the first person of the preterperfect of the indicative\* in *gue*; as likewise the third of the singular, the first and last of the plural of the imperative, and in all the persons of the present tense of the optative, as

*Infinit. Pres. Indic. Pret. pe. Imperative, Pres. Optat.*

Colgar, <i>to hang</i>	Cuélgo	Colgué	Cuélgue aquél	que yo Cuélgue
Rogar, <i>to intreat</i>	Ruégo	Rogué	Ruégue el	que Ruegue
Pagar, <i>to pay</i>	Págo	Pagué	Págue el	que yo Págue
Holgár, <i>to be idle</i>	Huélgo	Holgué	Huélgue el	que yo Huélgue
Regár, <i>to water</i>	Riégo	Régué	Riégue el	que yo Riégue &c.

The Verbs in *cár* change *car* in *que* in the first person of the preterperfect of the indicative; the third singular, the first and last of the plural in the imperative, and in all the persons of the present tense of the optative, as

*Infinit. Pres. Indic. Pret. p. Imperative, Pres. Optative.*

Tocár, <i>to touch,</i> <i>to feel.</i>	tóco	toqué	tóqué el	que yo toque
Trocár, <i>to change</i>	truéco	troquí	truéque el	que yo truéque, &c.

The following Verbs change the penultima *e* into *ie* in all the persons singular, and the third of the plural of the present tense of the indicative, imperative, and optative, as

*Infinit. Pres. Indic. Imperative, Present Optative.*

Apretár, <i>to squeeze</i>	apriéto	apriéta tu	que yo apriéte
Emmendár, <i>to mend</i>	emmiéndo	emmiénda tu	que yo emmiénde
Empezár, <i>to begin</i>	empiézo	empiéza tu	que yo empiéce
Cerrár <i>to shut</i>	Ciérro	Cierra tu	que yo ciérre
Enterrár, <i>to bury</i>	entiérro	entierra tu	que yo entiérre
Desterrár, <i>to banish</i>	destiérro	destierra tu	que yo destiérre
Confessar, <i>to confess</i>	confiéssó	confiéssa tu	que yo confiéssé

And several other more, whose irregularity is only in the following Tenses, as

*Tentár, to feel.*

*Present Indicative.*

Sing. {	Tiénto, Tiéntas Tiénta }	I feel, &c.	Plur. {	Tentámos Tentáis Tiéntan }
---------	--------------------------------	-------------	---------	----------------------------------

*Imperative.*

*Imperative.*

Sing.	{	Tienta tu,		Feel thou	Plur.	{	Tentemos nosotros
		Tiente el					Tentad vosotros
							Tienten aquellos

*Present Optative.*

Sing.	{	que Yotiente, that I may		(feel	Plur.	{	Tentemos
		Tiéntes					Tentéis
		Tiénte					Tiénten
otherwise they are conjugated as Revelár.							

The Verb *Andár*, to go, or to go about, has the preterperfect of the indicative irregular ; and generally when such tense is irregular, the first and the second Preterimperfects, and the first Future of the Optative are irregular, as

Sing.	Andúve	Si, Anduviéra	Anduviéssé	qu. anduviére,	If I could go	Anduviéres	When I shall go
	Anduviste						
Plur.	Andúvo	Anduviéra,	Anduviéssé	Anduviére			
	Anduvimos	Anduviéramos,	Anduviéssémos	anduviéremos			
	Anduvisteis,	Anduviéradeis,	Anduviéssádeis,	anduviéredeis			
	Anduviéron	Anduviéran,	Anduviéssen	anduviéren			

*in other Tenses is conjugated as Revelár.*

in other Tenses is conjugated as Revelár.

*Of the Verbs Passive*

*Of the First Conjugation.*

VERBS Passive are formed in Spanish from the Active, by the auxiliary Verb, and the Participle Passive of the Preterperfect Tense, following always the Moods and Tenses of the Verb *Sér*, as

*Sér amado,*

to be beloved.

Present

## Indicative.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	fóí	}	amádo	{	<i>I am beloved</i>
		éres				<i>Thou are beloved</i>
		es				<i>He is beloved</i>
Plur.	{	fomos	}	amádos	{	<i>We are beloved</i>
		fóis				<i>Ye are beloved</i>
		fon				<i>They are beloved</i>

## Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	éra	}	amádo	{	<i>I was beloved</i>
		éras				<i>Thou was beloved</i>
		era				<i>He was beloved</i>
Plur.	{	éramos	}	amádos	{	<i>We were beloved</i>
		éradeis				<i>Ye were beloved</i>
		éran				<i>They were beloved</i>

## Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	fuí, or he sido	}	amádo	{	<i>I have been beloved</i>
		fuiſte, or has sido				<i>Thou has been beloved</i>
		fué, or ha sido				<i>He hath been beloved</i>
Plur.	{	fuímos, or hémos sido	}	amádos	{	<i>We have been beloved</i>
		fuiſteis, or havéis sido				<i>Ye have been beloved</i>
		fuéron, or han sido				<i>They have been beloved</i>

## Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía sido	}	amádo	{	<i>I had been beloved</i>
		Havías sido				<i>Thou hadſt been beloved</i>
		Havía sido				<i>He had been beloved</i>
Plur.	{	Havíamos sido	}	amádos	{	<i>We had been beloved</i>
		Haviádeis sido				<i>Ye had been beloved</i>
		Havían sido				<i>They had been beloved</i>

## Future.

Seré amado, &amp;c.

*I ſhall be beloved*

And ſo throughout other Moods and Tenſes.

*Of the Reciprocal Verbs.*

THE reciprocal Verbs are all terminated in *se* in the infinitive Mood, as *Acofárse* to lie down, or to grow near, or to come near; *Levantárse*, to rise up; *Librárfse*, to discharge one's self, to make one's self free, &c. and are conjugated thus:

*Adelantárse*, to go before, to rise up to a Dignity or to Preferment.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Me adelánto	}	<i>I go before, &amp;c.</i>	
		Te adelantas			
		Se adelánta			
Plur.		Nos adelantámos			
		Vos, or os adelantáis			
		Se adelántan			

Imperfect.

Sing.	{	Me adelantába	}	<i>I did go before, &amp;c.</i>	
		Te adelantábas			
		Se adelantába			
Plur.		Nos adelantábamos			
		Vos, or os adelantábadeis			
		Se adelantában			

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Me adelanté	}	<i>I went before.</i>
		Te adelantáste		
		Se adelantó		
Plur.	{	Nos adelantámos	}	
		Vos, or os adelantásteis		
		Se adelantáron		

## Second Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Me he Te has Se ha	} Adelantádo	{ <i>I have gone be- fore.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Nos hemos Vos, or os havéis Se han		

And so in all the Tenses and Moods, but in the Imperative thus :

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Adelántate tu Adelántese el	}	<i>Go thou before, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Adelantemosnos nosotros Adelantados vosotros Adelántense aquellos.		

The Verb *Pesárse*, *to be sorry*, is conjugated thus :

## Indicative.

## Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Péfame, or à mí mepéfa, Péfate, or à ti te péfa, Péfale, or à el le péfa,	<i>I am sorry Thou art sorry He is sorry</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Péfanos, or à nosotros nos péfa, Péfaos, or à vosotros os péfa, Péfales, or à ellos les péfa,	<i>We are sorry Ye are sorry They are sorry.</i>

And so throughout all other Tenses ; but in the Imperative Mood thus :

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Péfete, Péfele,	<i>Be thou sorry Let him be sorry</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Péfenos, Péfeos, Péfeles,	<i>Let us be sorry Be ye sorry Let them be sorry</i>



*Of Verbs Impersonals belonging to the first Conjugation.*

THE *Spanish* Impersonals, like the *Latin*, want the first and second Persons, and are declined only in the third Person, throughout all Moods and Tenses.

Of the Impersonals some are Active, and some Passive.  
The Active are conjugated thus :

Nevár                      *To snow.*

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Niéva, *It snows.*

Imperfect.

Nevába, *It did snow,*

### First Preterperfect.

Nevó, *It snowed.*

### Second and Third Preterperfect.

Há, or húvo nevádo,      *It hath snowed.*

Plusperfect.

Haviá nevádo, *It had snowed.*

Future.

Nevará,	<i>It will snow.</i>
Que niéve,	<i>Let it snow.</i>
Será buéno que niéve,	<i>It will be good if that it snow.</i>
Si nevára, nevásse, or nevaría,	<i>If it would snow.</i>
Quando háya nevádo,	<i>When it hath snowed.</i>
Si huviéra, or huviéste nevado,	<i>If it had snowed.</i>
Quando neváre,	<i>When it shall snow.</i>
Nevádo,	<i>Snowing.</i>
Los Campos están nevados,	<i>The Fields are cover'd with snow.</i>
Niévè, a Neun,	<i>The snow.</i>

In this manner are conjugated the following Verbs :

Atronár, or tronár, *to thunder*  
 Granizár, or apedreár, *to hail*  
 Helár, *to freeze*  
 Relampageár, *to lighten*  
 Ahumár, *to smoak*  
 Constar, *to be plain, or clear*  
 Importár, *to import, to be convenient*

The passive Impersonals are conjugated with the Particle *se* before or after the Verb, as

Se cuenta, *It is said, it is told, it is related, it is reported.*  
 Se contába, *It was said.*  
 Se contó  
 Se ha, or húvo contado } *It hath been said.*  
 Se había contado, *It had been said.*  
 Se contará, *It will be said.*

And so throughout all other Tenses and Moods.

N. B. That all the Verbs regular, or irregular, personals, or impersonals, except the regular passive, may be otherwise conjugated by the auxiliary Verb *Estar*, and the Gerund of the Verb, through all the Tenses and Moods, as

Present.

Present. Indicative.

Sing.	{	ámo or <i>estoi amando</i> , <i>I love, or I am loving, &amp;c.</i>
		ámas, or <i>estás amando</i>
		áma, or <i>está amando</i>
Plur.	{	amámos, or <i>estámos amando</i>
		amáis, or <i>estáis amando</i>
		áman, or <i>están amando</i>

Imperfect.

Amába, or *estába amando*, *I was loving*

Perfect.

Amé, or *estúve amando*, *I did love, &c.*  
 Llámó, or *estói llamando* *I call, or am calling*  
 Háblo, or *estói hablando*, *I speak, or am speaking, &c.*

The same is to be observed in all the Conjugations.

It must be observed here, that there are some Nouns called Verbals, for their being derived from the Verbs; in *Latin* those are terminated generally in *bilis*, in *tor*, and *ix*, and in *Spanish* in *ble*, *dor*, and *iz*: as

<i>Latin.</i>		<i>Spanish.</i>	
<i>bilis</i>	} as {	<i>ble</i>	} as {
<i>tor</i>		<i>dor</i>	
<i>ix</i>		<i>iz</i>	
{ Amabilis		{ Amáble	
{ Amator		{ Amadór	
{ Amatrix		{ Amatríz, or amadóra.	

But *note*, That there are some *Spanish* Verbs which are defectives in this particular, as well as some *Latin* Verbs.

*Of Verbs Regular of the second Conjugation, in er.*

Respondér,      *To answer.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Respondo,	<i>I answer</i>
		Respondes,	<i>You answer</i>
		Responde,	<i>He answers</i>
Plur.	{	Respondemos,	<i>We answer</i>
		Respondéis	<i>Ye answer</i>
		Responden,	<i>They answer</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Respondía,	<i>I did answer, or I was answering.</i>
		Respondías,	<i>You did answer</i>
		Respondía,	<i>He did answer</i>
Plur.	{	Respondíamos,	<i>We did answer</i>
		Respondíades,	<i>Ye did answer</i>
		Respondían,	<i>They did answer</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Respondí,	<i>I answered</i>
		Respondiste,	<i>You answered</i>
		Respondió,	<i>He answered</i>
Plur.	{	Respondimos,	<i>We answered</i>
		Respondisteis,	<i>Ye answered</i>
		Respondieron,	<i>They answered</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or hube	} Respondido, {	{	<i>I have answered</i>
		Has, or huvisté			<i>You have answered</i>
		Ha, or húvo			<i>He has answered</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos, havémos, or			<i>We have answered</i>
		huvimos			
		Havéis, or huvisteis			<i>Ye have answered</i>
		Han, or huvieron			<i>They have answered</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	} Respondido, {	{	<i>I had answered, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías			
		Havía			
Plur.	{	Havíamos			
		Haviádeis			
		Havían			

First Future.

Sing.	{	Responderé,	} {	<i>I shall, or will answer, &amp;c.</i>
		Responderás,		
		Responderá,		
Plur.	{	Responderémos,		
		Responderéis,		
		Responderán,		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or Téngo de responder,	} {	<i>I am, to or must answer, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de responder		
		Ha de responder,		
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos de responder		
		Havéis de responder,		
		Han de responder,		

Third Future.

Sing.	Havré de responder,	<i>I shall be oblig'd to answer.</i>
-------	---------------------	--------------------------------------

## Fourth Future.

*Sing.*    Havía de responder,*I was to answer.*

## Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Responde tu,	<i>Do you answer, or answer thou</i>
	{ Respónda el,	<i>Let him answer</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Respondámos n <sup>s</sup>	<i>Let us answer.</i>
	{ Respondéd vs	<i>Do ye answer, or let you answer</i>
	{ Respóndan ellos	<i>Let them answer</i>

*Subjunctive and Optative Moods, with the Signs.*

{ Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,  
 { *When, God grant, Would to God.*

## Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Respónda,	} <i>When, or God grant I do answer, &amp;c.</i>
	{ Respóndas,	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Respónda,	
	{ Respondámos,	
	{ Respondáis	
	{ Respóndan,	

## Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Respondería, responderíe, or respondería,	} <i>When, or God grant I did answer, &amp;c.</i>
	{ Responderías, responderíesses, or responderías,	
	{ Respondería, responderíe, or respondería	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Responderíamos, responderíessedes, or responderíamos	
	{ Responderíais, or responderíésemos, or responderíades	
	{ Responderían, responderíessen, or responderían.	

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Háya Háyas	} Respondido,	{ When, or would to God, &c. I have answered, &c.
Plur.	{ Háya Hayámos Hayáis Háyan		

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviése Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviése	} Respondido,	{ When, or would to God I had answered, &c.
Plur.	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huviéran, or huviéssen		

First Future.

Sing.	{ Respondiere, Respondieres, Respondiere,	} When, or God grant I shall, or will answer, &c.
Plur.	{ Respondiéremos, Respondiéreis, Respondiéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviere, or havré Huviéres, Huviere	} Respondido,	{ When, or God grant I shall or will have answered, &c.
Plur.	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Respondér,

To answer.

Preter-

## Preterperfect Tense.

Havér respondído;

*To have answered.*

## Future Tense.

Havér de responder,

*To be to answer.*

## Gerund.

Respondiéndolo,

*Answering.*

## Participle Active.

Respondiente, or el que responde,

*Answering.*

## Participle Passive.

Respondído,

*Answered, &c.*

All other regular Verbs of the second Conjugation in *er*, are conjugated after the same manner ; of which take the following List :

*Verbs conjugated as Responder,***C**Orrespondér, *to correspond.*Comér, *to eat.*Bebér, *to drink.*Reprehendér, *to reprove.*Barrér, *to sweep.*Vendér, *to sell.*Concedér, *to grant.*Acometér, *to attack.*Correr, *to run.*Metér, *to put in.*Prometér, *to promise.*Ofendér, *to offend.*Escondér, *to hide.*Aprendér, *to learn.*Temér, *to fear.*Emprendér, *to undertake.*Debér, *to owe.*Cometér, *to commit.*



# Of Verbs Irregular of the second Conjugation in er, as,

Trahér, *to bring.*

Sabér, *to know.*

Tenér, *to have.*

Podér, *to be able.*

Querér, *to will or love.*

Ponér, *to put.*

Hacér, *to do.*

Cabér, *to be contained.*

Ver, *to see.*

Trahér, *To fetch or bring.*

## Indicative Mood.

### Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo tráhigo	<i>I fetch or bring</i>
		Tu tráhes	<i>You fetch or bring</i>
		El tráhe	<i>He fetches or brings</i>
Plur.	{	Nosótro trahémos	<i>We fetch or bring</i>
		Vosótro trahéis	<i>Ye fetch or bring</i>
		Ellos tráhen	<i>They fetch or bring.</i>

### Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Trahía	<i>I did fetch or bring</i>
		Trahías	<i>You did fetch or bring</i>
		Trahía	<i>He did fetch or bring</i>
Plur.	{	Trahíamos	<i>We did fetch or bring</i>
		Trahíais	<i>Ye did fetch or bring</i>
		Trahían	<i>They did fetch or bring.</i>

### First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Tráxe, or trúxe	<i>I have fetcht or brought</i>
		Traxíste, or truxíste	<i>You have fetcht or brought</i>
		Tráxo, or trúxo	<i>He hath fetcht or brought</i>
Plur.	{	Traxímos, or truxímos	<i>We have fetcht or brought</i>
		Traxístéis, or truxístéis	<i>Ye have fetcht or brought</i>
		Traxéron, or truxéron	<i>They have fetcht or brought</i>

### Second

## Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	Hé, <i>or</i> húve	}	Trahído,	{	<i>I have fetcht or brought, &amp;c.</i>
		Has				
Plur.	{	Ha	}	Trahído,	{	<i>I have fetcht or brought, &amp;c.</i>
		Hémos, <i>or</i> havémos				
		Havéis				
		Han				

## Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Trahído,	{	<i>I had fetcht or brought, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías				
Plur.	{	Havía	}	Trahído,	{	<i>I had fetcht or brought, &amp;c.</i>
		Haviámos				
		Haviádeis				
		Havían				

## First Future.

Sing.	{	Traheré	}	<i>I shall or will fetch or bring, &amp;c.</i>
		Traherás		
Plur.	{	Traherá	}	<i>I shall or will fetch or bring, &amp;c.</i>
		Traherémos		
		Traheréis		
		Traherán		

## Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, <i>or</i> téngo de trahér	}	<i>I am to or must fetch or bring, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de trahér		
Plur.	{	Ha de trahér	}	<i>I am to or must fetch or bring, &amp;c.</i>
		Hémos, <i>or</i> havémos de trahér		
		Havéis de trahér		
		Han de trahér		

*The third and fourth as in the other Verbs.*

## Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Tráhe tu,		<i>Bring or fetch thou</i>
		Tráhiga el,		

*Let him bring or fetch*

*Plur.*

Plur.	{	Trahigámos nosótroz,	<i>Let us bring or fetch</i>
		Trahéd vosótroz,	<i>Do ye bring or fetch</i>
		Tráhigan éllos	<i>Let them bring or fetch</i>

*Optative and Subjunctive Mood.*

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.

*When, God grant, would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Tráhiga	}	<i>When or would to God I do bring or fetch, &amp;c.</i>		
		Tráhigas				
		Tráhiga				
Plur.		{			Trahigámos	}
					Trahigáis	
					Tráhigan	

Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Truxéra, truxéſſe, trahería	}	<i>When, or would to God I did bring or fetch, &amp;c.</i>		
		Truxéras, truxéſſes, traherías				
		Truxéra, truxéſſe, trahería				
Plur.		{			Truxéramos, truxéſſemos, traheríamos	}
					Truxéradeis, truxéſſedeis, traheríadeis	
					Truxéran, truxéſſen, traherían	

*The first and second may be conjugated by Traxéra, and Traxése.*

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya	}	Trahído,	{	<i>When, or would to God I have brought or fetched, &amp;c.</i>	
		Háyas					
		Háya					
Plur.		Hayámos					
		Hayáis					
		Hyan					

First

## First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Trahído,	{	When, or would to God had brought or fetcht, &c.
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				
Plur.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}			
		Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos				
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				
	{	Huviéran, or huviéſſen	}			

## First Future.

Sing.	{	Traxére, or truxére	}			
		Traxéres, or truxéres				
Plur.	{	Traxére, or truxére	}			
		Traxéremos, or truxéremos				
		Traxéredeis, or truxéredeis				
	{	Traxéren, or truxéren.	}			

## Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}			
		Huviéres				
Plur.	{	Huviére	}	Trahído,	{	When, or God grant I may, or ſhall have brought or fetcht, c.
		Huviéremos				
		Huviéredeis				
	{	Huviéren	}			

## Infinitive Mood,

## Present.

Trahér,                      *To bring, or fetch.*

## Preterperfect.

Havér trahído,              *To have brought, or fetch'd.*

## Future.

Havér, or esperar de trahér      *To bring, or fetch hereafter.*

Gerund.

Trahiendo, *Bringing, or fetching.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Trahído *Brought, or fetch'd, &c.*

The same manner of Conjugation is to be observed in all Verbs compounded of *Traher*, as *Retraher*, to draw back, &c.

---

*The Irregular Verb Sabér, To know.*

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo sé,	<i>I know</i>
		Tu sabes,	<i>You know</i>
		El sabe,	<i>He knows</i>
Plur.	{	Sabemos,	<i>We know</i>
		Sabéis	<i>Ye know</i>
		Sáben,	<i>They know</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Sabía,	<i>I did know</i>
		Sabías,	<i>You did know</i>
		Sabía,	<i>He did know</i>
Plur.	{	Sabíamos,	<i>We did know</i>
		Sabíades	<i>Ye did know</i>
		Sabían,	<i>They did know</i>

### First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Súpe,	<i>I knew</i>
		Supíste,	<i>You knew</i>
		Súpo,	<i>He knew</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Supímos,	<i>We knew</i>
		Supísteis	<i>Ye knew</i>
		Supiéron,	<i>They knew</i>

### Second and third Preterperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, <i>or</i> húve sabído	<i>I have known</i>
		Has sabído,	<i>You have known</i>
		Ha sabído,	<i>He has known</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hémos sabído,	<i>We have known</i>
		Havéis sabído,	<i>Ye have known</i>
		Han sabído,	<i>They have known</i>

### Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havía	} Sabído,	{	<i>I had known</i>
		Havías			<i>You had known</i>
		Havía			<i>He had known</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havíamos			<i>We had known</i>
		Haviádeis			<i>Ye had known</i>
		Havían			<i>They had known</i>

### First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Sabré,	<i>I shall, or will know</i>
		Sabrás,	<i>You shall, or will know</i>
		Sabrá,	<i>He shall, or will know</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Sabrémos,	<i>We shall, or will know</i>
		Sabréis,	<i>Ye shall, or will know</i>
		Sabrán,	<i>They shall, or will know</i>

### Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, <i>or</i> Téngo de saber,	<i>I am to know</i>
		Has de saber,	<i>You are to know</i>
		Ha de saber,	<i>He is to know</i>

Plur.	{	Hémos de fabér	<i>We are to know</i>
		Havéis de fabér	<i>Ye are to know</i>
		Han de fabér	<i>They are to know</i>

### Third Future.

Havré de fabér	<i>I shall be oblig'd to know</i>
----------------	-----------------------------------

### Fourth Future.

Havía de fabér	<i>I was to know</i>
----------------	----------------------

### Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Sábe tu	<i>Know you</i>
		Sépa el	<i>Let him know</i>
Plur.	{	Sepámos nosótro	<i>Let us know</i>
		Sabéd vosótro	<i>Know ye</i>
		Sépan éll	<i>Let them know</i>

### *Subjunctive and Optative Mood.*

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*  
*When, Though, Would to God,*

### Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Sépa	}	<i>God grant that I may know.</i>
		Sépas		
		Sépa		
Plur.	{	Sepámos		
		Sépáis		
		Sépan		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Supiéra, supiéſſe, fabría	}	<i>When, or God grant I did know, &amp;c.</i>
		Supiéras, supiéſſes, fabrías		
Supiéra, supiéſſe, fabría				
Plur.		Supiéramos, supiéſſemos, fabríamos		
		Supiéradeis, supiéſſedeis, fabríadeis		
		Supiéran, supiéſſen, fabrían		

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Haya sabído	}	<i>When, or God grant I have known, &amp;c.</i>	
		Hayas sabído			
		Haya sabído			
Plur.		Hayámos sabído			
		Hayáis sabído			
		Hayan sabído			

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Sabído,	{	When, or	
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				would to	
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe				God I had	
Plur.		Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos				known, &c.	
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis					
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen					

First Future.

Sing.	{	Supiére	}	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall know, &amp;c.</i>	
		Supiéres			
		Supiére			
Plur.		Supiéremos			
		Supiéredeis			
		Supiéren			

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Sabído	{	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall have known, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres,				
		Huviére				
Plur.	{	Huviéremos	}			
		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				

Infinitive



Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Sabér *To know*

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér sabído *To have known*

Future Tense.

Havér, *or* esperar de sabér *To know hereafter*

Gerund.

Sabiéndo *Knowing*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que sábe *Knowing*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice,

Sabído *Known*

*The Irregular Verb Tener, To have, or hold.*

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.	{	Téngo Tiénes Tiéne	<i>I have, or hold You have, or hold He has, or holds</i>
-------	---	--------------------------	---

Plur. { Tenémos  
Tenéis  
Tienen

*We have, or hold*  
*Ye have, or hold*  
*They have, or hold*

## Preterimperfect.

Sing. { Tenía  
Tenías  
Tenía  
Plur. { Teníamos  
Teníadeis  
Tenían

*I did have, or hold,*  
*&c.*

## First Preterperfect.

Sing. { Túve  
Tuviste  
Tuvo  
Plur. { Tuvimos  
Tuvisteis  
Tuvieron

*I had, or held*  
*You had, or held*  
*He had, or held*  
*We had, or held*  
*Ye had, or held*  
*They had, or held*

## Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing. { He, or hube tenido  
Has tenido  
Ha tenido  
Plur. { Hemos tenido  
Havéis tenido  
Han tenido

*I have had*  
*You have had*  
*He has had*  
*We have had*  
*Ye have had*  
*They have had*

## Preterpluperfect.

Sing. { Había  
Habías  
Había  
Plur. { Habíamos  
Havíadeis  
Habían

Tenido { *I had had*  
*You had had*  
*He had had*  
*We had had*  
*Ye had had*  
*They had had*

## First Future.

Sing. { Tendré terné, or tenré  
Tendrás ternás, or terrás  
Tendrá terná, or tenra

*I shall, or will have*  
*You shall, or will have*  
*He shall, or will have*  
*Plur.*

Plur.	{	Tendremos ternémos, or tenrémos	<i>We shall, or will have</i>
		Tendréis ternéis, or tenréis	<i>Ye shall, or will have</i>
		Tendrán ternán, or tenrán	<i>They shall, or will have</i>

### Second Future.

Sing.	{	He de tener	<i>I am to have, or hold</i>
		Has de tener	<i>You are to have, or hold</i>
		Ha de tener	<i>He is to have, or hold</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos de tener	<i>We are to have, or hold</i>
		Havéis de tener	<i>Ye are to have, or hold</i>
		Han de tener	<i>They are to have, or hold</i>

### Third Future.

Havré de tener	<i>I shall be oblig'd to have or hold</i>
----------------	---

### Fourth Future.

Havía de tener	<i>I was to have</i>
----------------	----------------------

### Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Ten tu	<i>Do thou have, or hold thou</i>
		Ténga el	<i>Let him have, or hold</i>
Plur.	{	Tengámos nosótro	<i>Let us have, or hold</i>
		Tened vosótro	<i>Do ye have, or hold, or let ye hold</i>
		Téngan ellos	<i>Let them have, or hold</i>

### Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.

*When, God grant, Though.*

### Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Ténga	}	<i>When, or God grant I do have, or hold, &amp;c.</i>
		Téngas		
		Ténga		
Plur.	{	Tengámos		
		Tengáis		
		Téngan		

## Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Tuviéra, tuviéſſe, ternía, or tendría	} When, or would to God I did have or hold, &c.
		Tuviéras, tuviéſſes, ternías, or tendrías	
		Tuviéra, tuviéſſe, ternía, or tendría	
Plur.	{	Tuviéramos, tuviéſſemos, terníamos, or tendríamos	
		Tuviéradeis, tuviéſſedeis, terníamos, or tendríadeis	
		Tuviéran, tuviéſſen, ternían, or tendrían	

## Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Haya tenído	} When, or God grant I have had, or held, &c.
		Hayas tenído	
Plur.	{	Haya tenído	
		Hayámos tenído	
		Hayáis tenído	
		Hayan tenído	

## First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	} Tenído, {	} When, or would to God I had had, or held &c.
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes		
Plur.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe		
		Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos		
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis		
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen		

## First Future.

Sing.	{	Tuviére	} When, or God grant I ſhall have or hold, &c.
		Tuviéres	
		Tuviére	
Plur.	{	Tuviéremos	
		Tuviéredeis	
		Tuviéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviere, or havré Huviéres Huviere	} Tenído,	{ When, or God grant I shall have had or held, &c.
Plur.	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Tenér	To have or to hold.
-------	---------------------

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér tenído	To have had or held
--------------	---------------------

Future Tense.

Havér de tenér	To be to have or hold
----------------	-----------------------

Gerund.

Teniendo	Holding
----------	---------

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que tiéne	Holding
--------------	---------

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Tenído	Held
--------	------

Like this Verb simple are its Compounds in all points declined, thro' all Moods and Tenses, as

Mantenér, to maintain; Yo manténgo, I maintain, mantúve, I maintained.

Detenér, to detain or stay; Deténgo, I detain; detúve, I detained.

Retenér, *to retain or with-hold*; Reténgo, *I retain*; retúve, *I retained*  
 Softenér, *to sustain or uphold*; Softéngo, *I sustain*; softúve, *I sustained*

---

*The Irregular Verb Poder, To be able.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Puéo	<i>I can, or am able</i>
		Puedes	<i>You can, or are able</i>
		Puede	<i>He can, or is able</i>
Plur.	{	Podemos	<i>We can, or are able</i>
		Podéis	<i>Ye can, or are able</i>
		Pueden	<i>They can, or are able</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Podía	<i>I could, or was able</i>
		Podías	<i>You could, or was able</i>
		Podía	<i>He could, or was able</i>
Plur.	{	Podíamos	<i>We could, or were able</i>
		Podíadeis	<i>Ye could, or were able</i>
		Podían	<i>They could, or were able</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Púde	} <i>I could, or have been able, &amp;c.</i>
		Pudiste	
		Púdo	
Plur.	{	Pudimos	
		Pudisteis	
		Pudieron	

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	Hé, or huvé	}	Podido,	{	<i>I could, or have been able</i>
		Has				<i>You could, or have been able</i>
		Ha				<i>He could, or has been able</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos			{	<i>We could, or have been able</i>
		Havéis				<i>Ye could, or have been able</i>
		Han				<i>They could, or have been able</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Podído,	{	<i>I had been able, &amp;c.</i>	
		Havías					
		Havía					
Plur.	{	Havíamos			{		
		Havíadeis					
		Havían					

First Future.

Sing.	{	Podré	}	<i>I shall, or will be able,</i>
		Podrás		
		Podrá		
Plur.	{	Podrémos	}	<i>&amp;c.</i>
		Podréis		
		Podrán		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de poder	}	<i>I must, or will be</i>
		Has de poder		
		Ha de poder		
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos de poder	}	<i>able, &amp;c.</i>
		Havéis de poder		
		Han de poder		

Third Future.

Havré de poder *I shall be obliged to be able*

Fourth Future.

Havía de poder *I was to be able*  
Though

Though it seems improper for this Word to have a second, third, and fourth Futures of the Indicative Mood, or any Imperative Mood, and most Grammarians will allow it neither, yet they are frequently and properly used. As to the second Future, it is very usual, and when one says, he cannot do such a thing, to answer, *Has de poder*, You shall be able; by way of compelling slothful persons, or such as may improve by often trying to do that which they cannot do at present. The same is to be said of the Imperative, which is in the nature of the second future, being compulsive; as, if one say, *No podemos hacer esto*, We cannot do this; and another answers, *Pués podámos*, Then let us be able; that is, let us use our Endeavours, that we may perform that which we think we cannot do. Therefore we will proceed to the

### Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Puéde tu	<i>Do you be able</i>
		Puéda el	<i>Let him be able</i>
Plur.	{	Podámos nosotros	<i>Let us be able</i>
		Podéd vosotros	<i>Do ye be able</i>
		Puédan ellos	<i>Let them be able</i>

### *Subjunctive and Optative Mood, with the Signs,*

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*  
 { *When, Though, Would to God.*

### Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Puéda	} <i>When, or God grant I can, or be able, &amp;c.</i>
		Puédas	
		Puéda	
Plur.	{	Podámos	
		Podáis	
		Puédan	

Preter-



# Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Pudiera, pudiéſſe, podría	}	<i>When, or would to God I could or might be able, &amp;c.</i>
		Pudieras, pudiéſſes, podrías		
		Pudiera, pudiéſſe, podría		
Plur.	{	Pudiéramos, pudiéſſemos, podríamos		
		Pudiéradeis, pudiéſſedeis, podriadeis		
		Pudieran, pudiéſſen, podrían		

# Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya	}	Podido, {	<i>When, or would to God, &amp;c. I have been able, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas			
		Háya			
Plur.	{	Hayámos			
		Hayáis			
		Hyan			

# First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Podido, {	<i>When, or would to God I had been able, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes			
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe			
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos			
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis			
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen			

# First Future.

Sing.	{	Pudiere	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall, or may be able, &amp;c.</i>
		Pudieres		
		Pudiere		
Plur.	{	Pudiéremos		
		Pudiéredeis		
		Pudieren		

# Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviere, or havré	}	Podido, {	<i>When, or God grant I may, or shall have been able, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres			
		Huviere			
Plur.	{	Huviéremos			
		Huviéredeis			
		Huviéren			

## Infinitive Mood.

## Present Tense.

Podér

*To be able*

## Preterperfect Tense.

Haber podido

*To have been able*

## Gerund.

Padiendo,

*Being able, &c.**The Irregular Verb Querér, To will, or love.*

## Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo quiero	<i>I will, or love</i>
		Tu quieres	<i>You will, or love</i>
		El quiere	<i>He wills, or loves</i>
Plur.	{	Nosotros queremos	<i>We will, or love</i>
		Vosotros queréis	<i>Ye will, or love</i>
		Ellos quieren	<i>They will, or love</i>

## Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Quería,	<i>I did will, or love</i>
		Querías	<i>You did will, or love</i>
		Quería	<i>He did will, or love</i>
Plur.	{	Queríamos	<i>We did will, or love</i>
		Queríadeis	<i>Ye did will, or love</i>
		Querían	<i>They did will, or love.</i>

# First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Quise		I willed, or loved
		Quisiste		You willed, or loved
		Quiso		He willed, or loved
Plur.	{	Quisimos		We willed, or loved
		Quisisteis		Ye willed, or loved
		Quisieron		They willed, or loved

# Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or hube	}	Querido,	{	<i>I have willed, or loved, &amp;c.</i>				
		Has								
		Ha								
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havemos								
		Havéis								
		Han								

# Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	} Querido, {	<i>I had willed, or loved, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías		
		Havía		
Plur.	{	Haviámos		
		Haviádeis		
		Havían		

# First Future.

Sing.	{	Querré		} I will, or shall will, or love, &c.
		Querrás		
		Querrá		
Plur.	{	Querrémos		
		Querréis		
		Querrán		

# Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, <i>or</i> <i>téngo</i> de <i>querér</i>	}	<i>I am to, or must will,</i> <i>or love, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de <i>querér</i>		
		Ha de <i>querér</i>		
Plur.	{	Hémos, <i>or</i> <i>havémos</i> de <i>querér</i>	}	
		Havéis de <i>querér</i>		
		Han de <i>querér</i>		

Third

## Third Future.

Havré de querér

*I shall be obliged to love*

## Pourth Future.

Havía de querér

*I had, or I was to love*

## Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Quiére tu	<i>Do you will, or love</i>
		Quiéra el	<i>Let him will, or love</i>
Plur.	{	Querámos nosótro	<i>Let us will, or love</i>
		Queréd vosótro	<i>Do ye will, or love</i>
	{	Quiéran ellos	<i>Let them will, or love</i>

## Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,  
*When, Though, would to God,*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Quiéra	}	<i>When, or God grant I will or love, &amp;c.</i>
		Quiéras		
		Quiéra		
Plur.	{	Querámos		
		Queráis		
		Quiéran		

## Three Preterimperfect Tenses.

Sing.	{	Quisiera, quisiéste, querría	}	<i>When, or God grant I would or did love, &amp;c.</i>
		Quisieras, quisiestes, querrías		
		Quisiera, quisiéste, querría		
Plur.	{	Quisieramos, quisiésemos, querríamos		
		Quisieradeis, quisiéssedeis, querríadeis		
		Quisieran, quisiéssen, querrían		

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{ Háya Háyas Háya	} Querido,	{ When, or God grant I have will'd, or lov'd, &c.
Plur.	{ Hayámos Hayáis Háyan		

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéss Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéss	} Querido	{ When, or would to God I had will'd, or lov'd, &c.
Plur.	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huviéran, or huviéssen		

First Future.

Sing.	{ Quisiére Quisiéres Quisiére	} When, or God grant I shall will, or love, &c.
Plur.	{ Quisiéremos Quisiéredeis Quisiéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére	} Querido,	{ When, or God grant I shall be willing, or love, &c.
Plur.	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Querér

To wil', or love

Preter-

## Preterperfect.

Havér querido

*To have will'd, or lov'd*

## Gerund.

Queriendo

*Loving*

## Participle.

Querido

*Will'd, or lov'd, &c.*

This Verb may be declined through all Moods and Tenses with the word *Mas* added to it, which with it sometimes signifies *rather*, and sometimes *more*, as *Mas quiero callár que hablár mal*, I had rather be silent than speak ill; or *Mas quiero a Pédro que a Juán*, I love *Peter* more, or better than *John*.

*The Irregular Verb Ponér, To put, or place.*

## Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo pongo	}	<i>I put, or place, &amp;c.</i>
		Tu pones		
		El pone		
Plur.	{	Ponemos		
		Poneis		
		Ponen		

## Preterimperfect.

Sing. {  
 Ponía  
 Ponías  
 Ponía

*I did put**You did put**He did put**Plur.*

Plur.	{	Poníamos	<i>We did put</i>
		Poníadeis	<i>Ye did put</i>
		Ponían	<i>They did put</i>

### First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Púse	}	<i>I have put, &amp;c.</i>
		Pusiste		
		Púso		
Plur.	{	Pusimos		
		Pusisteis		
		Pusieron		

### Second Preterperfect.

Sing. He, or hube	Puésto,	<i>I have put, &amp;c.</i>
-------------------	---------	----------------------------

### Preterpluperfect.

Sing. Havía	Puésto,	<i>I had put, &amp;c.</i>
-------------	---------	---------------------------

### First Future.

Sing. Pondré, or poné	<i>I shall, or will put, &amp;c.</i>
-----------------------	--------------------------------------

### Second Future.

Sing. He, or Téngo de poner	<i>I am to, or must put, &amp;c.</i>
-----------------------------	--------------------------------------

### Third Future.

Havré de poner	<i>I shall be oblig'd to put</i>
Havía de poner	<i>I had, or I was to put</i>

### Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Pon tu	<i>Do you put, or put thou</i>
		Ponga el	<i>Let him put</i>
Plur.	{	Pongámos nosótro	<i>Let us put</i>
		Ponéd vosótro	<i>Do ye put, or let ye put</i>
		Pongan ellos	<i>Let them put</i>

## Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*  
*When, Though, Would to God.*

## Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Póngas	}	<i>When, or God grant I do put, &amp;c.</i>
		Póngas		
		Póngas		
		Pongámos		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Pongáis		
		Pongan		

## Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Pusiera, pusiese, or pornia, pondria	}	<i>When, or would to God I did put, &amp;c.</i>
		Pusieras, pusieses, or pornias, pondrias		
		Pusiera, pusiese, or pornia, pondria		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Pusieramos, pusiesemos, or porniamos, pondriamos		
		Pusieradeis, pusiesedeis, or porniadeis, pondriadeis		
		Pusieran, pusiesen, or pornian, pondrian		

## Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Haya	}	<i>Puesto, { When, or God grant I have put, &amp;c.</i>
		Hayas		
		Haya		
		Hayamos		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayais		
		Hayan		



First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Puelto,	{	When, or			
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				would to God			
Plur.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe				}			I had put,
		Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos							&c.
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis							
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen							

First Future.

Sing.	{	Puſiére	}	} When, or God grant I ſhall put;	
		Puſiéres			
Plur.	{	Puſiére	}		} &c.
		Puſiéremos			
		Puſiéredeis			
		Puſiéren			

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Puelto,	{	When, or God grant I ſhall have put, &c.
		Huviéres				
Plur.	{	Huviére				
		Huviéremos				
		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Preſent Tenſe.

Poner, *To put*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Havér puelto; *To have put*

Gerund.

Poniéndo, *Putting*

## Participle Passive.

Puesto

Put, &amp;c.

After this manner are declined in all respects, *Componér*, to compose, *yo compóngo*, I compose, *compúse*, I have composed; *Disponér*, to dispose, *dispóngo*, I dispose, *dispúse*, I have disposed; *Antepónér*, to set before, *antepóngo*, I set before, *antepúse*, I have set before; *Propónér*, to propose, *propóngo*, I propose, *propúse*, I proposed; and, if there be any other Verbs derived by Composition from *Ponér*.

*The Irregular Verb Hacer, To do, or make.*

## Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo hágo	}	<i>I do or make</i>
		Tu háces		<i>You do or make</i>
		El háce		<i>He does or makes</i>
Plur.	{	Hacémos	}	<i>We do or make.</i>
		Hacéis		<i>You do or make</i>
		Hácen		<i>They do or make</i>

## Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Hacía	}	<i>I did or made, &amp;c.</i>
		Hacías		
		Hacía		
Plur.	{	Hacíamos		
		Hacíadeis, or hacíais		
		Hacían		

## First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Híce	}	<i>I have made, &amp;c.</i>
		Hiciste		
		Hízo		

I

Plur.

Plur.	{	Hicimos	}	<i>We have made, &amp;c.</i>
		Hicisteis		
		Hicieron		

## Second Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or hube	}	Hécho,	{	<i>I have done, or made, &amp;c.</i>
		Has				
		Ha				
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos	}			
		Havéis				
		Han				

## Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Hécho,	{	<i>I had done or made, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Havíamos	}			
		Havíades				
		Havían				

## First Future.

Sing.	{	Haré	}	<i>I shall, or will do, or make, &amp;c.</i>
		Harás		
		Hará		
Plur.	{	Harémos	}	
		Haréis		
		Harán		

## Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de hacer	}	<i>I am to, or must do, or make, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de hacer		
		Ha de hacer		
Plur.	{	Hémos de hacer	}	
		Havéys de hacer		
		Han de hacer		

## Third Future.

Havré de hacer, *I shall be oblig'd to do*

Fourth Future.

Havía de hacer

*I had, or I was to do*

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Ház, <i>or</i> háce tu	<i>Do or make thou, or do thou</i>
		Hága el	<i>Let him do or make</i>
Plur.	{	Hagámos nosotros	<i>Let us do or make</i>
		Haced vosotros	<i>Do ye or make ye, let ye do</i>
		Hagan ellos	<i>Let them do or make</i>

Subjunctive *and* Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.

*When, Though, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Hága	}	<i>When, or God grant I do or make, &amp;c.</i>
		Hágas		
		Hága		
Plur.	{	Hagámos		
		Hegáis		
		Hagan		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Hiciéra, hiciéste, haría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did do or make, &amp;c.</i>
		Hiciéras, hiciéste, harías		
		Hiciéra, hiciéste, haría		
Plur.	{	Hiciéramos, hiciésemos, haríamos		
		Hiciéradeis, hiciéssedeis, haríadeis		
		Hiciéran, hiciéssen, harían		

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya hécho	}	<i>When, or God grant I have made, or done, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas hécho		
		Háya hécho		
Plur.	{	Hayámos hecho		
		Hayáis hécho		
		Hayán hécho		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviése	}	Hécho,	{	When, or
		Huviéras, or huviésses				would to
Huviéra, or huviése		God I had				
Huv éramos, or huviéssémos		done or				
Plur.		Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis				made, &c.
		Huviéran, or huviéssén				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Hicière	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will do or make, &amp;c.</i>
		Hiciéres		
Hicière				
Plur.		Hiciéremos		
		Hiciéredeis		
		Hiciéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huvière, or havré	}	Hécho,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall have done or made, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres				
		Huvière				
Plur.	{	Huviéremos	}	Hécho,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall have done or made, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéredcis				
		Huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Hacer,

*To do or make.*

## Preterperfect Tense.

Havér hécho

*To have done or made*

## Future Tense.

Havér, or esperar de hacér

*To make or do hereafter*

## Gerund.

Haciendo

*Doing or making*

## Participle Active of the Preter Tense.

Hécho

*Made or done, &c.*

In the same manner are declined all the Verbs proceeding by composition from *Hacér*, as *Desahacér*, to undo, *Rehacér*, to make again, *Contrahacér*, to counterfeit.

*The Irregular Verb, Cabér, To be contained.*

## Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

Sing. { Yo quépo  
           { Tú cábes  
           { El cábe  
 Plur. { Cabémos  
           { Cabéis  
           { Cáben

*I am contained*  
*You are contained*  
*He is contained*  
*We are contained*  
*Ye are contained*  
*They are contained*

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Cabía	<i>I was contained</i>
		Cabías	<i>You was contained</i>
		Cabía	<i>He was contained</i>
Plur.	{	Cabíamos	<i>We were contained</i>
		Cabíadeis	<i>Ye were contained</i>
		Cabían	<i>They were contained</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Cúpe	<i>I have been contained</i>
		Cupíste	<i>You have been contained</i>
		Cúpo	<i>He has been contained</i>
Plur.	{	Cupímos	<i>We have been contained</i>
		Cupísteis	<i>Ye have been contained</i>
		Cupiéron	<i>They have been contained</i>

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or hube cabído	<i>I have been contained</i>
		Has cabído	<i>You have been contained</i>
		Ha cabído	<i>He has been contained</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos cabído	<i>We have been contained</i>
		Havéis cabído	<i>Ye have been contained</i>
		Han cabído	<i>They have been contained</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	} Cabído,	{	<i>I had been contained</i>
		Havías			<i>You had been contained</i>
		Havía			<i>He had been contained</i>
Plur.	{	Haviámos			<i>We had been contained</i>
		Havíadeis			<i>Ye had been contained</i>
		Havían			<i>They had been contained</i>

First Future.

Plur.	{	Cabré	<i>I shall or will be contained</i>
		Cabrás	<i>You shall or will be contained</i>
		Cabrá	<i>He shall or will be contained</i>
Sing.	{	Cabrémos	<i>We shall or will be contained</i>
		Cabréis	<i>Ye shall or will be contained</i>
		Cabràn	<i>They shall or will be contained</i>

Second

## Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or <i>téngo</i> de cabér Has de cabér Ha de cabér	} <i>I am to, or must be contained, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hémos de cabér Havéis de cabér Han de cabér	

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

## Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Cábe tu Quépa el	<i>Be you contained Let him be contained</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Quépámos nosótro Cabéd vosótro Quépan ellos	<i>Let us be contained Be ye contained Let them be contained</i>

## Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.*  
*When, God grant, Though.*

## Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Quépa Quépas Quépa	} <i>When, or God grant I am contained, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Quépámos Quépáis Quépan	

Preter-



# Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Cupiéra, cupiéſſe, cabría	}	<i>When, or would to God I was contained, &amp;c.</i>
		Cupiéras, cupiéſſes, cabrían		
Plur.	{	Cupiéra, cupiéſſe, cabría		
		Cupiérámos, cupiéſſemos, cabríamos		
Plur.	{	Cupiéradeis, cupiéſſedeis, cabriádeis		
		Cupiéran, cupiéſſen, cabrían		

# Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya cabído	}	<i>When, or God grant I have been contained, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas cabído		
Plur.	{	Háya cabído		
		Háyamos cabído		
Plur.	{	Háyais cabído		
		Háyan cabído		

# First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	<i>When, or would to God I had been contained, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes		
Plur.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe		
		Huviérámos, or huviéſſemos		
Plur.	{	Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis		
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen		

# First Future.

Sing.	{	Cupiére	}	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall, or will be contained, &amp;c.</i>
		Cupiéres		
Plur.	{	Cupiére		
		Cupiéreſmos		
Plur.	{	Cupiéredeis		
		Cupiéren		

# Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	<i>When, or God grant I may or ſhall be contained hereafter, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres,		
Plur.	{	Huviére		
		Huviéreſmos		
Plur.	{	Huviéredeis		
		Huviéren		

## Infinitive Mood.

## Present.

Cabér

*To be contained.*

## Preterperfect.

Havér cabído

*To have been contained.*

## Gerund.

Cabiéndo

*Being contained.*

## Participle.

Cabído

*Contained.**The Irregular Verb, Vér, To see.*

## Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo véo	<i>I see</i>
		Tu ves	<i>You see</i>
		El ve	<i>He sees</i>
Plur.	{	Vémos	<i>We see</i>
		Véis	<i>Ye see</i>
		Vén	<i>They see</i>

## Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Vía, or veía	<i>I did see</i>
		Vías	<i>You did see</i>
		Vía	<i>He did see</i>
Plur.	{	Víamos	<i>We did see</i>
		Viádeis	<i>Ye did see</i>
		Vían	<i>They did see</i>

# First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Ví, or vide	<i>I saw</i>
		Viste	<i>You saw</i>
		Vio	<i>He saw</i>
Plur.	{	Vimos	<i>We saw</i>
		Visteis	<i>Ye saw</i>
		Viéron	<i>They saw</i>

## Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or hube visto	<i>I have seen</i>
		Has visto	<i>You have seen</i>
		Ha visto	<i>He has seen</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos visto	<i>We have seen</i>
		Havéis visto	<i>Ye have seen</i>
		Han visto	<i>They have seen</i>

## Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	} Visto,	{	<i>I had seen</i>
		Havías			<i>You had seen</i>
		Havía			<i>He had seen</i>
Plur.	{	Havíamos			<i>We had seen</i>
		Havíadeis			<i>Ye had seen</i>
		Havían			<i>They had seen</i>

## First Future.

Sing.	{	Veré	<i>I shall or will see</i>
		Verás	<i>You shall or will see</i>
		Verá	<i>He shall or will see</i>
Plur.	{	Verémos	<i>We shall or will see</i>
		Veréis	<i>Ye shall or will see</i>
		Verán	<i>Thy shall or will see</i>

## Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de vér	<i>I am to or must see</i>
		Has de vér	<i>You are to or must see</i>
		Ha de vér	<i>He is to or must see</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos de vér	<i>We are to or must see</i>
		Havéis de vér	<i>Ye are to or must see</i>
		Han de vér	<i>They are to or must see</i>

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative

## Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Vée, or vé tu	Do thou see, or see thou
		Véa el	Let him see
Plur.	{	Veámos nosótro	Let us see
		Ved vosótro	Do ye see, or let ye see
		Véan éll	Let them see

The Subjunctive, the Optative, and the Infinitive Moods, altogether as in the other Verbs before, as the Present Tense of the two first Moods *Véa*, the Preterimperfect, *Viéra*, *vería*, *viéſſe*; the Preterperfect, *Haya víſto*, the Preterpluperfect, *Huviera*, or *huviéſſe víſto*; the Future, *Viére*. The Infinitive, *Vér*, Participle, *Víſto*.

*The Irregular Verb Caér, To fall.*

## Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Cáigo	I fall
		Cáes	Thou falleſt
		Cáe	He falls
Plur.	{	Caémos	We fall
		Caéis	Ye fall
		Cáen	They fall

## Preterimperfect.

Caía, caías, &c.

## First Preterperfect.

Caí, caíſte, &c.

## Second Preterperfect.

He caído, Has caído, &c.

And so of the other Tenses, like the regular Verbs.

## Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Cae	<i>Do you fall, or fall thou</i>
		Cáiga	<i>Let him fall</i>
Plur.	{	Caigamos	<i>Let us fall</i>
		Caéd	<i>Do ye fall, or let ye fall</i>
		Caigan	<i>Let them fall</i>

## Infinitive Mood.

### Present Tense.

Caér

*To fall*

### Gerund.

Cayéndo

*Falling*

The Verb *Entendér*, to understand, in the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood makes *Entiénd*o ; Preterperfect, *Entendí*.

## *Of the Verbs in Cér.*

THE following Verbs ending in *cer*, are generally spelt without an *s*, though it were more proper to write them with it before the *c*, which would render them all regular, and more answerable to the *Latin*, from which many of them are derived ; but since we generally find them otherwise, it is proper to note them down here.

*Infinitive.*

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Indicative.</i>	<i>Present Tense. Preterperfect.</i>
Adolecér, <i>to grow sick</i>	Adoléscó	Adolecí
Agradecér, <i>to thank</i>	Agradéscó	Agradecí
Amortecér, <i>to dye away</i>	Amortéscó	Amortecí
Desfallecér, <i>to faint</i>	Desfalléscó	Desfallecí
Apetecér, <i>to desire</i>	Apetéscó	Apetecí
Crecér, <i>to grow</i>	Créscó	Crecí
Encallecér, <i>to wax hard as a Corn</i>	Encalléscó	Encallecí
Encarecér, <i>to magnify</i>	Encaréscó	Encarecí
Establecér, <i>to establish</i>	Establéscó	Establecí
Fenecér, <i>to finish</i>	Fenéscó	Fenecí
Pacér, <i>to feed</i>	Páscó	Pací
Perecér, <i>to perish</i>	Peréscó	Perecí
Compadecér, <i>to have Compassion</i>	Compadéscó	Compadecí
Conocér, <i>to know</i>	Conóscó	Conocí
Padecér, <i>to suffer</i>	Padéscó	Padecí
Ofrecér, <i>to offer</i>	Ofréscó	Ofreceí
Guarnecér, <i>to garnish</i>	Guarnéscó	Guarnecí
Parecér, <i>to appear</i>	Paréscó	Parecí
Nacér, <i>to be born</i>	Náscó	Nací
Enflaquecér, <i>to grow lean</i>	Enflaquecéscó	Enflaqueceí
Enriquecér, <i>to enrich</i>	Enriquecéscó	Enriqueceí
Empobrecér, <i>to grow poor</i>	Empobrececéscó	Empobrececeí
Endurecér, <i>to grow hard</i>	Endurecéscó	Endureceí
Fallecér, <i>to fail or dye</i>	Falléscó	Falleceí
Engrandecér, <i>to magnify</i>	Engrandéscó	Engrandecí
Entristecér, <i>to grow melancholy</i>	Entristéscó	Entristecí
Ennoblecér, <i>to ennoble</i>	Ennobléscó	Ennobleceí
Floreceér, <i>to flourish</i>	Floréscó	Floreceí
Fortaleceér, <i>to strengthen</i>	Fortaléscó	Fortaleceí
Favoreceér, <i>to favour</i>	Favorecéscó	Favorececeí
Obedecér, <i>to obey</i>	Obedéscó	Obedecí
Desvanecér, <i>to make vain</i>	Desvanéscó	Desvanecí
Ensoberbecér, <i>to grow proud</i>	Ensoberbecéscó	Ensoberbecceí
Emmudecér, <i>to grow dumb</i>	Emmudéscó	Emmudeceí
Establecér, <i>to establish</i>	Establéscó	Estableceí
Merecér, <i>to merit.</i>	Meréscó	Mereceí

Except from this general Rule, *Vencér*, to overcome, *Vénzo*, *Vencí*; which shows what was said above, that they might more properly all be writ with an *s* in the infinitive Mood, and present Tense of the indicative Mood, as *Pascér*, from the Latin *Páscere*; *conoscér*, from the Latin *cognóscere*, and

and so of others ; but custom has prevailed to write them as above, and there is no contending against it ; but *Vencér*, cannot admit of the *f*, being derived from the *Latin vincere*, and therefore keeps on without an *f* in all Moods and Tenses,

---

*Of the Verbs in gér.*

THE following Verbs which have their Infinitive in *gér*, make the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, by changing *g* into *j* ; the same in the third Singular, and the first and third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and through all persons, and both numbers of the Present Tense of the Optative, and the Subjunctive Moods : That is when in the *ultima*, or last syllable there is an *a* or *o*.

	<i>Indicative.</i>	
<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Present Tense.</i>	<i>Preterperfect.</i>

Encogér, <i>to shrink,</i>	Encójo,	Encogí.
Recogér, <i>to gather,</i>	Recójo,	Recogí.
Acogér, <i>to entertain,</i>	Acójo,	Acogí.
Escogér, <i>to choose,</i>	Escójo,	Escogí.
Cogér, <i>to catch,</i>	Cójo,	Cogí.

In other Moods and Tenses, like the Regulars, except the Tenses before mentioned.

---

*Of the Verbs in ér.*

THE following Verbs in *ér* make the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood by adding *i* in the last syllable but one of the Infinitive, and

M

the

the same in the second and third Persons Singular, and the third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and the Subjunctive Moods.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Indicative, Present Tense. Preterperfect.</i>
Defendér, <i>to defend,</i>	Defiéndo,      Defendí.
Hendér, <i>to cleave asunder,</i>	Hiéndo,      Hendí.
Cernér, <i>to sift,</i>	Ciérno,      Cerní.
Entendér, <i>to understand,</i>	Entiéndo,      Entendí.
Héder, <i>to stink,</i>	Hiédo,      Hedí.

The next underneath form the Present Tense of the Indicative, by turning *o* in the last Syllable but one of the Infinitive into *ue*; and the same in the second and third Person Singular, and the third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Indicative, Present. Preterperfect.</i>
Volvér, <i>to turn,</i>	Vuélvo,      Volví.
Solér, <i>to be wont,</i>	Suélo,      Solí.
Cozér, <i>to boil,</i>	Cuézo,      Cozí.
Dolér, <i>to grieve,</i>	Duélo,      Dolí.
Olér, <i>to smell,</i>	Huélo,      Olí.

The same in all Verbs deriv'd from any of them; as *Revolvér*, to stir about; *Condolér*, to suffer with, &c.

The next are vary'd as follows.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Indicative. Present Tense. Preterperfect.</i>
Caér, <i>to fall.</i>	Cáigo,      Caí.
Roér, <i>to gnaw,</i>	Roigo,      Roí.
Valér, <i>to be averted,</i>	Válgo,      Valí.



*Of Verbs Passive of the Second Conjugation:*

THEY are formed and conjugated in the same manner as those of the first Conjugation ; as *ver*, to see is made passive, thus :

Present. Indicative.		Imperfect.	Perfect.	
Sing.	Sói visto	I am seen, &c.	éa visto	Fui, or he sido visto, &c.
	éres visto		éras visto	
	es visto		éa visto	
Plur.	Somos vístos	I am seen, &c.	éramos vístos	And so the rest of the Tenses.
	Sóis vístos		éradeis vístos	
	Son vístos		éran vístos	

*Of Verbs Reciprocal.*

These Verbs, and all terminated in *erse*, are likewise conjugated as those of the first Conjugation ; as

*Perderse*, To lose one's self, to be lost.

Present.		Indicative.		Perfect.	
		Imperfect.			
Si.	Me pierdo	I lose myself, &c.	Me perdía	I was losing myself	I lost myself, &c.
	Te pierdes		Te perdías		
	Se pierde		Se perdía		
Pl.	Nos perdémos	I lose myself, &c.	Nos perdíamos	I was losing myself	I lost myself, &c.
	Os perdéis		Os perdiádeis		
	Se pierden		Se perdían		

and so of the other Tenses.

The Imperative thus :

Sing.	Pierdete	} Lose yourself,
	Pierdese	
Plur.	Perdámosenos	
	Perdedos	
	Pierdanse	

*Note,* That the Persons are often doubled in the Conjugation of those Verbs; as, *Tu me pierdo, tu te pierdes, el se pierde, &c.* or thus, *Píerdome, Pierdeste, Perdíese, &c.* by putting the Pronoun after the Verb.

### *Of Verbs Impersonals.*

The Impersonals of this Conjugation are,

Havér,                                      *To be, as in what concerns a Place, &c.*

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Hái, or no háy                                      *There is, or there is not.*

Imperfect.

Havía,                                      *There was.*

First Preterperfect.

Hévo,                                      *There was, or there has been.*

Second Perfect.

Ha havido,                                      *There has been.*

Plusperfect.

Havía havido,                                      *There had been.*

Future.

Havrá,                                      *There will, or shall be.*

Second

Second Future.

Há de haver, *There must be.*

and so of the other Futures.

Imperative.

Háya, *Let there be.*

Optative. Present.

Oxalá que háya, *God grant that there be.*

Imperfect.

Que huviéra, &c. *That there might be.*

Perfect.

Que háya havido, *That there hath been.*

Plusperfect.

Que huviéra havido, *That there had been.*

Future.

Que huviére, *That there shall be, &c.*

The *Spanish* is perfect *Latin* in the Expressions of the impersonal Verbs, which manner cannot be found in the *English*, *French*, and other Languages ; the *English* being obliged to add *there*, or *it*, and the *French* *il*, &c. and this in all the Impersonals throughout all the Conjugations.

Examples.

Hai un hombre que me espéra abáxo para ir à la Comédia, *There is a Man that stays for me below to go to the Play-house.*

Havía cien foldádos enla Emboscáda, *There were one hundred Soldiers in the Ambush.*

No havía mas que treínta y dos, *There were no more than thirty-two.*  
Que háya ò no háya póco importa, *that there be, or not, is but of little Importance, &c.*

Ser, *To be, as in what concerns the Essence, or Qualities of a Thing, &c.*

### Indicative.

*Pres.* Es, no es

*It is, it is not.*

*Imperf.* éra,

*It was.*

*Perf.* Fué,

*It hath been.*

and so in the other Tenses.

### Examples.

Es nóche. *or* es de nóche,

*It is Night.*

Es verdad,

*It is true.*

Era así,

*It was so.*

Que sea ò no sea, que se me da, *That it be, or not be, what is it to me.*

In the same manner is conjugated the Verb *Ser* *Menester*, to be necessary, or requisite, as

Es Menester, que yo váya à vér la Ciudad the *Londres*, pues es un Mundo pequeño, engue florécen todas las Artes y Ciéncias que están divididas por las quátro partes de el Mundo, *It is necessary that I go to see the City of London, because it is a little World, in which all the Arts and Sciences that are divided in the four Parts of the World do flourish.*

Será Menester, que Pedro y Juan se avéngan, *It will be necessary or requisite, that Peter and John agree together.*

Si fuera Menester, yo viniéra, *I would come if it should be requisite or necessary, &c.*

*The Verb Impersonal Placer, To please.*

Indicative Mood.

<i>Pres.</i> Pláce,	<i>It pleases.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i> Placía,	<i>It did please.</i>
<i>First Perf.</i> Plúgo,	<i>It pleased.</i>
<i>Second Perf.</i> Ha Placido,	<i>It has pleased.</i>

and so in the other Tenses.

*Imperative.*

Pléga,	<i>Let it please, &amp;c.</i>
--------	-------------------------------

*Llover, To Rain.*

Lluéve,	<i>It rains.</i>
Llovía,	<i>It did rain, &amp;c.</i>

*Heder, To Stink.*

Hiéde,	<i>It stinks.</i>
Hedía,	<i>It did stink, &amp;c.</i>

*Olér, To smell.*

This Verbs changes *o* into *bue* in the Present Tenses, as

Huéle,	<i>It smells.</i>
Huéla,	<i>Let it smell.</i>
Que huéla,	<i>That it may smell, &amp;c.</i>

*Acontecér, acaecér, To happen.*

Acontéce,	<i>It happens, &amp;c.</i>
-----------	----------------------------

*Pertenecér, To belong.*

Pertenéce,	<i>It belongs, &amp;c.</i>
------------	----------------------------

Enough of the Impersonal Actives, let us now put an Example of the Impersonal Passive.

*Leerse*, To be read.

Se Lee,	<i>It is reading.</i>
Se Leía,	<i>It was reading.</i>
Se Leyó,	<i>It has been read, &amp;c.</i>

And so are conjugated *establecerse*, to be established or ordered by Parliament, &c.

Se establece,	<i>It is established.</i>
Se establecía,	<i>It was establishing.</i>
Se estableció	<i>It has been established, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Imperative</i> , Establecáse,	<i>Let it be established, &amp;c.</i>

*Saberse*, To be known.

Se sabe, <i>or</i> sábese,	<i>It is known.</i>
Se sabía, <i>or</i> sabíase,	<i>It was known.</i>
Se supo, <i>or</i> supose,	<i>It has been known, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Imperative</i> , Sépase,	<i>Let it be known, &amp;c.</i>

N. B. That all the Verbs regular or irregular of the Second Conjugation, may be conjugated in the same manner as those of the first Conjugation by the auxiliar Verb *estar*, and the Gerund of the Verb: as,

Present Tense. Indicative.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Léo, or estoi Leyendo} \\ \text{Lees, or estás Leyendo} \\ \text{Lee, or está Leyendo} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>I read, or I am reading, &amp;c.</i>
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Leemos, or estamos Leyendo} \\ \text{Leéis, or estáis Leyendo} \\ \text{Léen, or estan Leyendo} \end{array} \right\}$	

and so in the rest of the Moods and Tenses.

*Of Verbs Regular of the third Conjugation  
in ir, as*

Subir, *To go up or ascend.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Súbo	}	<i>I go up or ascend, &amp;c.</i>
		Súbes		
		Súbe		
Plur.	{	Subimos		
		Subís		
		Suben		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Subía	}	<i>I was going up, &amp;c.</i>
		Subías		
		Subía		
Plur.	{	Subíamos		
		Subíadeis, or subíais		
		Subían		

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Subí	}	<i>I went up or ascended, &amp;c.</i>
		Subíste		
		Subió		
Plur.	{	Subimos		
		Subísteis		
		Subieron		

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or hube	}	Subido, {	<i>I have gone up or ascended, &amp;c.</i>
		Has			
		Ha			
Plur.	{	Hemos			
		Havéis			
		Han			

Preter-

### Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havía Havías Havía	} Subído,	{ <i>I had gone up or ascend- ed, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Havíamos Haviádeis Havían		

### First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Subiré Subirás Subirá	} <i>I shall or will go up or af- cend, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Subiremos Subiréis Subirán	

### Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, <i>or</i> tengo de subir Has de subir Ha de subir	} <i>I am to or must go up or af- cend, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hémos de subir Havéis de subir Han de subir	

The Third and Fourth Future as in the other Verbs.

### Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Súbe tu Súba el	<i>Go you up or ascend Let him go up or ascend</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Subámos nosotros Subid vosotros Súban ellos	<i>Let us go up or ascend Do ye go up or ascend Let them go up or ascend</i>

Subjunctive



Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*  
*When, God grant, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Súba	} <i>When or God grant I do go up or ascend, &amp;c.</i>
		Súbas	
		Súba	
Plur.	{	Subámos	
		Subáis	
		Súban	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Subiera, subiéſſe, or subiría	} <i>When, or would to God I did go up or ascend, &amp;c.</i>
		Subieras, subiéſſes, or subirías	
		Subiera, subiéſſe, or subiría	
Plur.	{	Subiéramos, subiéſſemos, or subiríamos	
		Subieradeis, subiéſſedeis, or subiríadeis	
		Subieran, subiéſſen, or subirían	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya	} Subido, { <i>When, or God grant I have gone up or ascended, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas	
		Háya	
Plur.	{	Hayámos	
		Hayáis	
		Háyan	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	} Subido, { <i>When, or would to God I had gone up or ascended, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes	
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe	
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis	
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen	

### First Future.

Sing.	{	Subiére	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will go up or ascend, &amp;c.</i>
		Subiéres		
		Subiére		
Plur.	{	Subiéremos	}	
		Subiéredeis		
		Subiéren		

### Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, <i>or</i> havré	}	Subído,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall have gone up or ascended, &amp;c.</i>	
		Huviéres					
Huviére							
Plur.		Huviéremos					
		Huviéredeis					
		Huviéren					

### Infinitive Mood.

#### Present Tense.

Subír,      *To go up or ascend.*

#### Preterperfect.

Havér subido,      *To have gone up or ascended.*

#### Future Tense.

Havér *or* esperar de subír,      *To be to go up or ascend hereafter.*

#### Gerund.

Subiéndó,      *Going up or ascending.*

#### Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que fúbe,      *Going up or ascending.*

#### Participle Passive.

Subido,      *Gone up or ascended.*

In

In the same manner all other Regular Verbs of the third Conjugation in *ir*, are conjugated ; as *Sufrír*, to suffer, *Hinchír*, or *Hencbír*, to fill, &c.

These four Verbs, *Abrír*, to open, *Cubrír*, to cover, *Descubrír*, to uncover, and *Encubrír*, to conceal, are Regular, except only in the second Preterperfect Tense ; which, instead of *Abrído*, as other Verbs of this Sort, is *Abiérto*, *Cubiérto*, *Descubiérto*, and *Encubiérto*. Next follow

*The Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation,  
in ir, as*

*Venír, To come.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Véngo	<i>I come</i>
		Viénes	<i>You come</i>
		Viéne	<i>He comes</i>
Plur.	{	Venímos	<i>We come</i>
		Venís	<i>Ye come</i>
		Viénen	<i>They come</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Venía	} <i>I did come, &amp;c.</i>
		Venías	
		Venía	
Plur.	{	Veníamos	
		Veníadeis, or veníais	
		Venían	

### First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Vine	<i>I came</i>
		Veniste	<i>You came</i>
		Vino	<i>He came</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Venimos	<i>We came</i>
		Venisteis	<i>You came</i>
		Venieron	<i>They came</i>

### Second and Third Preterperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or huvé	}	Venido,	{	<i>I have come,</i>
		Has				<i>&amp;c.</i>
		Ha				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hémos	}			
		Havéis				
		Han				

### Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havía	}	Venido,	{	<i>I had come, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havíamos	}			
		Haviádeis				
		Havían				

### First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Vendré, <i>or</i> verné	}	<i>I shall, or will come, &amp;c.</i>
		Vendrás, <i>or</i> vernás		
		Vendrá, <i>or</i> verná		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Vendrémos, <i>or</i> vernémos	}	
		Vendréis, <i>or</i> verneis		
		Vendrán, <i>or</i> vernán		

### Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or téngo de venir	}	<i>I am to, or must come, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de venir		
		Ha de venir		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hémos de venir	}	
		Havéis de venir		
		Han de venir		

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative

# Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Ven tu	<i>Do you come, or come thou</i>
	{ Vénga el	<i>Let him come</i>
Plur.	{ Vengámos nosótro	<i>Let us come</i>
	{ Venid vosótro	<i>Do ye come, or let ye come</i>
	{ Vengan éll	<i>Let them come</i>

## Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.  
 { *When, God grant, Though.*

### Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Vénga	} <i>When, or God grant I do come, &amp;c.</i>
	{ Vengas	
Plur.	{ Vénga	
	{ Vengámos	
	{ Vengáis	
	{ Vengan	

### Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{ Viniéra, viniéſſe, vernía, or vendría	} <i>When, or would to God I did come, &amp;c.</i>
	{ Viniéras, viniéſſes, vernías, or vendrías	
	{ Viniéra, viniéſſe, vernía, or vendría	
Plur.	{ Viniéramos, viniéſſemos, verníamos, or vendríamos	
	{ Viniéradeis, viniéſſedeis, verníadeis, or vendríadeis	
	{ Viniéran, viniéſſen, vernían, or vendrían	

### Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Háya Háyas Háya	}	Venído,	{ <i>When, or God grant I have come, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hayámos Hayáis Háyan			

### First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviéra, <i>or</i> huviéſſe Huviéras, <i>or</i> huviéſſes Huviéra, <i>or</i> huviéſſe	}	Venído,	{ <i>When, or would to God I had come, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéramos, <i>or</i> huviéſſemos Huviéradeis, <i>or</i> huviéſſedeis Huvierán, <i>or</i> huviéſſen			

### First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Viniére Viniéres Viniére	}	{ <i>When, or God grant I ſhall, or will come, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Viniéremos Viniéredeis Viniéren		

### Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére, <i>or</i> havré Huviéres, Huviére	}	Venído	{ <i>When, or God grant I ſhall or have come, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huvierén			

### Infinitive Mood.

#### Preſent.

Venir,

*To come.*

Future.

Future.

Havér de venir, To be to come.

Gerund.

Viniendo, Coming.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que viene, He that comes.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Venido, Come.

The Compounds of this Verb *Venir*, are declined in every respect in all Moods and Tenses throughout as their original; as *Revenir*, to return, *Revengo*, *Revine*, &c. *Convenir*, to agree, *Convengo*, *Convine*, &c. *Devenir*, to become, *Devengo*, *Devine*, &c. *Sobrevenir*, to come upon suddenly, *Sobrevengo*, *Sobrevine*, &c.

The Irregular Verb, Decir, To say.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Digo	I say
	{	Dices	You say
	{	Dice	He says
Plur.	{	Decimos	We say
	{	Decís	Ye say
	{	Dicen	They say

N

Preter.

## Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Decía	<i>I did say</i>
		Decías	<i>You did say</i>
		Decía	<i>He did say</i>
Plur.	{	Decíamos	<i>We did say</i>
		Decíadeis, or decíais	<i>Ye did say</i>
		Decían	<i>They did say</i>

## First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Dixe	<i>I said</i>
		Dixiste	<i>You said</i>
		Dixo	<i>He said</i>
Plur.	{	Dixímos	<i>We said</i>
		Dixísteis	<i>Ye said</i>
		Dixéron	<i>They said</i>

## Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or hube dicho	<i>I have said</i>
		Has dicho	<i>You have said</i>
		Ha dicho	<i>He has said</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos dicho	<i>We have said</i>
		Havéis dicho	<i>Ye have said</i>
		Han dicho	<i>They have said</i>

## Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	Dicho,	{	<i>I had said</i>
		Havías			<i>You had said</i>
		Havía			<i>He had said</i>
Plur.	{	Havíamos			<i>We had said</i>
		Havíadeis			<i>Ye had said</i>
		Havían			<i>They had said</i>

## First Future.

Sing.	{	Diré	<i>I shall or will say</i>
		Dirás	<i>You shall or will say</i>
		Dirá	<i>He shall or will say</i>
Plur.	{	Dirémos	<i>We shall or will say</i>
		Diréis	<i>Ye shall or will say</i>
		Dirán	<i>They shall or will say</i>



Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, <i>or</i> tengo de decir	<i>I am to or must say</i>
		Has de decir	<i>You are to or must say</i>
		Ha de decir	<i>He is to or must say</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos de decir	<i>We are to or must say</i>
		Havéis de decir	<i>Ye are to or must say</i>
		Han de decir	<i>They are to or must say</i>

the rest as in other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Di tu, <i>or</i> dice tu	<i>Do thou say</i>
		Diga el	<i>Let him say</i>
Plur.	{	Digámos nosotros	<i>Let us say</i>
		Décid vosotros	<i>Do ye say</i>
	{	Digan ellos	<i>Let them say</i>

Subjunctive *and* Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.

*When, Though, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Diga	}	<i>When, or God grant I do say, &amp;c.</i>
		Digas		
		Diga		
Plur.	{	Digámos		
		Digáis		
		Digan		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Dixera, dixesse, diría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did say, &amp;c.</i>
		Dixeras, dixesses, dirías		
		Dixera, dixesse, diría		
Plur.	{	Dixéramos, dixésemos, diríamos		
		Dixérais, dixésedes, diríais		
		Dixéran, dixéssen, dirían		

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya dicho	}	<i>When, or God grant I have said, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas dicho		
		Háya dicho		
Plur.	{	Hayámos dicho		
		Hayáis dicho		
		Hayán dicho		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Dicho,	{	When, or
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				would to God
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe				I had ſaid,
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	}		{	&c.
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Dixére	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will say, &amp;c.</i>
		Dixéres		
		Dixére		
Plur.	{	Dixéremos	}	
		Dixéredeis		
		Dixéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Dicho,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall have said, &amp;c.</i>	
		Huviéres					
Huviére							
Plur.	{	Huviéremos					}
		Huviéredeis					
		Huviéren					

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Decir,

To say.

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér dicho,

*To have said.*

Future Tense.

Avér de decír,

*To be to say hereafter.*

Gerund.

Diciendo,

*Saying.*

Participle Active of the Present Tense.

El que dice,

*One saying.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Dicho,

*Said.*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or esperá de decír,

*He that is to say hereafter.*

The Compounds of this Verb *Decír*, in all Points, through all Moods and Tenses, are declined like the Simple, as,

Bendecír, *to bless,*

Maldecír, *to curse,*

Desdecír, *to unsay,*

Bendígo,

Maldígo,

Desdígo,

Bendíxe.

Maldíxe.

Desdíxe.

*The Irregular Verb, Ir, To go.*

## Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Vói	<i>I go</i>
		Vás	<i>You go</i>
		Va	<i>He goes</i>
Plur.	{	Vámos	<i>We go</i>
		Váis	<i>Ye go</i>
		Van	<i>They go.</i>

## Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Iba	<i>I did go</i>
		Ibas	<i>You did go</i>
		Iba	<i>He did go</i>
Plur.	{	Ibamos	<i>We did go</i>
		Ibais	<i>Ye did go</i>
		Iban	<i>They did go</i>

## First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Fuí	<i>I went</i>
		Fuíste	<i>You went</i>
		Fué	<i>He went</i>
Plur.	{	Fuímos	<i>We went</i>
		Fuísteis	<i>Ye went</i>
		Fuéron	<i>They went</i>

## Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or huye	}	'Ido,	{	<i>I have gone, &amp;c.</i>
		Has				
		Ha				
Plur.	{	Hémos	}		{	
		Havéis				
		Han				

Preter-

### Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	'Ido,	{	<i>I had gone, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Havíamos				
		Havíadeis				
		Havían				

### First Future.

Sing.	{	Iré	}	<i>I shall or will go, &amp;c.</i>
		Irás		
		Irá		
Plur.	{	Irémos		
		Iréis		
		Irán		

### Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de ir	}	<i>I must or am to go, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de ir		
		Ha de ir		
Plur.	{	Hémos de ir		
		Havéis de ir		
		Han de ir		

the Rest of the Futures as in the other Verbs.

### Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Ve tu	<i>Do you go</i>
		Váya el	<i>Let him go</i>
		Vámos nosotros	<i>Let us go</i>
Plur.	{	Id vosotros	<i>Do ye go</i>
		Váyan ellos	<i>Let them go</i>

Subjunctive *and* Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*  
*{ When, Though, Would to God.*

## Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Vaya Vayas Vaya	{ <i>When, or God grant I do go,</i> &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Vayamos Vayais Vayan	

## Preterimperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Fuera, fuéste, iría Fuéras, fuésses, irías Fuera, fuéste, iría	{ <i>When, or would to God I did go,</i> &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Fuéramos, fuéssemos, iríamos Fuéradeis, fuéssedeis, iriadeis Fuéran, fuéssen, irían	

## Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Háya Háyas Háya	{ <i>ido,</i>	{ <i>When, or God grant I have gone,</i> &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hayamos Hayáis Háyan		

## Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviéra, <i>or</i> huviéste Huviéras, <i>or</i> huviésses Huviéra, <i>or</i> huviéste	{ <i>ido,</i>	{ <i>When, or would to God I had gone,</i> &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéramos, <i>or</i> huviéssemos Huviéradeis, <i>or</i> huviéssedeis Huviéran, <i>or</i> huviéssen		

First Future.

Sing.	}	Fuere	}	When, or God grant I shall or will go, &c.
		Fueres		
		Fuere		
Plur.		Fuere		
		Fuere		
		Fuere		
		Fuere		
Plur.		Fuere		
		Fuere		
		Fuere		
		Fuere		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huvière, or havré	}	ído,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will have gone, &amp;c.</i>
		Huvières				
Huvière						
Plur.		Huviéremos				
		Huviéredeis				
		Huvién				

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Ir, *To go.*

Preterperfect.

Haver ido, *To have gone.*

Future Tense.

Havér de ir, *To be to go hereafter.*

Gerund.

Yéndo, *Going.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que va, *He that is going.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

ido, *Gone.*

*The*

*The Irregular Verb, Oír, To hear.*

## Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Oigo	<i>I hear</i>
		Oyes	<i>You hear</i>
		Oye	<i>He hears</i>
Plur.	{	Oímos	<i>We hear</i>
		Oís	<i>Ye hear</i>
		Oyen	<i>They hear</i>

## Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Oía	<i>I did hear</i>
		Oías	<i>You did hear</i>
		Oía	<i>He did hear</i>
Plur.	{	Oíamos	<i>We did hear</i>
		Oíais	<i>Ye did hear</i>
		Oían	<i>They did hear</i>

## First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Oí	<i>I heard</i>
		Oíste	<i>You heard</i>
		Oyó	<i>He heard</i>
Plur.	{	Oímos	<i>We heard</i>
		Oísteis	<i>Ye heard</i>
		Oyéron	<i>They heard</i>

## Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or hūve	}	Oído,	{	<i>I have heard, &amp;c.</i>			
		Has							
		Ha							
Plur.	{	Hémos	}						
		Havéis							
		Han							

Preter-



Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havía Havías Havía	}	Oído,	{ <i>I had heard, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Havíamos Haviádeis Havían			

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Oiré Oirás Oirá	}	{ <i>I shall, or will hear, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Oiramos Oiréis Oirán		

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or tengo de oír Has de oír Ha de oír	}	{ <i>I must, or am to hear, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hémos de oír Havéis de oír Han de oír		

the Third and Fourth as in other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ 'Oye tu 'Oiga aquél	<i>Do you hear Let him hear</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Oigamos nosotros Oíd vosotros 'Oigan aquellos	<i>Let us hear Do ye hear Let them hear</i>

Subjunctive

Subjunctive *and* Optative Moods *with the Signs.*

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.*  
 { *When, Though, Would to God.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	'Oiga 'Oigas Oiga	}	When, or God grant I do hear, &c.
Plur.	{	Oigamos Oigáis 'Oigan	}	

## Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Oyera, oyéste, or oiría Oyerás, oyéstes, or oirás Oyera, oyéste, or oiría	}	When, or would to God I did hear, &c.
Plur.	{	Oyéramos, oyésemos, or oiríamos Oyéradeis, oyéstedeis, or oirádeis Oyéran, oyéstien, or oirían	}	

## Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Haya Hayas Haya	}	Oído, { When, or God grant I have heard, &c.
Plur.	{	Hayamos Hayáis Hayan	}	

## Two Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviera, or huviéste Huvieras, or huviéstes Huviera, or huviéste	}	Oído, { When, or would to God I had heard, &c.
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviésemos Huvieradeis, or huviéstedeis Huvieran, or huviéstien	}	

First Future.

Sing.	{ Oyére Oyéres Oyére	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall, or will hear, &amp;c.</i>
Plur.	{ Oyéremos Oyéredeis Oyéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres, Huviére	}	Oído,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will have heard, &amp;c.</i>
Plur.	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Oír, *To hear.*

Preterperfect.

Havér oído, *To have heard.*

Future.

Havér de oír, *To be to hear hereafter*

Gerund.

Oyendo, *Hearing.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

Oyente, or el que óye, *He that is hearing.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Oído, *Heard.*

*The Irregular Verb, Herir, To hurt or wound.*

## Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Hiéro	<i>I wound</i>
		Hiéres	<i>You wound</i>
		Hiére	<i>He wounds</i>
Plur.	{	Herímos	<i>We wound</i>
		Herís	<i>Ye wound</i>
		Hiéren	<i>They wound</i>

All the other Tenses of the Indicative Mood are as in Verbs Regular ; as

## Preterimperfect.

Hería, Herías, &c.      *I did wound, &c.*

## First Preterperfect.

Herí, Heriste, &c.      *I wounded, &c.*

## Second Preterperfect.

He, has, &c. herído,      *I have wounded, &c.*

## Preterpluperfect.

Havía, havías, &c. herído,      *I had wounded, &c.*

## First Future.

Heriré, Herirás, &c.      *I will or shall wound, &c.*

## Second Future.

He or tengo, &c. de herir,      *I, &c. am to or must wound, &c.*

## Imperative

## Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Hiére tu	<i>Do you strike or wound</i>
		Hiéra el	<i>Let him strike or wound</i>
Plur.	{	Hirámos nosótro	<i>Let us strike or wound</i>
		Herid vosótro	<i>Do ye strike or wound</i>
		Hiéran éll	<i>Let them strike or wound</i>

## Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.  
*When, God grant, Though.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Hiéra	}	<i>When, or God grant I do wound, &amp;c.</i>
		Hiéras		
		Hiéra		
Plur.	{	Hirámos		
		Hiráis		
		Hiéran		

## Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Hiriéra, hiriése, or heriría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did wound, &amp;c.</i>
		Hiriéras, hiriéses, or herirías		
		Hiriéra, hiriése, or heriría		
Plur.	{	Hiriéramos, hiriésemos, or heriríamos		
		Hiriéradeis, hiriésedeis, or heriríadeis		
		Hiriéran, hiriésen, or herirían		

## Future.

Sing.	{	Hiriére	}	<i>When, or would to God I shall or will wound, &amp;c.</i>
		Hiriéres		
		Hiriére		
Plur.	{	Hiriéremos		
		Hiriéredeis		
		Hiriéren		

The other Tenses as in Regular Verbs. The Infinitive Mood the same. The Gerund *Hiriéndo*, Wounding.

*The Irregular Verbs, Dormir, to sleep, and  
Morir, to dye.*

*Dormir, To sleep.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Duérmo	<i>I sleep</i>
		Duérmes	<i>You sleep</i>
		Duérne	<i>He sleeps</i>
Plur.	{	Dormimos	<i>We sleep</i>
		Dormís	<i>Ye sleep</i>
		Duérmén	<i>They sleep</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Dormía	<i>I did sleep</i>
		Dormías	<i>You did sleep</i>
		Dormía	<i>He did sleep</i>
Plur.	{	Dormíamos	<i>We did sleep</i>
		Dormíadeis	<i>Ye did sleep</i>
		Dormían	<i>They did sleep</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Dormí	<i>I slept</i>
		Dormíste	<i>You slept</i>
		Durmíó	<i>He slept</i>
Plur.	{	Dormimos	<i>We slept</i>
		Dormísteis	<i>Ye slept</i>
		Durmieron	<i>They slept</i>

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or hube dormido	<i>I have slept</i>
		Has dormido	<i>You have slept</i>
		Ha dormido	<i>He has slept</i>
Plur.	{	Hemos dormido	<i>We have slept</i>
		Havéis dormido	<i>Ye have slept</i>
		Han dormido	<i>They have slept</i>

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía				
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Havíamos				
		Haviádeis				
		Havían				
			}	Dormido,	{	<i>I had slept, &amp;c.</i>

First Future.

Sing.	{	Dormiré				
		Dormirás				
		Dormirá				
Plur.	{	Dormiremos				
		Dormiréis				
		Dormirán				
			}		{	<i>I shall or will sleep, &amp;c.</i>

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de dormir				
		Has de dormir				
		Ha de dormir				
Plur.	{	Hémos de dormir				
		Havéis de dormir				
		Han de dormir				
			}		{	<i>I am to or must sleep, &amp;c.</i>

The other Futures as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Duérme tu		<i>Do you sleep</i>
		Duérna		<i>Let him sleep</i>
		Durmámos		<i>Let us sleep</i>
Plur.	{	Dormid		<i>Do ye sleep</i>
		Duértan		<i>Let them sleep</i>

Subjunctive *and* Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.  
*When, Though, Would to God.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Duérma	}	<i>When, or God grant I do sleep, &amp;c.</i>
		Duérmás		
		Duérma		
Plur.	{	Durmámos		
		Durmáis		
		Duérman		

## Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Durmiéra, durmiéſſe, <i>or</i> dormiría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did sleep, &amp;c.</i>
		Durmiéras, durmiéſſes, <i>or</i> dormirías		
		Durmiéra, durmiéſſe, <i>or</i> dormiría		
Plur.	{	Durmiéramos, durmiéſſemos, <i>or</i> dormiríamos		
		Durmiéradeis, durmiéſſedeis, <i>or</i> dormiríadeis		
		Durmiéran, durmiéſſen, <i>or</i> dormirían		

## Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya dormído	}	<i>When, or God grant I have slept, &amp;c.</i>	
		Háyas dormído			
		Háya dormído			
Plur.		Hayámos dormído			
		Hayáis dormído			
		Háyan dormído			

## Two Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, <i>or</i> huviéſſe	}	Dormído,	{	<i>When, or would to God I had ſlept, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, <i>or</i> huviéſſes				
		Huviéra, <i>or</i> huviéſſe				
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, <i>or</i> huviéſſemos	}			
		Huviéradeis, <i>or</i> huviéſſedeis				
		Huviéran, <i>or</i> huviéſſen				



First Future.

Sing.	{	Durmière	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will sleep, &amp;c.</i>
		Durmières		
		Durmière		
Plur.	{	Durmiéremos		
		Durmiéredeis		
		Durmiéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huvière, or havré	}	Dormido,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will have slept, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres				
		Huvière				
Plur.	{	Huviéremos	}		{	
		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dormir, *To sleep.*

Preterperfect.

Havér dormido, *To have slept.*

Future Tense.

Havér de dormir, *To be to sleep.*

Gerund.

Durmiendo, *Sleeping.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

Dormiente, or el que Duérme, *He that is sleeping.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Dormido, *Slept.*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or espéra de dormir, *About to sleep hereafter.*

Morír,

To dye.

## Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Muéro	<i>I dye</i>
		Muéres	<i>You dye</i>
		Muére	<i>He dyes</i>
Plur.	{	Morímos	<i>We dye</i>
		Morís	<i>Ye dye</i>
		Muéren	<i>They dye</i>

## Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Moría	<i>I did dye</i>
		Morías	<i>You did dye</i>
		Moría	<i>He did dye</i>
Plur.	{	Moríamos	<i>We did dye</i>
		Moriais	<i>Ye did dye</i>
		Morian	<i>They did dye</i>

## First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Morí	<i>I dy'd</i>
		Moríste	<i>You dy'd</i>
		Murió	<i>He dy'd</i>
Plur.	{	Morímos	<i>We dy'd</i>
		Morísteis	<i>Ye dy'd</i>
		Muriéron	<i>They dy'd</i>

## Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or húve muérto	<i>I have dy'd</i>
		Has muérto	<i>You have dy'd</i>
		Ha muérto	<i>He has dy'd</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos muérto	<i>We have dy'd</i>
		Havéis muérto	<i>Ye have dy'd</i>
		Han muérto	<i>They have dy'd</i>

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havía Havías Havía	}	Muérto,	{ <i>I had dy'd, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Havíamos Havíadeis Havían			

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Moriré Morirás Morirá	}	<i>I shall, or will dye,</i> <i>&amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Moriremos Moriréis Morirán		

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He <i>or</i> tengo de morir Has de morir Ha de morir	}	<i>I am to, or must dye, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hémos de morir Havéis de morir Han de morir		

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Muére Muéra	<i>Do you dye</i> <i>Let him dye</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Murámos Morid Muéran	<i>Let us dye</i> <i>Do ye dye</i> <i>Let them dye</i>

Subjunctive *and* Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.  
*When, Though, Would to God.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Muéra	}	<i>When, or God grant I do dye, &amp;c.</i>
		Muéras		
		Muéra		
Plur.	{	Murámos		
		Muráis		
		Muéran		

## Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Muriéra, muriéffe, or mori- ría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did dye, &amp;c.</i>
		Muriéras, muriéffes, or mori- rías		
		Muriéra, muriéffe, or mori- ría		
Plur.	{	Muriéramos, muriéffemos, or moriríamos		
		Muriéradeis, muriéffedeis, or moriríadeis		
		Muriéran, muriéffen, or mori- rían		

## Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya muérto	}	<i>When, or God grant I have dy'd, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas muérto		
		Háya muérto		
Plur.	{	Hayámos muérto		
		Hayáis muérto		
		Háyan muérto		

## Two Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéffe	}	Muérto, {	<i>When, or would to God I had dy'd, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéffes			
		Huviéra, or huviéffe			
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéffemos			
		Huviéradeis, or huviéffedeis			
		Huviéran, or huviéffen			

First

First Future.

Sing.	{	Muriére	} <i>When, or God grant I shall, or will dye, &amp;c.</i>
		Muriéres	
		Muriére	
Plur.	{	Muriéremos	
		Muriéredeis	
		Muriéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	{	Muerto,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall, or will have dy'd, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres				
Huviére						
Huviéremos						
Plur.		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Morir, *To dye.*

Preterperfect.

Havér muerto, *To have dy'd.*

Future Tense.

Havér de morir, *To be to dye.*

Gerund.

Muriendo, *Dying.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que muére, *He that is dying.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Muerto, *Dyed.*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que há, or espéra de morir, *About to dye hereafter.*

The following Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation, change *e* of the Penultima or last Syllable but one of the infinitive Mood into *i*, in the first, second, and third Persons singular, and the third Person plural of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood; the second and third Persons singular, and the first and third plural of the Imperative Mood; and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive Moods; thus,

*Servir*, to serve, *Sirvo*, I serve, *Sirves*, *Sirve*, *Servimos*, *Servís*, *Sirven*. Imperative, *Sirve*, *Sirvá*, *Sirvamos*, *Servid*, *Sirvan*. Optative and Subjunctive, *Sirva*, *Sirvas*, &c. All other Tenses in each Mood as the regular Verbs. The others that are conjugated after this manner; are,

<i>Reír</i> , To laugh,	<i>Río</i> , I laugh,	<i>Ríes</i> , <i>Ríe</i> , &c.
<i>Concebir</i> , To conceive,	<i>Concibo</i> , I conceive,	<i>Concibes</i> , <i>Concíbe</i> , &c.
<i>Gemir</i> , To sigh,	<i>Gímo</i> , I sigh,	<i>Gímes</i> , <i>Gíme</i> , &c.

The next that follow add *i* before *e* in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above; as

<i>Advertir</i> , To take notice,	<i>Advierto</i> , I take notice,	<i>Adviertes</i> , &c.
<i>Arrepentir</i> , To repent,	<i>Arrepiento</i> , I repent,	<i>Arrepientes</i> , &c.
<i>Consentir</i> , To consent,	<i>Consiento</i> , I consent,	<i>Consientes</i> , &c.
<i>Mentir</i> , To lie,	<i>Miento</i> , I lie,	<i>Mientes</i> , &c.

The Verbs *Elegir*, To chuse, and *Regir*, To rule, change *eg* into *ij* in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above; thus *Elegir*, *Elíjo*; *Regir*, *Ríjo*.

*Fingir*, To feign, and *Ungir*, To anoint, in the same manner make *Fínjo*, and *Unjo*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses, and Persons above mention'd.

*Seguir*, To follow, makes *Sígo*, *Sígues*, *Sigue*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above.

These that follow in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons above mentioned, are conjugated as here noted.

*Conducir*,

*Conducir*, To conduct, *Condúzgo*, *Condúces*, *Condúce*, *Condúcimos*, *Conducís*, *Condúcon*. Preterperfect, *Condúxe*, *Condúxiste*, &c. Optative and Subjunctive, Present, *Condúzga*. Preterimperfect, *Conduxera*, or *Conduxesse*. Future, *Conduxére*. In the same manner, *Introducír*, *Inducír*, *Traducír*, and *Producír*.

*Salír*, To go out. Present, Indicative. *Sálgo*, *Sáles*, *Sále*, *Salímos*, *Salís*, *Sálen*. Imperative Mood, *Sal*, or *Sále*, *Sálga*, *Salgámos*, *Salid*, *Sálgan*. Optative and Subjunctive Present, *Sálga*, *Sálgas*, &c. The rest Regular.

*Of Verbs Passive, Ser oído, To be heard.*

Indicative.

Present.

Imperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Sói oído} \\ \text{Eres oído} \\ \text{Es oído} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Era oído} \\ \text{Eras oído} \\ \text{Era oído} \end{array} \right\}$	
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Somos oídos} \\ \text{Soís oídos} \\ \text{Son oídos} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Eramos oídos} \\ \text{Erais oídos} \\ \text{Eran oídos} \end{array} \right\}$	
	<i>I am heard.</i>	<i>I was heard.</i>	

Perfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Fuí, or hé sido oído} \\ \text{Fuíste, or has sido oído} \\ \text{Fué, or ha sido oído} \end{array} \right\}$	
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Fuimos, or hemos sido oídos} \\ \text{Fuísteis, or habéis sido oídos} \\ \text{Fuéron, or han sido oídos, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>I have been heard, &amp;c.</i>

The Reciprocal thus :

*Reirse*, To Laugh.

Present

**Present Tense.****Preterimperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Me río Te ríes Se ríe	<i>I laugh.</i>	{ Me reía Te reías Se reían	<i>I was laughing.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Nos reímos Os reís Se ríen		{ Nos reíamos Os reíadeis Se reían, &c.	

**Introducírse, To be introduced.****Present.****Imperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Me introduzgo Te introduces Se introduce	<i>I am introduced.</i>	{ Me introducía Te introducías Se introducía	<i>I was introduced.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Nos introducimos Os introducís Se introducen		{ Nos introducíamos Os introducíais Se introducían	

**Preterperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Me introduxe, <i>or</i> heme introducido Te introduxíste, <i>or</i> haste introducido Se introduxo, <i>or</i> hase introducido	<i>I have been introduced, or I introduced myself.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Nos introduximos, <i>or</i> hemosnos introducido, <i>or</i> nos hemos introducido Os introduxísteis, <i>or</i> os havéis introducido Se introduxéron, <i>or</i> se han introducido	

**Imperative.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Introducete tu Introduzgate el	<i>Be introduced thou Let him be introduced</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Introduzganos nosotros Introduced os vosotros Introduzganse aquéllos	<i>Let us be introduced Be ye introduced Let them be introduced</i>

And so in the rest of the Reciprocal, which are terminated in *se* in the Infinitive, except the Impersonal Passive.

*Impersonal*



*Impersonal Actives.*

Convenír, *To be convenient, fit, or proper.*

Indicative.

<i>Presf.</i> Conviene	<i>It is convenient</i>
<i>Imperf.</i> Convenía	<i>It was convenient</i>
First <i>Perf.</i> Convino	} <i>It has been convenient</i>
Second <i>Perf.</i> Ha convenido	
<i>Plusperf.</i> Havía convenido	<i>It had been convenient</i>
First <i>Future</i> , Convendrá	<i>It will be convenient</i>
Second <i>Future</i> , Há de convenir	<i>It must be convenient</i>
<i>Imperative</i> , Convenga	<i>Let it be convenient, &amp;c.</i>

*Cumplir*, *To behave.*

<i>Present.</i> Cumplo	<i>It behoves.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i> Cumplía	<i>It did behave.</i>
First <i>Perfect.</i> Cumplió	<i>It behoveth.</i>
Second <i>Perfect.</i> Ha cumplido	<i>It has behaved.</i>
<i>Plusperfect.</i> Havía cumplido	<i>It had behaved.</i>
<i>Future.</i> Cumplirá,	<i>It will behave.</i>

and so through the third Person of the other Moods. It is to be observed, that this Verb *Cumplir*, is given here as Impersonal, only in this Signification of *Behoving*, or *being meet* ; for *Cumplir*,  
when

204      *The RUDIMENTS of*  
 when it signifies *to compleat, or fulfill*, is a regular  
 Verb, and has all its Persons accordingly.

---

### *Of the Impersonal Passives.*

#### *Decírse, To be said.*

##### Indicative.

<i>Present.</i> Se dice, or dicese	<i>It is said.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i> Se decía	<i>It was said.</i>
<i>First Perfect.</i> Se dixo	<i>It was, or has been said.</i>
<i>Second Perfect.</i> Se há dicho	<i>It has been said.</i>
<i>Plusperfect.</i> Se havia dicho	<i>It had been said.</i>
<i>Future.</i> Se dirá	<i>It shall, or will be said, &amp;c.</i>

After the same Manner are conjugated,

#### *Escribirse, To be written.*

<i>Present.</i> Se escribe,	<i>It is written.</i>
-----------------------------	-----------------------

#### *Referírse, To be related or referred.*

<i>Present.</i> Se Refiere,	<i>It is related, or referred, &amp;c.</i>
-----------------------------	--

The Verbs of this Conjugation are likewise declined by the Verb *Estar* and the Gerund, as

<i>Oigo, or está oyendo,</i>	<i>I hear, or I am hearing.</i>
<i>Escribo, or está escribiendo,</i>	<i>I write, or I am writing.</i>
<i>Pido, or está pidiendo, &amp;c.</i>	<i>I beg, or I am begging.</i>

There

There are likewise some few Defective Verbs in the *Spanish* Tongue, which are perfect *Latin*, viz.

*Salve*, hail, God save you, which is a saluting Verb, much used in their Prayers to the Virgin *Mary*, and in Poetry, and has no other Tense in *Spanish* than the Imperative.

*Ave*, All hail, God save you, &c. is likewise used in *Spanish*, and found in several Books in a saluting manner, but never used otherwise than at Prayers, &c.

*Vále*, farewell, adieu, God be with you, is much used by the *Spaniards*, especially in writing, instead of *Your most Obedient Humble Servant*; and has but two Persons in the Imperative Mood, viz. *Vále*, and *Valéte*.

This may suffice as to Verbs, the Necessity of giving an Account of the Irregulars, and Impersonals having taken up much time.

## C H A P. IV.

### *Of Participles.*

**A**LTHO' there has been said enough of the Participles, as to what concerns the Grammar, in the third Chapter before the Conjugation of Verbs; yet I think it proper to observe,

That this Name *Participle*, comes from the *Latin Participium*, and is so called for its partaking of the Verb and Noun, as it has been said before.

Some are Simple, and others Compound, as

*Andánte,*  
*Comandánte,*

*Docto.*  
*Indocto.*

All the *Spanish* Verbs have not the Participles Present, and of the Future ; and they are supplied by *elque*, and the third Person Singular of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, &c. as it is observed before.

*Note*, That the Participles of the Present Tense are often made Nouns in *Spanish*, as *Oyénte*, *Escribiente*, *Antecedente*, &c.

## C H A P. V.

### *Of Adverbs.*

**H**AVING treated at large of the four declinable Parts of Speech, we now come to the four that are undeclinable ; the first of which is the Adverb, (and so called because it is joined to Verbs, to declare the manner, or the Circumstances of the Action, or Passion ; as *el Dánza*, or *Báila bien*, he dances well ; *el pudeció cruelmente*, he suffer'd cruelly : it often explains likewise the Nouns, as *un hombre muy sábio*, a very learned Man ; *Totalmente impudente*, intirely impudent, &c.

Of Adverbs there are several Sorts, some being Primitives, as *Si*, Yes ; *No*, No, &c. Others are Derivatives, as particularly those which proceed from the Feminine Gender of Adjectives, as from *álta*, high, *altaménte*, highly ; from *graciosa*, pretty, *graciosaménte*, prettily ; or from those in *ente*, *z*, *al*, *il*, &c. as *prudenteménte*, prudently ; *Felizménte*, happily ; *Moralménte*, morally ; *Facilménte*, easily, &c.

There are Adverbs of Quality, of Quantity, of Time, &c. as may be seen here following,

*Adverbs of Quality.*

Fielmēte, <i>faithfully</i>	Santamēte, <i>holily</i>
Buenamēte, <i>or bien, well</i>	Fieramēte, <i>fiercely, &amp;c.</i>
Malamēte, <i>or mal, ill</i>	

And so the like may be form'd of all Adjectives.

*Adverbs of Quantity.*

Múcho, <i>much</i>	Pordemás, <i>to no purpose</i>
Póco, <i>little</i>	Demasiádo, <i>too much</i>
Mas, <i>more</i>	

*Adverbs of Time.*

Hói, <i>to day</i>	Núnca, <i>or jamás, never</i>
Ahiér, <i>yesterday</i>	Quándo, <i>when</i>
Mañana, <i>to morrow</i>	Siémpre, <i>always</i>
Antehier, <i>the day before</i>	Entónces, <i>then</i>
yesterday	Miéntas, <i>whilst</i>
Múcho ha, <i>long since</i>	Súbito, <i>or repentemēte,</i>
Póco ha, <i>lately</i>	<i>suddenly</i>
Ahóra, <i>now</i>	Tárde, <i>late</i>
'Antes, <i>before</i>	Tempráno, <i>early</i>
Ahún, <i>yet, even</i>	à la tarde, <i>in the evening</i>
Amenúdo, <i>often</i>	A deshora, <i>unseasonably,</i>
Luégo, <i>forthwith</i>	<i>&amp;c.</i>

*Adverbs of Place.*

Aquí, <i>here</i>	Delânte, <i>before</i>
Allí, <i>there</i>	Atrás, <i>behind</i>
Adónde, <i>where</i>	Apárte, <i>apart, or aside</i>
De dónde, <i>from whence</i>	Arriba, <i>above</i>
Acá, <i>hither</i>	Abáxo, <i>below</i>
Acullá, <i>yonder</i>	Cérca, <i>near</i>
Ahí, <i>in that place</i>	Cábe, <i>close by</i>

208      *The R U D I M E N T S of*

De aquí, <i>from hence</i>	Junto, <i>adjoining</i>
De allí, <i>from thence.</i>	Léxos, <i>far off</i>
Déntro, <i>within</i>	Encíma, <i>upon</i>
Fuéra, <i>without</i>	Debáxo, <i>underneath</i>

*Adverbs of Affirmation.*

Si, <i>yes</i>	Verdaderaménte, <i>truly</i>
Ciéрто, <i>truly</i>	También, <i>as well, also</i>
Ciertaménte, <i>certainly</i>	Antes, <i>rather</i>
En verdád, <i>in truth</i>	

*Of Denying.*

No, <i>no, or not</i>	Ni, <i>neither</i>
Nâda, <i>nothing</i>	Tampóco, <i>neither</i>

*Of Number.*

'Una vez, <i>once</i>	Mûchas véces, <i>often</i>
Dos véces, <i>twice</i>	Pócas véces, <i>seldom</i>
Tres véces, <i>three times</i>	Amenúdo, <i>often</i>

*Of Shewing.*

He aquí,	Behold here
----------	-------------

*Of Encouraging.*

Ea, ea pués	Go to then
-------------	------------

*Of Increasing.*

Mas,	More
------	------

*Adverbs of Diminishing.*

Ménos, <i>less</i>	Pásto, <i>soft and fair</i>
Póco, <i>little</i>	

*Of Wishing.*

Oxalá, *would to God*      O si, O if it would be

*Of Asking.*

Porqué, <i>why</i>	De dónde, <i>from whence</i>
Que, <i>what</i>	Quándo, <i>when</i>
Dónde, <i>where</i>	Cómo, <i>how</i>
Adónde, <i>whither</i>	

*Of Doubting.*

Quiza, *perhaps*      Porventura, *peradventure*

*Of Order.*

Primeraménte, <i>firstly</i>	Aquénde, <i>on this side</i>
Después, <i>after</i>	Finalménte, <i>in fine</i>
Allénde, <i>beyond</i>	'A lo último } <i>lastly, &amp;c.</i>
Alfin, <i>at the end</i>	'A la Póstre }
Alcábo, <i>at the end</i>	

*Of Likeness.*

Cómo, <i>as</i>	Afí, <i>so</i>
Cafí, <i>almost</i>	Tan, tanto, <i>so much, &amp;c.</i>

*Of Chance.*

A cáso, *accidentally.*      Por dícha, *perchance*

*Of Comparifon.*

Mas, <i>more</i>	Mejór, <i>better</i>
Ménos, <i>less</i>	Peór, <i>worse</i>

*Of gathering together.*

Junto, or Juntaménte	<i>Together</i>
A montónes	<i>In heaps</i>

*Of Severing.*

Apárte	<i>Asunder</i>
--------	----------------

The Adverb *Hárto*, Enough, varies as to the Gender before Substantives ; for the *Spaniards* say, *Hárto Pan*, Bread enough, where it is Masculine ; and *Hárta Agua*, Water enough, where it is Feminine : But before Adjectives it always retains the Masculine Termination ; as *Hárto buéno*, and *Hárto buéna*, though *buéno* and *buéna* are Masculine and Feminine. There are some other Adverbs of the same Sort ; but it would be too tedious to mention all Things.

*Note*, That the Adjectives are often taken as Adverbs, and then they retain the Masculine Termination ; as *Hágase esto priméro*, let this be done first ; *póngase esto derécho*, put this right, or to rights.

## C H A P. VI.

*Of* CONJUNCTIONS.

CONjunctions are a Part of Speech that joins Words and puts Sentences together. Some Conjunctions are Copulative, as uniting Words, and connecting the Sense ; others are Disjunctive, dividing the Sense, and only joining the Expressions ;



sions; others are conditional, shewing the Causes of Things; others Rational or Conclusive, which some call Collective or Illative; and others Adversatives, by which is demonstrated that which we say cannot hurt or obstruct. Besides these, the *Latin* hath others which they call Ordinatives, as also Expletives; but these last only serve for Ornament, for they no way add to, or take from the Discourse.

Conjunctions Copulative are *y* and *e*, signifying *and*; viz. *y* before all Words, excepting those that begin with *i* Vowel, instead of which is put *e*, as we have said in the Observation on the Vowels; *Cómo*, as; *También*, also.

Conjunctions Disjunctive are, *Ni*, neither; *O*, or; *ó*, or, either; *yá*, either, as *yá esto*, *yá aquéllo*, either this or that.

Causative, as *Porqué*, why, wherefore.

Conditional, *Si*, if; *dádo que*, granting that.

Exceptive, as *Sinó*, if not; *mas*, but; *otraménte*, otherwise.

There are others of other Sorts, as *Aloménos*, at least; *Aunque*, although; *tóda vía*, notwithstanding, nevertheless.

## CH A P. VII.

### Of PREPOSITIONS.

**P**Repositions are a Part of Speech most commonly set before other parts, either in Apposition; as *ante la justicia*, before a Justice; or else in Composition; as *disponér*, to dispose, *injústo*, unjust.

Those us'd in Composition are *a*, *ad*, *al*, Arabic, *am*, *có*, *com*, *con*, *de*, *des*, *di*, *dis*, *en*, *ex*, *in*, *ob*, *pre*, *pro*, *re*, *se*, *so*, *su*, &c.

In *a*, as *Acanalár*, to cut in Gutters or Channels ; *abatanár*, to full or mill Cloth.

*ad*, as *Advenedízo*, a stranger ; *advertír*, to advertise.

*al*, *Alcázar*, a Royal Castle or Palace ; *Alquitára*, a Limbeck.

*am*, *Ampáro*, Protection ; *amparádo*, protected.

*co*, *coheredéro*, coheir ; *co-ordinár*, to co-ordain, or ordain together.

*com*, *comparár*, to compare ; *comprometér*, to compromise.

*con*, *convenír*, to agree ; *condescendér*, to condescend.

*de*, *degenerár*, to degenerate ; *deponér*, to depose.

*des*, *desbacer*, to undo ; *desfigurádo*, disfigured.

*di*, *diferír*, to defer ; *difundír*, to diffuse, to spread abroad.

*dis*, *disculpár*, to excuse ; *disponér*, to dispose.

*en*, *entorpecér*, to grow dull or stupid ; *envergonzár*, to make ashamed.

*ex*, *exponér*, to expound, interpret ; *expandér*, to spread.

*in*, *Indignación*, Indignation ; *inferír*, to infer.

*ob*, *obtenér*, to obtain ; *obtenído*, obtained.

*pre*, *preponér*, to set before ; *prevenír*, to prevent.

*pro*, *proponér*, to propose ; *proseguír*, to prosecute.

*re*, *reedificár*, to rebuild ; *reponér*, to put again.

*se*, *separár*, to separate ; *separádo*, separated.

*so*, *socorrér*, to succour ; *solicítár*, to sollicite.

*Su*, *suponer*, to suppose ; *suportár*, to support, &c.

These Prepositions following serve to the Genitive Case.

*Antes*, as *Antes del dia*, before Day-break.

*Delánte*, before, as *Delánte del Juez*, before the Judge.

*De*,

*De*, of; as *la Muger de Pédro*, Peter's Wife, that is, the Wife of Peter.

*Dentro*, within; as *Dentro de mi cása*, within my House.

*Detrás*, behind; as *detrás del Cócke*, behind the Coach.

*Despues*, after; as *despues de esto*, after this.

*Báxo*, } under; as *llevába un Coléto báxo de su cápa*,  
*Debáxo* } he had on a Buff-Coat, under his  
 Cloak. *Debáxo de mi Manto*, al  
*Réy máto*, under my Cloak I'll kill  
 the King.

*Abáxo*, down, below, is an Adverb.

*Encima*, upon; as *encima del Agua*, upon the Water.

*Derredór*, round about, as *al derredór de Castillo*,  
 round about the Castle.

*Cérca*, near; as *Pedro está cerca de Juan*, Peter is  
 near to John.

*Acérca*, Though formerly used as a Proposition in-  
 stead of *Cérca*, it is now used only as an  
 Adverb, and signifies *concerning*, *near*, and  
 governs a Genitive; as *acérca de esto que dice?*  
 what say you concerning this? *los días*  
*acérca del Nacimiento de Christo son mui frios*,  
 the Days about or near Christmas are very  
 cold.

*Fuéra*, out; as *Váya fuéra de mi Cása*, go out of  
 my House.

*Fuéra*, *afuéra*, without, are Adverbs.

*Entórno* } about; as *entorno de mi*, about me, round  
*Contórno* } about me.

*Enfrente*, over-against; as *Enfrente de san Páblo*,  
 over-against St Pauls, &c.

The following serve for the Dative Case.

*á* } to, } as, *à Dios sólo se ha de dar la Adoración*,  
*para* } for } to God alone we must pay Worship: *dí*  
 P 3 *esto*

*esto à Pédro*, I gave this to Peter ; *ésto es pára mi*, this is for me.

And though there are some Authors, who place here the Prepositions *bácia*, towards, and *hasta*, even to ; I am of Opinion that they belong to the Accusative, because they are equivalent to the *Latin erga, versus, versum ; usque, ad, &c.* and I see no Reason to the contrary.

### Prepositions governing the Accusative.

*à*, as *ámo à Dios*, I love God ; *voy à Róma*, I go to Rome. *Míre à tal parte*, look on such side, toward such a place, and stands *por bácia*, towards ; *à modo de Conversación*, by way of Conversation, instead of *por*, by.

*Ante*, before ; as *hói el doce de Júnio parció ante mi*, this Day the twelfth of June appeared or came before me.

*Entre*, among, between ; as *hablando entre nosotros, le diré la diferencia, que báe entre las Cortes de Londres y Madrid*, speaking between us, (among us) I will tell you the Difference that there is between the Courts of London and Madrid.

*Según*, according ; as *según loque se me dixo, créo, que todo es un embuste*, according to what is told me, I believe, that every thing is a fly Lie, Deceit, Falsehood, or Imposition.

*Sobre*, upon, as *todo lo que tengo, lo puédo llevar sobre este Caballo*, every thing I have, I can carry it upon this Horse.

*Hasta*, until, even to ; as *Passearé hasta las ocho de la Nóche*, I will walk until nine a Clock in the Night ; *hasta Mañana*, till to morrow, *iré hasta Roma*, I will go as far as Rome, even to Rome.

*Hacia*, towards ; *voyme bácia el Río*, I go towards the River.

*Por*,

*Por*, for, by, through ; *Consuéleme por amor de Díos*, Comfort me for God's sake ; *Las diez tocaron quando passaba por esta calle*, it struck ten a Clock when I went through this Street. *Le assegúro esto por mi palabra, por mi vida, por mi Fe'*, I assure you this by my Word, by my Life, by my Faith. *Por* is sometimes taken for *para*, but of this we will take notice afterwards.

*Cábe*, near, as *Le hallé cábe la Ciudad* (*Cábe*, an old Word) I found him near the City.

*En*, in ; as *espéro y creo en Díos*, I hope, and believe in God.

*Contra*, against, as *lo que hablas es contra los Atributos de Díos*, what you do speak is against the Attributes of God, &c.

#### Prepositions governing the Ablative.

*à*, as *creo que le Castigarán à pena de Privacion de Oficio*, I believe that they will punish him, with the Privation, or depriving him of his Office or Employment. *Lo bízo à colór de engañarnos*, he has done it with an Intention to deceive under the Colour, &c. *à* is taken here as *con*.

*Con*, with ; *ven con mígo*, come with me.

*De*, as *Díos formo à Eva de la Costilla, que es buéssu tuerto*, God formed Eve from the Rib, which is a crooked Bone. *Víne de Róma*, I came from Rome.

*Sin*, without. *Lo híce sin ayúda*, I have done it without help.

*En*, in ; *no téngo dinéro en el Bolsillo*, I have no Money in the Purse.

*Por*, for, *Lo híce por ti*, I have done it for you, &c.

## C H A P. VIII.

*Of* INTERJECTIONS.

**I**Nterjections are Parricles thrown into Discourse, which denote, or show the Passions of the Mind. Of Mirth, or Rejoycing. *A la gála, a la gála.* Which is O fine, O rare, &c.

Wondering, *Valgame Diós*, God help me, which is also usual in a Fright, and upon other Occasions, Grieving, *Guay*, Alas! or *Ay de mi!* Alas for me.

Wishing, *Oxalá*, Would to God, &c.

*Ha*, ah! *bé*, as *bé que dices*, he! what you say!

*O*, as *O Dios!* *O Dolor!* O God! O pain, or grief!

*A*, as *à Fuláno*, ho, there such a one, &c.

REMARKS *upon some Spanish Words and Phrases.*

**A**LL Languages have some peculiar Expressions to themselves, which are not the same in other Tongues, and the *Spanish* is not without some of that Sort. Having therefore already run through all, that belongs to the usual Parts of Discourse, and their Nature; it will not be improper to add something concerning these Words and Phrases in the *Spanish* Tongue, which are not to be found in others.

In the first place, the Preposition *Des* is inseparable from some other Word, and never to be used but

but in Composition, as signifying nothing by itself: but being join'd to another Word, denotes a Privation of what the other imports, as the Syllable *Dis* does in some *English* Words; thus *Hónra*, is Honour, *Desbónra*, Dishonour, or Disgrace: *Dícha*, good Fortune, *Desdicha*, Misfortune. The same Effect it has when join'd with Verbs; as *Hacér*, to make, *Desbacér*, to undo; *Armár*, to arm, *Desarmár*, to disarm.

*En* is commonly in, as *en casa*, in the House; *en la calle*, in the Street, &c. but in some Cases it has a peculiar Signification, not to be express'd in any other Language, that I know of; as for instance, *Estár en cuérpo*, literally in *English* is, to be in Body, which is nonsense; but the true Meaning of it, is, to be without a Coat or Cloak for a Man, or for a Woman without a Scarf or a Veil, so that the Body is more expos'd to View, without an upper Garment. *Está en piérnas*, literally he is in Legs, which has no Meaning, but it signifies, he is bare legg'd, that is, his Legs are expos'd without Stockings. *Estói en cárnes*, literally I am in Flesh, but the true Meaning is, I am stark naked, I have nothing to cover my Flesh. *En cuéros*, signifies the same as *En cárnes*, that is stark naked, the Difference being that *en cárnes*, is in naked Flesh, and *en cuéros*, is in naked Skin; much like the *English* Expression, that a Man is in Buff, when he is stark naked.

*En* shews, or it notes the last end of a Thing; as *creo en Díos*, I believe in God. When it's found before the Infinitive, then it turns the Infinitive into an *English* Gerund, as *consiste en hablár bién*, it consists or depends in speaking well. When before a Gerund, it is the same as *after* and *at* in *English*; as *en cenádo*, after Supper, or when at Supper; *en confesando la Verdád*, after your confessing the Truth, or when you confess the Truth; it signifies *as soon*, as *en acabádo lo diré*, as soon as I have done I will tell it

it to you. *En despertando, me levantaré*, as soon as I wake, I will get up; and then it stands for *luégo*, or *tan presto que, cómo, or quando*; as *en despertando*, viz. *Quando despertare*, when I shall, or should wake.

*Hidépúta* in its Genuine and usual Acceptation, is the Contraction of *Hijo de púta*, Son of a Whore, a most scandalous Word in all Languages, and as such, scarce ever us'd by *Spaniards* of any Politeness, in its vulgar and true Meaning: Yet as bad as it is in itself, it is become a Sort of Exclamation, mostly us'd by vulgar People, and that in Contempt, and by way of Scorn, as *O hidépúta y que gran personage que es!* O the Son of a Whore, or the Scoundrel, what a great Person he is! to denote a mean Person, a vile Wretch, carrying himself loftily. Yet some, through Ignorance, not reflecting on the Baseness of the Expression, will let it fly without thinking even to commend any thing that surprises them, as *O hidépúta y que bien que lo ha bécho!* where that scandalous word drops without thinking, and the whole imports no more, than, O how bravely he has done it! even as among us, we too often hear a Rake say to his Friend, Damn you *Tom*, I'm glad to see you! thus cursing him out of meer Affection.

*Hidálgo*, is a Gentleman, a Man of good Birth, being a Contraction of *Hijo dalgo*, or rather *Hijo de algo*, the Son of something, that is, of a Person of note, or one remarkable for something; not for much Money, which in *Spain*, does not make a Gentleman, but for something that is honourable; as Virtue, Learning, Wisdom, or Valour.

*Vuéstia mercéd*, (as it is said before) is generally contracted into *Ustéd* in speaking, and in writing express'd by these two Letters *V. M.* This is a courteous expression to be found in no other Language, being always us'd where there is any Civility, the *Spaniards* never saying you to one another, which would



would be very unmannerly ; for *Tu*, you, is only us'd from a Master to a Servant, or from a Superior to some very mean Person. Where the least respect is shown, and this practis'd even to very indifferent Persons ; they say *Vos*, ye ; and even this is not allow'd of, unless the Person so expressing himself, be much superior to the other. The common word therefore in Discourse between People of any Fashion, or good Manners is *usted*, for *Vuestra mercéd*, which has nothing to answer it in *English*, but is in the Nature of your Worship ; for in speaking to a Nobleman, they use *Vuestra Señoría*, sometimes contracted into *Usía*, your Lordship : *Vuestra Excelenciá*, your Excellency, &c. but they have not the Title of your Grace, as in *English*. There is another respectful Way of speaking, which is calling a Man by his Name, though speaking to him, *Sea servído de sentárse el Señor Don Juan*, May it please *Don John* to sit down, &c. Where we may also observe, that the word *Don* is also peculiar to the *Spanish*, formerly a Title more sparingly us'd, and given only to Knights, and Persons of Distinction ; but now grown common to all that can claim any thing of Gentility, but yet not to Tradesmen, and inferior Persons. *Señór*, is like the *Latin Dominus*, either Sir, or Lord, and therefore equivocal ; for they say, *Si Señor*, yes Sir, to the King ; and *Si Señor*, yes Sir, to the least Gentleman ; just as we do, Sir, to the King, and to any other. Yet is *Señór*, a Lord, as has been said ; the which Difference is found by the manner of speaking ; for though in speaking they say, *Señór Don Juan*, *Señór Don Pedro*, yet a Letter must not be superscrib'd, *Al Señor Don Pedro*, unless he be a Lord ; because then it implies Dignity, and in common speaking it does not. So in speaking to say, *es un Señor*, or *es un gran Señor*, implies that he is a Lord, or a great Lord. However within a Letter, as we begin Sir, so they begin, *Mi Señor mío*, without thereby meaning to give the title of Lord, but as

if we should say, my good Master, or good Sir. Much more may be said to this purpose, but this Place will not allow of it; these few Instructions are convenient for Learners, that they may not only speak true *Spanish*, but with good manners, and politely.

*Fulano*, *zutano* or *citano*, with their Diminutives *Fulanico*, or *Fulanillo*, *zutanico* or *citanico*, and *citanillo*, are Words us'd to signify a third Person nameless, as we say, such a one, and all of them import the same: the two first being us'd to express two distinct Persons, not named, as such a one, and such a one; the first of them always us'd if only one Person be spoke of, and the second never but when there is occasion to mention two. They are often us'd in the Feminine Gender, as *Fulana*, *citana*.

*Abáxo*, in it's own Sense signifies below, and *Debáxo*, under; but as apply'd, the first may have the same meaning with the latter; as *De Diós abáxo yó lo bíze hombre*, under God I made him a Man. *Del Rey abáxo no ay mayor Personaje*, next the King there is no greater Person.

*A vueltas*, though it seems to come from *vuélvo*, I turn, or return, signifies among; as *A vueltas de otras cosas le dió una cadena*: among other things he gave him a chain.

*Cábo*, properly signifies the end; but it extends to other meanings, as *Estói al cábo*, in one sense is, I am reduc'd to extremity, either with Sickness, or Poverty; and the same Words import, I fully understand, or I am entirely apprized of the thing. Again, *Mugér bermósa por el cábo*, is a Woman perfectly beautiful; and *Tomár la cosa muí por el cábo*, is to take a thing in the hardest sense.

*Recáudo*, or *Recádo*, for it is written both ways, though most commonly pronounced the latter, is a word of various Significations. *El dinero está à buen recádo*, The Money is safely plac'd, it is in  
good

good Hands, or safe. *Recádo pára escribir*, the necessaries for writing. *Dile un recádo*, I deliver'd him a Message. *Buén recádo trábigo*, I come well provided. *Recádo*, is also us'd for a Subpena, and several other ways.

*Aldabáda*, is properly, a Knock at a Door ; but *dar aldabádas*, is sometimes meant of much babbling, or talking to no purpose.

*A pies juntillas*, is a very odd Expression, without any real Signification of it self, and yet there is a way of using it thus, *Créo à pies juntillas*, I positively believe, I am stedfast in the Belief, without asking any further Questions.

*Tomár las de villa Diego*, is to run away.

*Hablar de chacóta*, to banter, or talk idly, a word seldom us'd, but by way of Contempt of the Person it is applied to.

*Dar xabón a la Rópa*, to soap Linnen for washing ; but *Dar un xabón a una persóna*, is what we call to rattle one, to give a severe Reprimand.

### A Few Comparisons.

*Mas blanco que la Nieve*, whiter than Snow.

*Mas negro que la Pez*, blacker than Pitch.

*Mas amargo que la Hiél*, more bitter than Gaul.

*Mas dulce que la Miél*, sweeter than Honey.

*Mas bravo que un León*, fiercer than a Lyon.

*Mas manso que una oveja*, tamer than a Sheep.

Comparisons to express doing Things impracticable.

*Es cómo dar con el puño en el Cielo*. That is like striking at Heaven.

*Es cómo bechár lanzas en la Mar*. That is like darting at the Sea.

*Es cómo predicár en Desierto*. It is like preaching in a Desert.

*Es cómo cogér água en Cesto.* It is like drawing Water in a Basket.

*Es cómo querér bolár sin alas.* It is like attempting to fly without Wings.

*Es cómo el pérro del Horteláno, que ni cóme las berzas, ni las déxa comér a los ótros.* He is like the Gardiner's Dog, that neither eat's Cabbage, nor lets others eat it. We say, like a Dog in a Manger, that will neither eat Hay, nor let the Horse eat it.

Observe, That most of the Adverbs Adjectives are turned likewise in *Spanish* by the Preposition *con*, and the Substantive, as *prudentémnte*, prudently, is the very same as *con prudéncia*, with prudence.

*Atrevidaménte*, boldly, *con atrevimiento*, with boldness.

*Eleganteménte*, elegantly.

*Con elegáncia*, with elegance.

*Dichosaménte*, happily.

*Con dicha*, with happiness.

*Liberalménte*, liberally, *con liberalidád*, with liberality, &c.

There are Degrees of Comparison among the Adverbs, as *Doctaménte*, *mas doctamente*, *doctíssimamente*, wisely.

*áy*, *bái*, *abí*.

There are several who make no Difference between *áy* the Interjection, *áy* the Verb, and *áy* the Adverb; but there is a vast one, in their being spelt and pronounced right. The Interjection *áy*, alas, is rightly spelt, and the Accent is to be on the *á*, and 'tis to be pronounced long; the Verb is written thus *bái*, there is but one Syllable, and to be pronounced as such: the Adverb thus *abí* there; and a strong Accent is to be put on the *i*, as *áy de mí!* *que báí muchos Athéos* or *Atheístas abí en Londres*, *y témo el ír*, alas for me! that there are many Atheists there

there (or in that place *London*) in *London*, and I am afraid to go.

*aquí, acá, &c.*

*Aquí* here, in the Place where one stands ; *acá*, hither ; *por aquí, por acá*, hereabouts ; *abí*, there, a little farther ; *allá*, thither, to that place ; *acúlla*, yonder, there, in that place ; *por abí porallí*, thereabouts ; *por abí porallá*, on that side, that way ; and they are join'd to the Prepositions *de*, from, *por*, by ; as *de aquí, de acá*, from, hence ; *de allá, de acúlla*, from, thence ; *por aquí*, by here, by this place ; *por acá*, by these Parts, in these Parts ; *por allá*, by those Parts ; *por acúlla*, by those other remote Parts or Places.

*ánte, ántes.*

*Ante*, before, is a Preposition, as *no conviene hablar así ánte la preséncia del Rey*, it is not fit or convenient to speak so, or thus, before the King's Presence : *ánte* is an Adverb, and is used as *ántes*, as in the Law of *la Partida* 2, Tit. 4. L. 1. but at present never used so : It signifies sometimes that which is first in time, or of a greater importance, as *ánte todas las cosas*, before all things : *ánte* signifies likewise a Buffaloe's Hide, and the Fruit Plates that are served up at Dinner or Supper before the Meat : *ántes* has likewise this last Signification.

*Antes*, as an Adverb, signifies the preceeding Time or Place ; as *lo dije ántes*, I said it before ; *conservó los Criados en los cargos de ántes*, he kept the Servants in the same Places they had before ; it is likewise a Preposition Adversative, and signifies rather, as *antes quiero morir que pecar*, I rather love to die, then to sin : It requires likewise a Genitive, as *ántes de la Muerte del Rey apareció un Cometa*,  
a Comet

a Comet did appear before the Death of the King, or the King's Death.

*Antes* is taken as *antecedente*, preceeding, or before, as *el ejército del año ántes nos taló los Campos*, the Army of the preceeding Year spoiled, ravaged, or wasted the Fields.

*Antes con antes*, adverbial. *immediately*, and more than immediately, if possible; a sudden diligence, *ex improvise*, suddenly, unexpected; as it will be seen in the several Phrases that often happen in Writings.

*Antes del día*, before Day break; *antesque*, a Preposition conjunctive, as *antesque váyas a trabajar, véte*; *à Rezár*, before you go to Work, go to or do your Prayers.

*Ante* and *antes* are likewise Preposions, and help in the Composition of some Words, but never change *e* or *es* into *i* as an Author observes wrongfully, because we don't say, *Anticámara*, but *Antecámara*, Anti-chamber, *Antesála*, a Room before the Saloon, or the State Room.

### *Delante, adelante.*

*Delante*, before, in presence, fronting, is a Preposition governing the Genitive, as *vivo delante de la Lonja*, I live fronting the Change: *este Crimen se comitió delante del Gobernador*, this Crime was committed before the Governor: *Quítese de delante de mí*, go away, or from thy presence. It is likewise an Adverb, as *el General va delante*, the General goes at the Head, or before, &c.

*Adelante*, an Adverb, signifies fronting, forwards, before, as *vámos adelante*, let us go on, or forwards. It signifies Time, when it has before it *en, pára, de aquí, de allí*, &c. as *en adelante*, afterwards, in time to come; *para en adelante*, for the time to come; *de aquí adelante*, from hence forward; *mas adelante*, farther

farther yet; *de hoí en adelante*, from this time forward, &c.

*!Aina, áinas.*

*!Aina*, Adverb, soon, sooner, as *más áina lo haré yo que tu*, I will do it sooner than you; *tu aprendiste la leccion en una hora, pero yo la aprenderé mas áina*, you did learn your Lesson in an Hour, but I will learn it sooner. So that *áina* always has *mas* before it.

*!Ainas*, Adverb, almost, near attend; as *áinas me mató*, he almost kill'd me; *estói áinas de la Muerte*, I am near my Death. These words are but seldom used in *Spanish*.

*Balde, de Balde, en balde.*

*Balde* is a Word used generally in *Andalusia*, and signifies a Bucket to draw Water from a Well, &c. but in *Spanish* has no Signification, but when in Composition, and then is an Adverb; as *debálde*, *gratis*, free cost, for nothing, without occasion; as *le hé servído debálde*, I have served him for nothing; *comímos de balde*, we eat free cost; *le castigó de balde*, punished him without occasion. *Enbalde* (not *embalde*, as some do write it carelessly) in vain, without effect; as, *despues de todo, nuestro trabajo será enbálde*, after all, our Labour will be in vain; *Prediqué enbalde*, I preached without effect, in vain.

*Note*, This frequent Expression of some Shopkeepers to the Buyers; *se lo venderé de balde*, I will sell it to you for nothing, that is, almost for nothing, so cheap that the like will be found nowhere for Cheapness.

• *Atruéque.*

Is an Adverb, *vamos atruéque*, let us change ; but when it signifies *instead*, or *in the room of*, then it is a Preposition, and requires the Genitive ; as, *atruéque de su anillo*, or *sortíja*, *le daré la miá*, I will give you my Ring instead, or in the room of yours.

Of *Pára* and *Por*.

These Prepositions are often confounded by the Gentlemen that learn the *Spanish*, nay even by some *Spanish* Authors, so that I think it necessary to observe that,

*Pára*, for ; serves to denote the Utility, or Detriment to a Person ; as *estos cien reales son pára Pedro*, *que es pobre*, these hundred Reals are for Peter, who is poor, or because he is poor. *Los di pára vmd.* I gave them for you ; *víne aquí pára hablar con vmd.* I came here to speak with you.

When the *English* puts *to* before the Infinitive, the *Spaniards* make use of *de*, *à*, *para*, or *por* ; but with this Distinction, that *de* is put before the Infinitive, and when the Verbs *venir*, *haber*, *tener*, &c. or a Noun is before the Infinitive ; as *Vengo de cenar*, I come from Supper ; *he de de amar*, I must love ; *tengo de ir*, I must go ; *tengo necesidad de ser consolado*, I want to be comforted, &c. when a Verb of Motion preceeds the Infinitive, as *la Léy de Díos me compéle à hacér bien*, Divine Law compels me to do good ; *vói à leer este libro*, I go to read this Book. *Pára*, when the Verb tends to an Habit, Use, Custom, or its Quality, as *ò señor ! dadme vuestra Grácia, y hacédme hábil para amaros, constante pára sufrír, y firme pára perseverár,*



*verár*, O Lord! give me thy Grace, and make me able to love you, constant to suffer, and firm or stable to continue or persevere. *Por*, and *pára*, when they denote the End that moves or inclines, the Cause and the Means to obtain it; as *sirvo à Díos por gozár de el prêmio*, I serve God to enjoy the Reward, or that I may, or in order to enjoy the Reward. *El espíritu málo nos pone amenúdo malos pensamiéntos para desviarnos del camíno de la virtúd*, the evil Spirit puts on us often bad Thoughts to set us out of the way of Virtue.

*Para* is used in questioning and answering, and signifies, for what? why? for whom? to what purpose, &c. as *Paraque se dixo esto?* to what purpose? to what end, for what is this said? *No báí paraque*, there is no Reason, no Occasion, no Cause: *Para quien es ésta carta?* para mi, for whom is this Letter? for me. *Paraque* signifies likewise *that*, and is a Sign that denotes the subjunctive Mood; as, *paraque yo áme*, that I may love: It expresses also, to what End, Office, or Place, a Thing, or a Person is good for; as *éste Caballéro es buéno para Ministro*, *aqué! para Secretário*, y el otro para Mayor dómo, this Gentleman is good for a Minister, viz. to be a Minister, that for a Secretary, and the other for a Steward. *Este epéjo es bueno para este quáрто*, y aquéllas cortinas para mi cáma, this Looking-Glass is good for this Room, and those Curtains for my Bed.

It denotes present and future Time; as, *este vestido es buéno para hói*, pára Mañana, y para cada día, this Suit of Cloth is good for this Day, for Tomorrow, and for every Day: *he comprádo trigo para un año*, I have bought Corn for a Year: *Abóra y para siempre*, alabémos a Díos, let us praise God now and for ever. Exceptions, *Para el año passádo se compráron estas provisiónes*, y dúran haun, these Pro-

vifions were bought for laſt Year, that is, for the ſervice of laſt Year, and laſt as yet: *Para ayér (el día de ayér) ſe hicieron eſtos Verſos*, theſe Verſes were made for Yeſterday, that is, to celebrate that Day.

*Pára póco*, good for little, of ſmall capacity.

*Paracon*, between us, or in my, or our Opinion; as, *para conmigo eſcierto*, in my opinion it is true.

*Por* ſometimes denotes that the Thing is not yet done; as, *eſta obra eſtá por acabár*, this Work is not yet finiſhed: *por hacerſe*, to be done.

It ſignifies likewise the End of, or Means to do a Thing; as, *ſe riñeron pormí*, they quarrelled on my account, &c.

*Por*, by, for, through; as *Por eſtos médios lo alcanzó*, he obtain'd it by theſe Means; *fuí al Banco por ducientas líbras*, I went to the Bank for 200 l. *paſſemos por éſta cálle*, let us go through this Street.

*Por*, though, although, &c. *por pequéña que ſéa la tomaré*, tho' ſo ſmall I will take it, altho' it be ſmall I will take it, and then it denotes a Tenſe in the Optative, as *por docto que ſéa*, though he be a learned Man, &c.

In Compoſition, as *por tál*, ſo that; *por un tál*, for ſuch a one; *porloque*, *porloqual*, for which; *Pordonde*, which way; *porende*, therefore; *por éſſo*, for that Reaſon; *porque*, why; *por ventúra*, peradventure, perhaps. But *pro* for *provécho*, as *buen pro le hága*, much good may it do you: *pro*, *el pro*, the reaſon of a Thing, as *el pró de las Mugéres*, Women's Reaſon; *pro y contra*, *pro and con*, for and againſt; *por acáſo*, by chance, by accident; *por dinero báila el Pérro*, the Dog dances for Money; or as we ſay in *Engliſh*, Money makes the Mare to go.

*Priméro, Primo, &c.*

Are Adjective Ordinals, but with Distinction ; because we use *Primo*, and not *Priméro* in the great Numbers, as an Author wrongfully saith ; we don't say *vigésimo priméro*, but *vigésimo Primo*, 21st ; *trigésimo primo*, 31st. *Priméro* stands sometimes for *primeramente* ; and when it has *lo* before it, it is taken as Substantive ; it is often us'd before and after the Substantives, when before them looses *o*, as *primer lugar*, *lugar priméro* ; when an Adverb it signifies first, before, in the first place, rather ; as *priméro iré a la Guerra*, *que à la Escuela*, I rather chuse to serve in the War, then to go to School, &c. *Prímo*, the first, the best, chiefest, a delicate curious Thing : *Primo* rarely is join'd to any Substantive, because it stands as a Substantive itself, and varies its Termination, and then signifies a Cousin, as *Primo Hermáno*, a Cousin German ; *Príma Hermána*, a she Cousin German : *obra Prima*, curious Work, the best ; *lo Primo*, the very best, &c.

*N O.*

Altho' *no*, be a Negative, in questioning it is a Note of Interrogation ; as *me estará aquí no ?* shall I not wait here ? *No me hará este favor ?* Will you not do me this favour ? and then it stands for *whether or no*.

*Tanto, Quanto, tan, Quan.*

The Adverbs *Tanto*, so much, as much ; *Quanto*, how much, are often put before Substantives, Verbs, &c. to signify the Quantity, Manner, or Circumstances of the Action, &c. as, *por tanto*

*comer estás enfermo*, you are sick for having eat so much, for over eating ; *Quanto bebo me hace mal*, every thing I drink, (all that I drink) does me no good. *Quanto pide por estos guantes ? tanto*, how much do you ask for these Gloves ? so much. *Tanto quanto*, every thing, so much as ; *tanto mas*, so much more. *Tanto* signifies likewise a Counter to play : *Quanto*, all, every thing, as *quanto dice es falso*, all, what, or every thing he saith is false ; *quanto mas ?* how much more ? *quantos ?* how many ? *quanto quiera*, how much soever.

*Tán*, so, as ; as *aquel Páño es tan bueno como este*, that Cloth is as good as this ; *tiene tan buenos amigos*, he hath as good Friends : *quán*, how ; as *ò quan malo eres, y quan bueno te haces entre los Nobles*, O how bad you are, and how good do you make yourself among the Nobility.

*Tanbien*, so well, as well ; *estói tan bien convalecido*, I am so well recovered : *esto está tan bien hecho como se pueda hacer*, this is as well done as it could be done ; so that *Tanbien* must not be confounded with *Tambien*, as an Author does, because *también* signifies *also*, and not *as well*.

### *Además.*

The Adverb *Además*, signifies, besides, moreover, over and above, in vain ; as *Además, conviene saber que*, besides, moreover, it is to be known that ; *pensativo además quedó Don Quixote, esperando, &c.* over and above thoughtful remain'd Don Quixote, waiting, &c. Vol. II. Chap. III. *Además se cansa*, takes pains in vain. *Pordemás*, that is, in vain, to no purpose ; it governs likewise Genitive, as *ademas de esto*, besides this, &c.

*Según*, when before a Verb is an Adverb, and signifies according, as ; as *Según dice Don Juan*, as Sir  
John

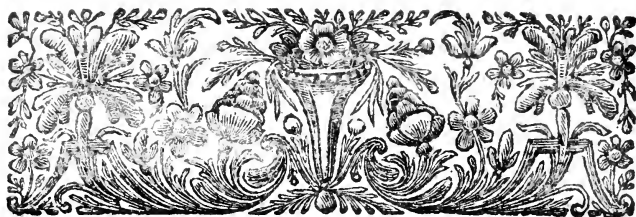
*John* saith ; it is likewise a Preposition governing the Accusative ; as, *según mi parecer*, according to my Opinion.

*Ayúso*, an old Adverb, is the same as *abáxo*, below, under ; as *lo echáron ayúso*, they throw'd it down, below, under ; it signifies likewise *after* and *under*, as *abáxo* ; as *de Dios en Ayúso*, or *de Dios abáxo yo le curé*, under God, or after God, I am the Person who cured him, or made him well.

*Hasta*, till, even, up to, as far as ; as, *hasta quando?* till when ? *hasta que venga*, untill I come ; *hasta quanto?* how much ? *hasta tanto*, so much ; *hasta el borde*, up to the brink ; *hasta Palacio*, as far as the Palace ; *hasta las doce*, till Noon.

This may serve by way of Specimen, and Practice will teach what can't be so well committed to writing, without far exceeding the Bounds of a Grammar.





THE  
SECOND PART  
OF THE  
*SPANISH GRAMMAR,*  
Called SYNTAX.

---



THE *Spanish* has so great an Affinity with the *Latin*, that whosoever understands the latter, will find little difficulty in the Construction of the other.

Having hitherto treated of the eight Parts of Speech, as they belong to Etymology, it remains now to treat of them as belonging to the Syntax (called Construction, or the order of Construction.)

# CH A P. I.

## *Of the Concords and Articles.*

**T**HERE are three Concords in the *Spanish* Speech, viz.

1. Between the nominative Case, and the Verb ; as, *yo ámo*, I love ; *Pédro scribe*, *Peter* writes.

2. Between the Substantive and the Adjective ; as, *bombre curióso*, a curious Man ; *Muger virtuósa*, a virtuous Woman.

3. Between the Antecedent and the Relative, as *Felíz es, quien vive contento*, happy is he who lives contented, or with content.

## *Of the first Concord.*

A Verb personal agreeth with his Nominative Case in Number and Person ; as *yo Léo*, *tu Apréndes*, *el Maestro enséna*, I read, thou learns, the Master teaches, &c. *Note*, That many Nominative Cases, with a Conjunction Copulative between them, will have a Verb Plural ; as, *Pédro y Juán viniéron a vérme Ayér*, *Peter* and *John* came to see me Yesterday.

Sometimes a whole Clause, and the infinitive Mood of a Verb, may be the Nominative to the Verb following ; as, *todo loque se díxo ayér, me movió á tomár ésta resolución*, all that was said Yesterday moved me to take this Resolution : *el comér satisfáce al hambriento*, to eat, eating, satisfies the Hungry ; *el levantarse temprano es saludable*, to rise betime in the Morning, is wholsome.

*Exceptions.*

*Exceptions.*

When a Question is asked, then the Nominative goes after the Verb ; as, *está el Sr. Fulano en casa ?* is Mr such a one at home ? *como se entiende esto ?* how is this understood ; *que tiene vmd. ?* What is the Matter with you ? And so in the Negatives, as *no es esto ? no es verdad ?* Is it not this ? is it not true ? These Relatives are excepted ; *que hora es ?* What is it a Clock ? *quién es ?* who is ? *quien toca ?* who knocks ? *quién llama ?* who calls, &c.

Some of the Reciprocal Verbs, and the Imperatives of all the Verbs have their Nominative after them ; as, *pésame mucho*, I am very sorry ; *ama tu*, love thou.

When a Verb comes between two Nominatives of diverse Numbers, the Verb may indifferently accord with either of them ; as, *tantas palabras juntas es confusión*, or *son confusión*, so many Words together are a Confusion : *las superfluidades son Excesso* Superfluities are an Excess.

*Of the Second Concord.*

The Adjective, whether it be a Noun, Pronoun, or Participle, agreeth with his Substantive in Case, Gender, and Number ; as, *el hombre sábio, y la Mujer virtuosa son dignos de alabanza*, a learned Man, and a virtuous Woman are worthy of praise ; by which you see how they agree, and that the Masculine Gender is more worthy than the Feminine ; and so it is said *dignos* and not *dignas* : It is likewise plain by the above Example, that, many Substantives with a Conjunction copulative between them will have an Adjective Plural.

When



When a Clause serves as a Substantive, then the Adjective is to be put in the Neuter Gender ; as, *el Rogár a Díos en todo tiempo es buéno ; pero en tiempo calamitóso es neceffário*, it is always good to pray to God ; but in calamitous time it is necessary.

### *Exceptions.*

Before the Nouns Substantives beginning with *a*, *Euboniæ gratia*, for the sake of the good Sound, the Spaniards use the Masculine Article, as has been said before, as *el água*, the Water ; *al alma*, the Soul ; which proceeds from the Spaniards not using the Apostrophe, as some other Nations do, &c.

After *Vuestra Merced* the Adjective does not agree in Gender with *v.m.d.* but with the Person to whom one speaks, as we observ'd before ; so that when we speak to a Man, we say, *bien venído sea v.m.d.* Sir you art welcome ; and in the Plural, *bien venídos sean v.m.d.s.* Gentlemen you are welcome ; when to a Woman, *vmd. es múi buéna*, Madam you are very good, &c.

Note, That *Buéno*, *maló*, *úno*, *priméro*, *tercéro*, &c. when before a Substantive, they lose the Letter *o* ; and *ciénto* loses *to* : and tho' some Authors are of Opinion, that *tanto* and *quanto* lose *to* before the Substantives, I say, that it is false, and wrong ; because *tanto* and *quanto* always remain whole, and are derived of the Latin Adverbs *Tanto*, *quanto* ; as, *quanto Mayor éres, tanto mas te humillarás*, how much the greater you are, so much the more you should be humbled. But *tán* and *quán* are derived from the Latin *tam* and *quam*.

*Grande*, loses *de* before the Substantives that begin with a Consonant ; as, *gran Mugér*, a great Woman ; *Gran Cása*, a great House : but if the Substantive begins with *a* then it is often indifferently

differently used, and when begins with another Vowel always retains *de*.

Observe likewise, that the *Spaniards* do generally use the Adjectives after the Substantives, as it has been said : but the Epithets are used by the best *Spanish* Authors before the Substantives ; as, *el Seráfico San Francisco*, the Seraphick St Francis ; *el Melifluo St Bernardo*, the Mellifluous St Bernard ; *el intrépido General*, the intrepid General ; *el Philosopho Aristoteles*, the Philosopher Aristotle : *Sanctísimo Pádre*, *Beatísimo Pádre*, the Holy Father ; *Excelentísimo Señor*, most excellent Sir ; *ilustrísimo Señor*, most illustrious Sir, &c. and so we say *es buen hombre*, he is a good Man ; *este es un mal hombre*, this is a bad Man.

### *Of the third Concord.*

The Antecedent is a Word, or Clause that goes before the Relative, and is rehearsed again by the Relative.

The Relative agreeth with his Antecedent in Gender, Number and Person ; as, *es sabio, quien habla poco y bien*, that Man is wise, that speaketh but little and to the purpose.

When a Relative is between two Antecedents of diverse Genders, then it agreeth with either ; as, *el Rey se irá luego a una casa de campo, la que está en Windsor*, the King will soon go to a Country House, which is at Windsor ; *he recibido tres cartas, cuyo contenido me gusta mucho*, I have receiv'd three Letters, whose Contents please me much ; *atacáron al Enemigo, cuya infantería tomó luego la derrota*, they attack'd the Enemy, whose Foot soon gave way and fled.

Sometimes the Relative hath for his Antecedent the whole Sentence that goeth before it, and then it must be put in the Neuter Gender, and in the Singular

lar Number ; as, *alzáronse los soldádos en el fuerte contra su Gobernador, lo que le obligó a entregarle*, the Soldiers revolted in the Fort or Fortrefs against their Governor, which oblig'd him to deliver it up.

Many Antecedents Singular having a Conjunction Copulative between them, will have a Relative Plural, which shall agree with the Antecedent of the most worthy Gender ; as, *recebí el Cabállo y la Múla que me embió, losque presenté al Sr. Fuláno*, I receiv'd the Horse and the Mule that you sent me, which I presented to Mr such a one.

When there is no Nominative between the Relative and the Verb, then the Relative stands for the Nominative ; as, *quien dice esto ?* who saith this ? but when there is a Nominative between the Relative and the Verb, then the Relative shall be put in the Case governed by the Verb, or any other Word ; as, *la gracia que le pido*, the Favour which I beg of you ; *el Réy á quien obedesco*, the King to whom I obey ; *el Embaxador, de cuya protección gozo, me escribe ésta carta*, the Embassador whose Protection I enjoy, wrote this Letter to me.

*Note*, that the Relatives you may make use of, are *le, les, la, lo, las, los* ; (to these four last you may add *que* ; as, *laque, loque, lasque, losque*) *quien, tal, quál, cuyo, que* ; to which you may likewise add a Preposition ; as, *à loque Digo*, to which I say ; *de loque recibí gusto*, of which I received Pleasure ; *de quien es ?* to whom it belongs ? *pára quién ? para él ;* for whom ? for him ; *cuyo es éste sombréro ?* then you may answer, *mio, túyo, or súyo, or del Sr. Fuláno, de aquel Caballéro*, mine, thine, or yours, or of Mr such a one, of that Gentleman.

Observe likewise, that these Relatives are called elliptic Articles, because they express the Substantive which is not there ; as, *recebí la de v.md, la* for *la carta*, I received yours ; *léí los libros de Quevédo, pero los del Padre Feijoo no*, I read *Quevédo's*

do's Books, but not those of Father *Feijoo* ; and then they govern the Case of the Substantive ; as *recibí la de Pédro, pero no la de Juan*, I receiv'd that of *Peter's*, but not that of *John*, &c.

### *Of the Articles.*

There are three Articles in *Spanish*, as is said before, viz. *el* for the Masculines, *la* for the Feminines, and *lo* for the Neuters ; and it can't be taken amiss, if I show here the manner, how they are to be used.

First, All proper Names of Men, Women, Gods, Goddeses, Angels good or bad ; of Months, Cities, Towns, and Villages, &c. have no Article before them ; as, *Phelipe V. Rey de España Luís XV. Rey de Fráncia ; Jorge II. Rey de Inglaterra, &c.* Philip V. King of Spain, &c. *Carolína Réina de Inglaterra*, Calorine Queen of England : *Jupiter, Júno, Lucrécia, St Miguél, St Michael ; Enéro, January ; Febréro, February, &c.*

Secondly, If we put an Adjective between proper Names, or express their Epithets, or specify some Action, Passion, or Motion, and take notice of their Qualities, &c. then we put the Article before them ; as, *el Omnipotente Dios, el Dios de Misericórdia* ; the Almighty God, the God of Mercy ; *el invencible è intrépido General*, the invincible, and intrepid General : *el Rey, la Réina, el Príncipe, la Princesa, y el Dúque de Cumberland irán à la comédia este nóche*, the King, the Queen, the Prince, the Princess, and the Duke of *Cumberland* will go to the Play-house this Night ; and so before other common Words.

Thirdly, Before the Numerals is never made use of the Article, but when they are taken relatively ; as, *los dos viniéron*, the two came ; *los doce meses del año*, the twelve Months of the Year ; *los siete días de la*

*de la semana*, the seven Days of the Week ; *las doce Tribus*, *los doce Apostoles*, *los doce pares de Fráncia*, *las quatro partes del Mundo*, &c. and so are *uno*, *otro*, *qual*, the Participles, and some of the Infinitives ; as, *el uno*, the one. &c. *lo dicho*, the above said, *el comer*, *el beber y el dormir*, *con Moderación*, *hacén bien al cuerpo*, to eat, to drink, and to sleep with Moderation, does good to the Body.

The Particle *an* so much us'd in *English* is omitted in *Spanish* ; for tho' we say, another Man, another Day, they only say as the Latin, *otro hombre*, *otro día*, not *un otro hombre*, or *un otro día*.

*España* has but seldom an Article, and *Serdéña*, *Portugal*, *Secília*, and *cándia* never.

## C H A P. II.

### *Of the Construction of Nouns.*

**W**HEN two Substantives of diverse Significations, do so come together, that the Latter in some kind or other seem to be possessed, or depend of the former, then the latter is put in the Genitive Case ; as, *el amor de Díos es mas perfecto*, the Love of God is the most perfect : *amor del Pádre*, the Love of a Father ; *la Ternéza de la Mádre*, the Tendernefs of a Mother ; *la Eloquência de Cicerón*, the Eloquence of Cicero, &c. And often this Genitive is turned into an Adjective ; as, *el amor Divíno*, the Divine Love ; *el Amor Patérno*, the fatherly Love ; *la Ternéza Matérna*, the Motherly Tendernefs, &c.

An Adjective in the Neuter Gender put alone without a Substantive, standeth for a Substantive, and

and may have a Genitive Case after it ; *déme un poco de lo mucho, y algo de lo poco*, give me a little of the much, and something of the little you have ; *lo prudente de Don Pedro nos admira*, the prudent Part of Don Peter surprises us, &c.

The Nouns of Praise, and Dispraise, of Want, of Arts, Sciences, all proper Names of Cities, Towns, &c. of God, all proper Names of Men, Women, Spirits good and bad, of irrational Creatures, of inanimates, of Months, Nouns of Measure, &c. coming after a Noun Substantive, or a Verb Substantive may be put with the Preposition *de* ; as *Muchácho de buen ingenio*, a Boy of a good Wit ; *hombre de mal Crédito*, a Man of bad Credit or Reputation ; *Maestro de Musica*, a Master of Music ; *Profesor de Theología*, a Professor of Divinity ; *la Casa de Pedro*, Peter's House ; *la ciudad de Londres*, the City of London ; *la voluntad de Dios*, the Will of God, &c.

Sometimes the Genitive Case is put alone, the former Substantive being understood by Eclipsis ; as *recebí dos Cartas, la de Pedro leí, pero no la de mi Correspondiente*, I receiv'd two Letters, I read that of Peter's, but not that of my Correspondent.

### *Of the Construction of Adjectives.*

Adjectives that signify Desire, Knowledge, Remembrance, Ignorance, or Forgetting, and such other like require a Genitive ; as *codicioso de dinero*, covetous of Money ; *ignorante de todo*, ignorant of all things, &c.

Nouns Partitives, and certain Interrogatives, with certain Nouns of Numbers, require Genitive ; as *algúno, ningúno, solo, úno, qualquier, dos, tres, Primero, segundo, &c. algúno de vosotros*, somebody of you, *el primero de vosotros*, the first of you.

*Rómulo*

*Rómulo fue el Primero de los Reyes de Roma*, Romulus was the first of the Kings of Rome; *de que se trata en Londres?* *de Guerra*, what are you about in London? or what talke you in London? of War; *de quien se habla?* *de los Turcos*, of whom speak they? of the Turks.

Adjectives signifying Fulness, Emptiness, Plenty, or Want, require *de*; as, *lleno de agua*, full of Water; *falto de juicio*, without his Senses. And sometime they require the Preposition *en*; as *abundante de todo*, or *en todo*, plentiful, or well stored with every Thing; *Rico de bienes*, or *en bienes temporales*, y *Pobre de los*, or *en los espirituales*, rich in temporal Goods, and poor in the spiritual, &c.

*Digno*, and *indigno*, require a Genitive; as, *sói digno*, or *indigno de honra*, I am worthy or unworthy of Honour. But *adornado*, *contento*, *descontento*, *alegre*, &c. will have *de* or *con*, as, *este quarto está adornado de preciosas alájas*, or *con preciosas alájas*, this Room is adorned with fine Furniture; *Contento* and *Descontento*, require likewise *en*, as, *estói contento de esto*, *con esto*, or *en esto*, I am contented with this, &c.

Adjectives, whereby is signified Profit, Disprofit, Likeness, Unlikeness, submitting or belonging to something, govern a Dative Case; as, *útil*, *provechoso*, *cómodo*, *Bueno*, *conveniente*, *gustoso*, *malo*, *rendido*; *iguál*, *desiguál*, *semejante*, *parecido*, *conforme*, &c. as, *será útil à Pedro el trabajar*, working will be profitable to Peter; and so are those of Affinity, which likewise are construed with a Genitive; as, *sói Pariente de Fulano* or *à Fulano*, I am a Relation of, or to such a one.

Add to these some of the Verbals in *ble*, as *amable*, *dable*, &c.

N. B. That the Nouns of Measure of Length, Breadth, or Thickness of any Thing, is put in the Accusative, and the Adjective in the Genitive; as, *ésta torre tiene cien piés de alto*, this Tower is one hundred Feet

R

high;

high; *éste Páño tiéne dos váras de áncbo*, this Cloth has two Yards in Breadth.

Some Adjectives govern the Ablative Case; as, *con*, or *en la cólera estói amarillo*, y *con la ira cólerico*, y *con sus amenázras temerófo*, I am pale for being angry, angry with Wrath, and with his Threatning timorous.

There are Ablatives Absolutes, (so called for their having no dependance in the Speech) as *acabáda la céna*, the Supper being finished, or having supt; *quitáda la Cáuza*, *césa el efécto*, the Cause being remov'd, the effect ceased.

The Ablative of the Instrument is made in *Spanish* with the Preposition *con*, with; as *lo hice con el Martillo*, I have done it with the Hammer.

The Words *experto*, *experimentado*, *Perito*, *versádo*, *curfádo*, &c. require an Ablative with *en*; as *versádo en libros*, versed in Books.

### *Of the Numerals.*

The Numerals may be divided into Cardinals; as, *úno*, *dos*, *tres*, &c.

Ordinals; as, *Priméro*, *segundo*, *tercéro*, &c.

Distributives, as, *de úno en úno*, *de dós en dós*, *de três en três*, &c.

Partitives, as *cada úno*, *úno y otro*, *algúno*, &c.

Collectives, as *una docéna*, *quincéna*, *veinténa*, *treinténa*, &c. a dozen and no more in *English*, they saying in its stead twenty, thirty, &c. *el quínto*, the fifth; *la diézma*, a tenth, &c.

Of Augmentation; as *lo dóble*, *lo triple*, *lo quadru-ble*, &c.

Universal, as *todo*, *ningúno*, *náda*.

Particular; as, *algúno*, *alguien*, &c.

All which govern the Genitive Case; as, *el Priméro de todos*, the first of all.



## Of the Comparatives.

The Comparatives *mas*, more ; *ménos*, less, govern *que*, than, in which the force of the Comparison lies ; *el todo es Mayor que la parte*, the Whole, or the Compound is greater or bigger than the Part ; *su Malicia es peor que la de el diáblo*, it's Malice is worse than that of the Devil's ; and so in *mejór*, *menór*. Now for the Regular Comparatives ; as, *es mas sábio que Salomón*, is wiser than Solomon ; *es mas Hermósa que Rachél*, is more beautiful than Rachel ; *es ménos prudente que su Hermáno*, is less prudent than his Brother.

They govern likewise *deloque*, than what ; as, *es mas Docto deloque se piénsa*, is more learned than what it is thought ; *es mas afortunádo deloque merece*, is more lucky than what he deserves.

When the Articles *el*, *la*, *lo* are put before *mas*, then it governs the Genitive ; as, *es el mas discreto de los hombres*, he is the discreetest of Men ; *la mas afable de todas las Mugéres*, the most affable of all Women ; *lo mas selecto de todo*, the most select of all, of every Thing.

They govern also the Preposition *entre* ; as, *es la mas Hermósa entre todas las Mugéres*, is the most beautiful among all Women ; *es el mas Docto entre todos los del Colégio*, is the most learned among all those of the College. Some Spanish Writers put *de* before *entre* ; as, *es el mas señaládo de entre sus condiscípulos*, is the most signilized from among his School-Fellows. By which the curious may observe the several Constructions that the Comparatives will bear.

The Examples with the Article before *mas*, are called Relative Superlatives, and the following absolute or independing ; which end in *íssimo* *íssima* *érrimo-ma*, &c. as *prudéntíssimo*, most discreet ;

discreet ; *próximo*, nearest ; *minimo*, the least, the smallest ; *acérrimo*, most vehement, most obstinate. When the Adverb *múi*, very, is before the Positive, then the Positive is made Superlative ; as

Doctíffimo, } *Múi Docto*, *very learned*.

Prudentíffimo, } *Múi Prudente*, *very prudent*, &c.

## C H A P. III.

### *Of* P R O N O U N S.

**N**OS, and *Vos*, though in reality they signify the same as *Nosotros*, and *Vosotros*, that is, We, and Ye ; yet they differ in the use, and in that the two latter have the Feminine Gender, *Nosótras* and *Vosótras*, which the other have not, being always the same in all Genders. *Nosotros* is in all common use, as *We* with us ; but *Nos*, is generally used by a single Person, as a Sovereign, or the like, where *We* is also employed in *English*. But sometimes *Nos* signifies *Us*, when it follows a Verb, as *dádnos de comér*, give us to eat ; *guiádnos a la cása*, lead us to the House ; and after *no*, as *no nos maltráteys*, do not abuse us.

*Vos*, is also apply'd to a single Person, that is in speaking to inferiors, or between familiar Friends, to avoid the word *tu*, thou ; which is too gross in *Spanish*, as has been said before, and to save the respect of *V. M.* also above spoken of ; thus they say, *vos os engañáis*, you are mistaken : and so before Verbs Plural, as *vos amáis*, you love ; *vos perdéis*, you lose ; but in the other Cases the *v* is cut off ; as *yo os dare*, I will give you ; *el os llevará*,

*llevará*, he will carry you ; and the same when it follows the Verb ; as *quitáos de abí*, get you from thence ; and so in many other Cases.

*Note*, That *Los*, *Las*, are construed with the first and second Persons of the Plural ; as, *losque somos Christiános, vivámos como táles*, We that are Christians, let us live as such. *Dícen los Apostoles, que lasque somos casádas obedescámos à los Marídos*, The Apostles say, that we married should obey the Husbands : *Losque fuéredes Christiános, observád y cumplíd los Preceptos de Díos*, you that are Christian, keep and accomplish the Commandments of God, &c.

*El*, and *Ella* have a Dative Case of a different Termination, which is contrary to the general *Spanish Rule* ; for they sometimes make *le* and *les*, and these two are only used, when they imply something of Acquisition, and denote the Person receiving ; as, *Vi a Pédro y díle*, or *le di sus cártas*, I saw *Peter* and gave him his Letters. *Vide mis amigos, y comunicuéles mis cuidádos*, I saw my Friends, and imparted my Affairs to them ; where it appears in both places, there is an imparting, or giving. In these Cases there is no using of *lo*, or *los* for *le*, or *les*, because it would breed Confusion, as will appear in this Instance, *Los que perdiéron sus haziéndas, piden a los juezes, que los abórquen los ladrónes*, They that have been robb'd of their Goods, require of the Judges that they hang the Thieves. Now were it said, *Piden a los juézes que los abórken los ladrónes*, there would be no deciding whether they requir'd that the Thieves should be hang'd, or that the Thieves should hang them.

*Mi*, *ti*, *si*, are used after Prepositions ; as *a mi*, to me ; *pára ti*, for you ; *por si*, by himself ; but after *con*, with, they must all have the Syllable *go* added to them ; as *con mígo*, with me ; *con tígo*, with you ; *con sígo*, with himself.

*Me, te, se,* are join'd to Verbs, and stand for the Dative, and Accusative Cases ; as, *díxome*, he told me ; *servírte*, to serve you ; *amárse*, to love himself.

They may also be placed before the Verb, provided a Nominative Case is before them ; as *yo me iré*, I will be gone ; *tu te irás*, you will be gone ; *el se irá*, he will be gone ; sometimes the Nominative Case is not expressed, but always understood ; as *mé áma*, he loves me ; where *el* is understood, as *el*, he ; or *Juan*, John, or *Pédro*, Peter.

Observe here, that *me, te, se*, sometimes are us'd in the Dative by the Figure Pleonasm ; as, *ò señor ! y à donde os me llévan ?* O Lord ! where are they going to carry you from me ? *Quien te se me cubrió de dolor !* Who is he that came here to cover or fill you up with Grief ? instead of *quien te cubrió de dolor ?*

*Se* before the third Person of a Verb, generally signifies what we express by *it is*, or *they* ; as, *se díze*, it is said, or reported, or they say, or report ; for if it be used to signify himself, as has been observed above, it is usual to add *a sí*, or *a sí mismo*, which denotes himself ; as, *se áma a sí mismo*, he loves himself.

*La, le, lo, las, les, los, me, te, se, nos, and vos,* are frequently joined to Verbs ; as, *oiréla*, I will hear her ; *diréle*, I will tell him ; *harélo*, I will do it ; *llevárélos*, I will carry them ; *escriviréles*, I will write to them ; *despedirélos*, I will dismiss them ; *iréme*, I will be gone ; *véte*, be you gone ; *váyase*, let him be gone ; *passéémonos*, let us walk ; but in joining *vos* to the Verb, the *v* is always cut off ; as, *amáros*, to love you, not *amárvos* ; and if the Verb be the third Person Plural of the Imperative Mood, the last Letter of it which is always *d*, must be also cut off ; as, *calentáos*, warm yourselves, and so in others.

When *le, lo, las, los*, are joined to the Infinitive Mood, the last *r* of it is sometimes changed into *l*, for the softer Sound, as for *dezírle*, say *dezílle* ; but this is no general Rule.

*Note,*

*Note,* That when a Relative is referred to a Noun Masculine, then we make use of *le*, when to a Feminine of *la*, when to a whole Sentence or Clause of *lo* in the Neuter.

*Mío, tuyo, suyo, nuestro, vuestro, and mismo,* have the Article added to them, when they are spoken absolutely, and without a Substantive; as, *lo mío*, what is mine; *lo tuyo*, what is thine. Unless they are spoken in Answer to a Question; as if it be asked, *Cúyo es éste cavállo?* whose Horse is this? the Answer is, *mío, tuyo, or suyo*, mine, yours, or his.

*Cúyo* is naturally an Interrogation; as, *cúyo es ésto?* Whose is this? But it is often us'd to signify the Person a Thing belongs to; as *El hombre cúyo es éste cavállo*, the Man whose Horse this is, or to whom this Horse belongs.

*Mi, tu, su*, Plur. *mis, tus, sus*, are us'd for *mío, tuyo, suyo*; but always before a Substantive; as, *mi casa*, my House; *tu libro*, your Book; *su cara*, his Face; *mis guantes*, my Gloves; *tus espuelas*, your Spurs; *sus papéles*, his Papers.

*Este, ésse, aquél*, are all Demonstratives; but *éste* denotes a Thing near the Person speaking; *éссе*, a Thing rather near him that is spoken to; and *aquél*, that which is at a Distance from both; as, *éste cuchillo*, this Knife; *éссе Pláto*, that Dish; *aquél perro*, that Dog. The same is to be understood of the Feminine Gender of these Words, *Esta, éssa, aquélla*, and of the Neuter, *Esto, éssó, aquéllo*; and so of the Plural Number of them, *Estos, éssos, aquéllos, éstas, éssas, aquéllas*. *Aquél* pronounced with energy, stands for the first Person Singular, and *aquéllos* for the first Plural; as, *yo aquél que en los pasádos tiempos cante*, &c. I he who in former Times sung, &c.

The Relatives, or Interrogatives. *Quál*, sometimes is interrogatory, as *Quál déllos?* which of them? and sometimes Comparative, as *Quál es el veráno, tal el inviérno*, Such as the Summer is, such

is the Winter ; and sometimes it is distributive, as *Quál cóge el óro, quál la pláta*, One gathers the Gold, another the Silver.

*Que tal*, differs herein from *Quál*, that the latter asks the particular Person, or Thing, and is *Which of them ?* whereas the other questions the Quality of the Person, or Thing, as *Que tal es éste cavállo ?* What sort of Horse is that ?

*Que* is also an Interrogation, as *Que dizes ?* What do you say ? It is also Demonstrative, as *El Hómbre que hábla*, The Man that speaks. It also signifies *than* ; as, *Mas vále hablar poco, que hablar mal*, It is better to say little than to talk amiss. It is sometimes in the Nature of an Exclamation, as *Que Desgrácia !* What a Misfortune ! *Que linda mugér !* What a fine Woman ! *Que*, the same as *that*, as *que yo váya*, that I may go ; *Qué* for *porqué*, why, because ; as, *hazlo tu, qué yo no puédo*, do it thou, because I can't. Observe that *áque* is not one Spanish Word, because *à* is a Preposition, and denotes *to*, and then is not an Adverb, for *à que*, is the same as *to what End, to what Purpose* ; as *à que vinó éste hombre !* we understand, *à que fin*, to what end came this Man ? *à que juego perdió su dinero ?* At what, or at which Game did you loose your Money ? And always is a Relative, the same as *quál*, or *cúyo*, &c.

## C H A P. IV.

### *Of* V E R B S.

**P**ROPERLY speaking, the Spanish Verbs have only these following simple Tenses, viz. the Present, the Preterimperfect, the Preterperfect, and the Future, of the Indicative Mood ; the Imperative Mood ; and the Present, Preterimperfect, and Future, of the Optative or Subjunctive ; as

Indicative,

Indicative,

<i>Present.</i>	'Amo,	<i>I love.</i>
<i>Preterimperf.</i>	Amába,	<i>I did love.</i>
<i>Preterperfect.</i>	Amé,	<i>I have loved.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Amaré,	<i>I shall, or will love.</i>

Imperative,

'Ama,	<i>Do you love.</i>
-------	---------------------

Optative and Subjunctive.

<i>Present.</i>	Pléga a Díos que yo áme,	<i>God grant I love.</i>
<i>Preterim.</i>	Amára, amáffe, or amaría,	<i>Would to God I did love.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Amáre,	<i>When I shall love.</i>

Infinitive,

<i>Present.</i>	Amár,	<i>To love.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Amándo,	<i>Loving.</i>
<i>Participle Passive.</i>	Amádo,	<i>Loved.</i>

All the rest are formed by Circumlocution, putting several Words together to supply the Defect of such Tenses, as it has been said before.

And altho' there has been said enough of this Part of Speech in Part II. yet as the Verbs are the principal and most essential Part of a Grammar, I think it proper to observe here what none of the Grammarians has taken notice of before, in order to remove the several Difficulties that start to Beginners.

1. Verbs Substantives, and certain Passive Verbs, as *ser, ser llamádo, ser Nombrádo*, with other like will have such Case after them, as they have before them, that is the Nominative Case; as, *Pédro es hombre*, Peter is a Man; *yo me llamo Júan*, I am call'd John, &c. all Verbs of Gesture, that is those that betoken bodily moving, going, resting, or doing; as also all the Verbs that have the Word that goeth before, and the Word that comes after, both belonging to one Thing, require the Nominative after them; as, *Pédro vá cójo*, Peter goeth lame; *el Rey duerme segúro*, the King sleepeth void of Care, &c. Also the Verb of the Infinitive Mood has

has the same Cases, when Verbs of wishing and the like come near them ; as, *Pédro desea ser santo*, Peter wisheth to be Holy : *Yo antes quisiéra ser Rico, que parecerlo*, I had rather be rich, than to be accounted so, &c.

2. Of the Auxiliary Verbs. *Havér* governs the Accusative ; as, *Pédro há el libro*, Peter hath the Book. *Estár*, when it signifies to be in a Place, requires the Ablative with *en* ; but when to be with somebody, an Ablative with *con* ; as, *estaré v. md en su casa* ! will you be at home ? *Yo estaré en la Lónja*, I shall be on the Change ; *estói con v. md*, I am with you ; here *con* is used for shortness, because the meaning is, *Yo estói en compañía de v. md*, I am in your Company. Observe this Phrase, *estár en ésto, en ello*, &c. *está v. md. en ésto* ? do you remember of that ? have you observed, or taken notice of that ? are you in the same Mind, &c. *Ser* when it signifies Possession, or pertaining to a Thing, will have the Genitive ; (except when the Pronouns *mío, túyo, súyo, nuéstro, vuéstro* are to be us'd, because then they are in the Nominative ; as, *este libro es mío*, &c.) as, *éste Péine es de mi Muger*, this Comb belongs to my Wife. But when it denotes the Property of a Thing, it has a Dative after it ; as, *ésto es para mi*, this is for me ; *es à Pedro*, it belongs to Peter, &c. Note, That *mí, tí sí*, seldom can be put in the Genitive by themselves, or without a Substantive ; tho' they may in the Dative ; as, *es de mi Hermáno*, it belongs to my Brother ; you may say, *es pára mi, para tí, para sí*, is for me, for you, for him : except *de tí ò Muger digo ésto*, of you O my Wife I say this ; *como háblas tan mal de mi* ? why do you speak so bad of me, &c.

#### *Of the Genitive.*

Verbs signifying Grief, Compassion, Remembrance, Want, Forgetting, &c. will have a Genitive ; as, *Pesame de la Muerte de su Padre*, I am sorry



forry for the Death of your Father : *Me compadéſco de ſus hijas*, I pity his Daughters ; *Careſco, neceſſito de dinéros*, I want Money. And thus *de* is put before the Thing ſpoke in the Speech, *es menéſter acordarſe de lo que me díxo*, it is neceſſary to remember of what you ſaid to me : *Me olvidé de eſto*, I forgot that.

The Reciprocals of geering, boaſting, and diſtrusting, govern the Genitive, as *vanagloriarſe, picarſe, deſconfiarſe*, &c.

### Of the Dative.

Active Verbs have either Dative or Accuſative ; as, *conóſco eſta Létra*, I know this Writing ; *conofco à Don António ſu Amigo*, I know Don Anthony your Friend.

The Prepoſitions of the Dative are *à* or *pára*.

To this Rule of the Dative belong the Verbs, *Jugar*, to play ; as, *Júego à los náipes*, I play at Cards.

*Obedecér, deſobedecér*, &c. *Obedeſco al Rey*, I obey the King.

*Mandár*, when it ſignifies to command an Army, &c. requires the Accuſative ; when other Things, the Dative ; as, *el Dúque de Montemár Mandó el Ejército Eſpañól en Itália*, the Duke of Montemar commanded the Spaniſh Army in Italy ; *el Rey mandó al Embaxadór de Venécia de ſalir de Londres en tres días*, the King ordered the Venetian Ambaſſador to go out of London in three Days.

*Ir*, to go ; as, *vói à Roma*, I go to Rome.

*Aſſiſtir*, to help or aſſiſt ; as, *aſſiſtiré à Pédro*, I will help or aſſiſt Peter.

*Saludár*, to ſalute ; as, *ſalúdó à Fuláno*, he ſaluted ſuch a one. *Hablar*, to ſpeak ; *llamár*, to call ; *ſatisfacér*, to ſatiſfy ; *ſervír*, to ſerve, *favorecér*, to favour ; *deſafiár*, to chalenge ; *absolvér*, to absolve ; *aconſejár*, to give Advice ; *Amenazár*, to threaten : The Verbs of pleaſing, diſpleaſing, granting, deny-  
ing,

ing, pardoning, and so all manner of Verbs put acquiescively, that is, with these Tokens *to*, or *for*, after them, will have a Dative Case of the Person, and often the Accusative of the Thing.

The Impersonals *acontecér*, *avenír*, *convenír*, *importár*, *pertenecér*, *placér*, and the like to these, will have often two Datives of Person; as, *à mi me aconteció*, it happened to me; *à tí te conviene*, it is convenient for you; *no le importa à el*, it does not concern him, &c.

### *The Accusative.*

The *Latin* Verbs, which govern the Accusative of the Thing, and the Dative of the Person, govern generally the same in Spanish; as, *restituí al César lo que pertenece al César*, render ye to Cesar what is belonging to Cesar; *dí el libro al Impresor*, I gave the Book to the Printer, &c.

Verbs of asking, teaching, arraying; also most of the Verbs Transitives, viz. all such as have after them an Accusative Case of the Doer, or Sufferer, whether they be Active, or Commune, and sometimes the Verbs Neuters, will have an Accusative of the Thing; as, *Gózo salud*, I enjoy Health; *pido esta Gracia, ruégo este favor*, I ask this Favour; *tocar el Organo*, to play on the Organ.

Generally all the Active Verbs require an Accusative or Dative; as, *amár à Dios, hacer bien*, to do good; *Guardar los Mandamientos de Dios*, to keep God's Commandments; *descubrir la verdad*, to discover the Truth; *ganar el pleito*, to get the Suit of Law.

*Ser*, to be; sometimes governs an Accusative, in the Infinitive; as, *es bueno ser hombre honrado*, it is good to be an honest Man.

Of the Ablative.

All Passive Verbs, and generally most of the Reciprocals, will have the Ablative with *de* ; as, *fóí amado de mi Pádre*, I am loved of my Father ; *me levanto de la Cáma*, I get up from the Bed ; except *acostárse*, *recostrárse*, *sentarse*, which have the Ablative with *en*.

The Price of a Thing is put after Verbs in the Accusative with *por* ; as, *lo compré por un péso*, I bought it for a piece of Eight ; *lo vendí por tres reales*, or *à tres reales la yárda*, I sell it at three Reals per Yard.

Verbs of Plenty, Filling, Emptying, Loading, or Unloading, will have an Ablative ; as, *abúndo de riquezas*, I abound of Riches ; *te llenaré de opróbrios*, I will load you with Injuries, &c.

Verbs that betoken Receiving, or Distance, or taking away, will have an Ablative ; as, *recibí mil pésos de Pédro*, I received one thousand Pieces of Eight of Peter : *Kensington dista tres millas de Londres*, Kensington is three Miles from London.

Verbs of arguing, quarrelling, fighting, &c. require the Ablative with *con* ; as, *arguir*, *reñir*, *peleár*. The Verbs that govern in *Latin* these Prepositions *a*, *ex*, *ab*, will have in *Spanish* an Ablative with *de*, if *cum*, *con* ; *pro*, *por* ; *post*, *después* ; *usque*, *hasta*, &c.

Observe at the last, that the following Rules are retained by the *Spanish* Authors, for the Verbs, *viz*.

1. If the Word governed by the Verb signifies a thing animate, generally it is put in the Dative Case ; as, *vóí à ver à mi Padre*, I go to see my Father, *ámo à mi Mádre*, I love my Mother.

The Verbs of Motion to a Place, always govern the Dative ; as, *vóí à Madrid*, I go to Madrid : the Verbs of Motion, from a Place, govern the Ablative with *de* ; as, *vengo de España*, I come from Spain ; if the Action, Motion, or Passion is through a Thing

a Thing or Place, then the Verbs govern the Accusative with *por* ; as, *vendré por Paris*, I shall come by way of Paris ; *sufrió por v. md.*, I suffered for you, &c.

3. To express a Thing indefinitely, the Spaniards always use the Accusative Case ; as *trábigo pan y vino* ; as in Latin, *affero panem & vinum*.

4. The Verbs *vér*, to see ; *mirár*, to look ; differ ; because *vér* requires Accusative ; as, *vér el Palacio*, to see the Palace ; and *mirár*, Dative and Accusative, as *Míro el juégo* ; *míro à los que juégan*, but when they signify to look for one, then they govern the Accusative with *por* ; as *Estói mirándo por v. md.*, I am looking for you.

*Of the Particles requisite to some Tenses.*

5. The Present Tense of the Subjunctive, &c. and the first and second Preterimperfects of the said Mood, are construed with *que*, *paraque*, *porque*, *aunque*, *bienque*, *oxala*, *supuestoque*, *puésto que*, *da doque*, *a fin que*, *conque*, *puesque*, &c. as,

*Es buéno que yo váya*, it is good, that I go.

*Paraque el venga*, To the end that he may come.

*Porque tu aprendieffes à orár*, for that you might learn how to pray.

*Aunque el venga*, &c. altho he come, &c.

*Afin que Aprendiéra*, ò *aprendieffe*, to the end that he might learn, &c.

The impersonal Verbs generally govern the Subjunctive with *que*, but with this Distinction ; that when the impersonal is in the Present Tense, or Future of the Indicative Mood, then they always govern the present of the Subjunctive Mood ; but when the Impersonal (or any other Verb taken impersonally) is in any of the Preterits of the Indicative, then it governs the Imperfect, the Perfect, the Plus-perfect,

perfect, or the Future of the Subjunctive, according to the meaning of the Speech ; as,

*Conviene* or *Convendrá*, *que el Réy en Persona Cománde el Ejército*, it is convenient, or it will be convenient, that the King in Person do command the Army.

*Convino* *que el Príncipe fuéſſe con el*, it was convenient that the Prince should go with him.

The Present Subjunctive is likewise construed with the Particles *por ſutil*, *por Docto*, *por ſábio*, *por pequeño*, *por Grande*, &c. but *por* ſtands there for *aunque*, although ; as,

*Qualquiera coſa coſa por pequeña que ſea háce ſu papél en el mundo*, any thing, although it be little or ſmall, does ſome ſervice in the World, that is, ſerves for ſome Thing or Purpoſe in the World.

An Imperative often requires the Preſent, the firſt and ſecond Preterimperfect, and the Future of the Subjunctive Mood, as, *ſea loque ſea*, let it be as it will, altho' it be ſo : *ſea loque fuera* or *fuéſſe*, let the Thing be, or happen as it would ; *ſea loque fuere*, happen what it ſhall happen, at all Events.

All the Tenſes of the Subjunctive may be conſtrued with *luégoque*, *quando*, *ſi*, *como*, *aunque* ; but *pléga à Dios*, and *ſea Dios ſervido*, require only the Preſent Subjunctive ; and *plugiera* or *plugiéſſe*, *fuera* or *fuéſſe* *Dios ſervido* may be conſtrued with all the Tenſes of the Subjunctive, except the Preſent Tenſe.

The third Imperfect of the Subjunctive Mood requires *ſi*, *quando*, *aunque*, *ò y como*, *de guſto*, *con guſto*, *de muy buena* *ò mala gana*, *ò quan de gana*, *por ventúra*, *acáſo*, &c.

*Pues*, *pueſque*, *aunque*, *oomo*, *quando*, *luégo*, may be conſtrued with all the Tenſes of the Indicative Mood ; as, *quando vine del campo*, *caí del caballo*, *pues perdí el eſtríbo*, when I came from the Country I fell from the Horſe, becauſe I loſt the Stirrup, &c.

The third Imperfect of the Subjunctive Mood is sometimes construed by Circumlocution, viz. with the Infinitive and the Words, *hía, hías, hía, &c.* as *hablarte hía* (for *hablaría*), *escribirle hía por el correo* (for *escribirla*), *abrazarla hía* (for *abrazaría*) ; and the Reader will find, that if the Pronoun and the Letter *b* are taken away, it remains that Tense ; as, if from *hablarte hía*, *te* and *b* is taken, there it will remain *hablaría*. And although some Authors are of Opinion that *hablarte hía*, stands for *hablarte iba*, I was going to speak to you ; yet Father *Valéra* observes that that manner of speaking is a Circumlocution proper to the third Preterimperfect, and often used in the *Spanish* Poetry, adding *b* to *ía* by the Figure Epenthesis, to denote that the Accent should lie on the *í*, as *hacerte hía bien, si fueses bueno*, (*hacerte biá* for *baría*) he would do good for you, if you was good.

The second Future of the Indicative Mood, which is made by the Auxiliary Verb *haber*, is construed with Elegancy with the Particles *me, te, se, le, la, lo, les, las, los*, at the End of the Infinitive ; as, *Guiarme has* for *me guiarás*, or rather for *has de guiarme*, you must guide me ; *daré mi hija en casamiento* for *be de darte*, or *te daré mi hija en casamiento*, I will or must give you my Daughter in Marriage ; *daré la be*, for *be de dártela*, or *te la daré*, I will give her to you.

7. The *English* Tongue has one Sign to the Infinitive, viz. *to* ; and in *Spanish* there is none for the Infinitive, as Infinitive, as *Amár*, to love ; *Leer*, to read ; *oír*, to hear : Altho' there are several Particles used in *Spanish* before the Infinitive, they are governed by other preceeding Verbs or Nouns Substantives, and these are *a, para, de, con, en, por, basta, despuésde*, and *el* when the Infinitive serves as a Nominative to another Verb.

## C H A P. V.

## Of Prepositions.

**T**HE Cases to be given to some Parts of Speech, being one principal Part of Syntax, and there being properly no Cases in *Spanish*, as there are in *Latin*, we will therefore treat of the Prepositions, which answer the End of the *Latin* Cases.

When the Noun in Speech denotes the Person possessing, or signifies whose a Thing is, we always make use of the Preposition *de*; as, '*Esto libro es de Juan*, This is *John's* Book; unless we use the positive Degree of that same Person, making it an Adjective to the Thing possessed; as, '*Esta ley es de Dios* or *divina*, This is God's Law, or divine Law.

This Use of the Positive is so necessary, when the Possession belongs to any of the Pronouns, *yo*, *tu*, *se*, that we must always say, '*Esta Casa es mía*, *tuya*, *suya*, This House is mine, yours, his; not *de mi*, *ti*, or *si*. But they may be used when they do not denote Possession; as, *acuérdate de mi*, remember me; *duélete de ti*, have Compassion on your self; *dió buena cuenta de si*, he gave a good Account of himself.

The Preposition *de* is also applied to the Place from whence we come; as, *Vengo de Palacio*, I come from Court.

When the Preposition denotes Acquisition, or the Person for whom a Thing is, we use the Prepositions *a*, or *pára*; as, *dáale a Juan ésta carta*, give *John* this Letter; '*Esta carta es pára Juan*, this Letter is for *John*. Except here the Terminations, *me*, *te*, *se*, of the Pronouns *yo*, *tu*, *el*, which though they

denote Acquisition, do not admit of these Prepositions ; as, *dióme el dinero*, he gave me the Money.

They are also applied to the Place we are going to, whether proper or appellative ; as, *Vói a Madrid, de dónde partiré pára Róma*, I am going to *Madrid*, from whence I will set out for *Rome*.

*A* is also applied to the Noun Passive ; as, *Pédro áma a Juán*, *Peter* loves *John* ; but when the Noun is an Appellative, it is sometimes used, and sometimes omitted ; as, *El maéstro enseña los Discípulos*, or *a los Discípulos*, the Master teaches the Scholars.

The Preposition *Con*, before *mi*, *ti*, *si*, requires, that the Syllable *go* should be added to them ; as, *ven conmigo*, come with me ; *iré contigo*, I will go with you, *Pédro es áspero consigo*, *Peter* is harsh to himself. When *Con* is before an Infinitive, then the Verb is turned into a Gerund in *English* ; as, *con amár*, with loving.

Prepositions in Composition are frequent in *Spanish*, that is, joined to other Words and made one with them. These are commonly *a*, and *en*, *em*, &c. as, *Dinéro*, is Money, thence *hómbre adinerádo*, a money'd Man ; and we see the like in the *English*, where adding *ed* to Money makes the same as the *Spanish a* : But this does not hold in most other Words : from *Noche*, Night, *anochecer*, to grow Night, which the *English* does not express without such Circumlocutions. *Vide*, the second Part, and the Remarks.





CH A P. VI.

*Of Adverbs, Conjunctions, and Interjections.*

VERY little need be said of these three Parts of Speech more than has been observed before.

As for those Adverbs, that are formed by adding *ménte* to Adjectives, as is done in *English*, by the Addition of the Syllable *ly*; when two of this Sort follow one another, the two additional Syllables, *ménte*, of the first of them, are always cut off; thus, *Caminár segúra, y alegreménte*, To travel safely, and merrily.

A Negative Adverb joined to any other Negative Part of Speech, does not make an Affirmative, as in *Latin*, and other Languages; for, *No véo a nádie*, is, I see No-body; *No te hálla ninguno*, No-body can find you; nor can the same Words be taken negatively without both the Negatives; for, it can not properly be said in *Spanish*, *Véo a nádie*, for, I see No-body; but if we would avoid the two Negatives, we must say, *No véo a persóna algúna*, I see not any Person; *Nádie te balla*, No-body can find you.

Thus, *No quiéro náda*, is, I will have Nothing; but, *un no náda*, is next to Nothing; as, *Fáltale un no náda del péso*, It wants as much as Nothing of the Weight. Notwithstanding which, the learned in *Spain* are of a contrary Opinion; and do rightly say, that in the *Spanish*, as well as in *Latin*, two Negative Parts of Speech make an Affirmative; as, *No náda, algo*, something, &c.

*No*, is also sometimes used by way of Interrogation; as, *No vendréis por acá?* Will not you come this Way?

The Conjunction *Tambien*, also, and *Tampóco*, neither, are used thus ; *El va, y yo iré también*, He goes, and I will go also ; *El no quiere, ni yo tampóco*, He will not, nor I neither.

Of Interjections, there is no more to add to what has been said already.

### *Of Figurative Construction.*

**T**H E R E are two Sorts of Construction, the Proper, or Simple ; and the Improper, or Figurative. The first of them is that which in all Points is agreeable to the Rules of Grammar, which has been sufficiently spoken of before. The Figurative is a Way of speaking that departs in some respect from the established Rules, and yet is admitted and received, because in common Use, not only among the Illiterate, but also among the Learned.

What little there is of this Sort in the *Spanish* Tongue most necessary to be known, shall be comprehended in a few Lines.

The Paragoge, a Figure which adds some Letter, or Syllable at the End of a Word, is now quite out of Use in *Spanish*, but may be found in some old Poems, especially common Songs and Ballads, where they sometimes, to make up a Verse, say, *Amóre* for *Amór*, Love ; *Cantáre*, for *Cantár*, a Song, or to sing : But these superfluous Additions are now, as has been said, quite laid aside, and only found in the Verb, *Sói*, and *Vói*, from the Verbs *Ser*, to be, and *Ir*, to go ; and therefore according to the general Rule of *Spanish* Verbs, ought to be *So*, and *Vo*, as they were used in former Ages, but of latter Times the *i* has been added for the better Sound.

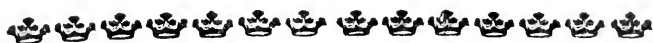
The Syncope is the cutting off some Letter, in the Middle of a Word ; as, *yo vía*, I saw, *tu vías*, you saw ; for *veía*, *veías*. The same is frequently used in the second Person Plural of the Preterimperfect Tense of the Optative, and Subjunctive Moods, of Verbs ; as *Anduviésséis*, for *Anduviéssedeis* ; *Andaríais*, for *Andaríadeis* ; *Anduviérais*, for *Anduviéradeis*, &c.

The Apocope, is cutting off a Letter at the End of a Word ; as, *Mas val prevenir, que ser prevenido*, It is better to prevent, than to be prevented ; where we have *mas val*, for *mas vále*. The same may be seen in other Words, but now little used.

Metathesis, is Inverting the natural Order of the Letters in a Word ; as, some are apt to say, *bacéldo*, do it ; *decíldo*, say it ; *quitáldo*, take it away ; instead of *bacédlo*, *decídlo*, *quitádlo*, which are the properest and most polite Way of speaking, and therefore the other Way not to be imitated.

There is another Figurative Construction, called Eclipsis, when several Words are left out of a Sentence, and to be understood ; as, *Buénos dias*, Good-morrow, where is to be understood, *os dé Díos*, God give you ; *buén Viáge*, a good Voyage ; *sub-intelligitur*, *os dé Díos*, God give you ; and so in many other Cases, which are common in all Languages, and therefore do not need to have much said of them.

The same may be said of many other Figures, which if all were to be mentioned, would rather tire, than inform the Reader ; and it would be likewise superfluous to mention here, and to burden the Memory with the Rules of the Prosody, which are the same as those of the Latin, and no ways necessary to learn the *Spanish* Language, besides what has been said in the Orthography.



## Some General Observations for forming the *Spanish* from the *Latin*.

*Latin Substantives which have their Ablative in tate become Spanish by changing tate into dád, laying the Accent as in the Latin, as,*

<i>Latin</i>	{	Charitate Fidelitate Obscuritate Voluntate Infinitate Magnanimitate	{	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Caridád Fidelidád Obscuridád Voluntád Infinidád Magnanimidád
--------------	---	--	---	----------------	---	---

*Many Latin Words beginning with pl change it into ll in Spanish ; as,*

<i>Latin</i>	{	Plenus Pluvia Plaga Plorare Planctus	{	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Lléno Llúvia Llága Llorár Llánto
--------------	---	--	---	----------------	---	--

But this is nothing of a general Rule, for very many *Latin* Words beginning with *pl* retain the same in *Spanish* ; as, *Plánta*, a Plant ; *Placér*, Delight ; *Plébe*, the Multitude ; *Plúma*, a Feather, &c.

*Latin*

*Latin Words beginning with f, in Spanish often change it into H, thus*

<i>Latin</i>	{	Facere	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Hacer
		Faba			Hába
		Falco			Halcón
		Farina			Harína
		Formosus			Hermófo
		Ferrum			Hiérro
		Fervor			Hervór
		Furnus			Hórno

*Latin Substantives ending in one in the Ablative, become Spanish by taking off the last Vowel, as*

<i>Latin</i>	{	Educatione	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Educación
		Religione			Religión
		Congregatione			Congregación
		Generatione			Generación

Where note, that they change *t* into *c*, as above.

<i>Latin</i>	{	Sermone	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Sermón
		Cicerone			Cicerón
		Platone			Platon

*Latin Substantives ending in o in the Ablative, are true Spanish, as*

<i>Latin</i>	{	Ornamento	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Ornáméto
		Experimento			Experiménto
		Exemplo			Exémpló
		Argumento			Arguménto
		Antidoto			Antídoto

*Latin Adjectives ending in lis, in Spanish cast away is, thus*

<i>Latin</i>	{	Materialis	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Materiál
		Finalis			Finál
		Facilis			Fácil
		Debilis			Débil

*Latin Adjectives ending in us, are made Spanish by their Ablative in o, as*

<i>Latin</i>	{	Malus	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Málo
		Bonus			Buénó
		Siccus			Séco
		Humidus			Húmido

*Latin Verbs become Spanish by only cutting off the last e, thus*

<i>Latin</i>	{	Castigare	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Castigár
		Amare			Amár
		Tenere			Tenér
		Perdere			Perdér
		Sentire			Sentír

It would be endless to pretend to shew all the Affinity between the *Spanish* and the *Latin*, the main Body of the former being derived from the latter, with only such small Difference as may easily be conceived from what has been said above,





A

## VOCABULARY,

CONTAINING

Such Words as most frequently occur in common Use, and are therefore most necessary to be first known by Learners; as, The Parts of the Body, Household-Furniture; Names of Beasts, Birds, and Fishes; the Service at Table; Fruit, Trees, Cloathing, and many other Sorts, all under their respective Heads.



*The Parts of Human Body.*

*Pártes del Cuérpo Humáno.*

- |                                     |                                     |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <b>L</b> A cabéza, <i>the head.</i> | Las fiénes, <i>the temples.</i>     |
| El célebro, <i>the brain.</i>       | La oréja, <i>the ear.</i>           |
| El cogóte, <i>the part</i>          | La ternílla de la oréja, <i>the</i> |
| <i>behind, where the</i>            | <i>gristle of the ear.</i>          |
| <i>head and neck join.</i>          | El huéco de la oréja, <i>the</i>    |
| La coronílla, <i>the crown of</i>   | <i>hollow of the ear.</i>           |
| <i>the head.</i>                    | La téla del oído, <i>the drum</i>   |
| La molléra, <i>the mould of</i>     | <i>of the ear.</i>                  |
| <i>the head.</i>                    | La céja, <i>the eyebrow.</i>        |
| La frén-te, <i>the forehead.</i>    | El párpádo, <i>the eyelid.</i>      |

Las

*The Parts of Human Body.*

## Partes del Cuerpo Humano.

- Las pestiñas, *the eye-lashes.* La núa, *the nape of the*  
 El lagrimál, *or la cuénca* neck.  
 del ójo, *the corner of the* La gargáta, *the throat.*  
 eye. El gaznáte, *the gullet.*  
 El bláncó del ójo, *the white* El séno, *the bosom.*  
*of the eye.* La téta, *a pap.*  
 La niña del ójo, *the eye-* El pézon de la téta, *the*  
*ball, or sight of the eye.* nipple *of the breast.*  
 Téla del ójo, *the film of* El pécho, *the breast.*  
*the eye.* El estómago, *the stomach.*  
 Niervo óptico, *the optic* Las costillas, *the ribs.*  
*nerve.* La barríga, *the belly.*  
 La naríz, *the nose.* El omblígo, *the navel.*  
 Las ventánas de la naríz, La ingle, *the groyn.*  
*the nostrils.* El brazo, *the arm.*  
 La ternílla de la naríz, *the* El códo, *the elbow.*  
*gristle of the nose.* El sobáco, *the armpit.*  
 La púnta de la naríz, *the* La máno, *the hand.*  
*tip of the nose.* La muñéca, *the wrist.*  
 La mexílla, *or el carrílló,* La palma de la máno, *the*  
*the cheek.* palm *of the hand.*  
 La bóca, *the mouth.* Los dédos, *the fingers.*  
 La enzía, *the gum.* Las juntúras, *or juntas de*  
 Los diéntes, *the fore teeth.* los dédos, *the joints of*  
 Las muélas, *the grinders.* *the fingers.*  
 Los colmílló, *the eye teeth.* La yéma del dédo, *the*  
 La léngua, *the tongue.* brawn *of the finger.*  
 El paladár, *the palate.* El pulgár, *the thumb.*  
 La quixáda, *the jaw.* El dédo índice, *the fore-*  
 La bárba, *the chin, or the* finger.  
*beard; but in the latter* El dédo del corazón, *the*  
*sense commonly used in the* middle *finger.*  
*plural, Bárbas.* El dédo annulár, *the fourth*  
 El cuéllo, *the neck.* finger.  
 La cervíz, *the hinder part* El dédo meníque, *or au-*  
*of the neck.* ricular, *the little finger.*  
 La



*The Parts of Human Body.*

*Pártes del Cuérpo Humáno.*

La uña, <i>the nail.</i>	El pié, <i>the foot.</i>
Las espaldas, <i>the back.</i>	La plánta del pié, <i>the sole of the foot.</i>
Loshombros, <i>the shoulders.</i>	La garganta del pié, <i>the joint of the foot.</i>
Los lómos, <i>the loins.</i>	El empéine, <i>the instep.</i>
Los lados, <i>the sides.</i>	El calcañal, <i>the heel.</i>
Las nálgas, <i>the buttocks.</i>	El dedo del pié, <i>a toe.</i>
Las pártes vergonzófas, <i>the privities.</i>	El dedo gordo, <i>the great toe.</i>
El múnflo, <i>the thigh.</i>	La piél, <i>or el pelléjo, the skin.</i>
La rodílla, <i>the knee.</i>	El cabéllo, <i>the hair.</i>
El jarréte, <i>the ham.</i>	Un pélo, <i>a single hair.</i>
La piérna, <i>the leg.</i>	La cára, <i>the face.</i>
La pantorrílla, <i>the calf of the leg.</i>	El viságe, <i>the visage.</i>
La espinílla, <i>the spine-bone.</i>	
El tovíllo, <i>the ankle.</i>	

*The interior Parts of Human Body.*

*Pártes interiôres dél Cuérpo Humáno.*

<b>M</b> Orecillo, <i>a muscle.</i>	La espaldílla, <i>the shoulder-bone.</i>
Grássa, <i>or gordúra, fat.</i>	La canílla del brazo, <i>the arm bone.</i>
Membrána, <i>a membrane.</i>	Huéssô fácro, <i>} the rump or</i>
Nérvio, <i>or niérvo, a nerve.</i>	Rabadílla, <i>} bone.</i>
Véna, <i>a vein.</i>	Esqueléto, <i>a skeleton.</i>
Artéria, <i>an artery.</i>	El corazón, <i>the heart.</i>
Ternílla, <i>a gristle.</i>	Los bófes, <i>or } the lungs</i>
Huéssô, <i>a bone.</i>	Los pulmónes, <i>or } or the</i>
Meóllo, <i>or } marrow.</i>	Los liviános, <i>} lights.</i>
Tuétano, <i>} marrow.</i>	El hígado, <i>the liver.</i>
La calavéra, <i>the skull.</i>	El bázo, <i>the spleen.</i>
Choquezuélas, <i>the chine bones.</i>	Los riñones, <i>the kidneys.</i>
El espinázo, <i>the back bone.</i>	Los fésos, <i>the brains.</i>
Las costíllas, <i>the ribs.</i>	El célbéro, <i>the brains.</i>

*The interior Parts of Human Body.*

## Partes interiores del Cuerpo Humano.

El estómago, <i>the stomach.</i>	La flema, <i>flegm.</i>
La boca del estómago, <i>the</i>	El quile, <i>the chile.</i>
<i>pit of the stomach.</i>	La leche, <i>the milk.</i>
Las tripas, <i>the guts.</i>	Orína, or urína, <i>urine.</i>
Los intestinos, <i>the bowels.</i>	Estiércol, <i>dung.</i>
La madre, or } <i>the matrix,</i>	Sudór, <i>sweat.</i>
La matriz, } <i>or womb.</i>	Móco, <i>snot.</i>
La vexíga, <i>the bladder.</i>	Cáspa, <i>scurf.</i>
La sangre, <i>the blood.</i>	Salíva, <i>spittle.</i>
La cólera, <i>the choler.</i>	Lágrima, <i>a tear.</i>

*The five Senses,*  
Los cinco Sentidos.

La vista, <i>the sight.</i>	El gusto, <i>the taste.</i>
El oído, <i>the hearing.</i>	El tácto, <i>the feeling.</i>
El olfato, <i>the smell.</i>	

*Good Qualities in Human Bodies,*  
Buénas Calidades del Cuerpo Humano.

Salúd, <i>health.</i>	Brío, <i>sprightliness.</i>
Hermosúra, <i>beauty.</i>	Buén talle, <i>a good shape.</i>

*Defects in Human Bodies,*  
Defectos del Cuerpo Humano.

Fealdád, <i>deformity.</i>	Flaquéza, <i>weakness.</i>
Arrugas, <i>wrinkles.</i>	Ser tuérto, <i>to have but one</i>
Pécas, <i>freckles.</i>	<i>eye.</i>
Lagañas, <i>blear-eyes.</i>	Coxéz, <i>lameness.</i>
Verrúga, <i>a wart.</i>	Ser tartamúdo, <i>to stammer.</i>
Lunár, <i>a mole.</i>	Corcóva, <i>crookedness.</i>
Núbe en el ójo, <i>a pearl</i>	Ser calvo, <i>to be bald-headed.</i>
<i>in the eye.</i>	Ser rómo, <i>to have a flat nose.</i>
Cataráta, <i>a cataract.</i>	Estár estropeádo, <i>to be crip-</i>
Ceguedád, or ceguéra,	<i>pled.</i>
<i>blindness.</i>	Tullído, <i>lame of the limbs.</i>
Magrúra, <i>leanness.</i>	Eunúcho, <i>an eunuch.</i>

Zúrdo,

*Defects in Human Bodies,*  
Defectos del Cuerpo Humano.

Zúrdo, <i>left-handed.</i>	Máncó, <i>lame of a hand.</i>
Vísco, or vitójo, <i>squint-</i>	Múdo, <i>dumb.</i>
ey'd.	Sórdo, <i>deaf.</i>

*Of all that appertains to Cloathing.*  
De lo que tóca al vestír.

Páño, <i>cloth.</i>	Fiéltro, <i>felt.</i>
Páño fino, <i>fine cloth.</i>	Angéo, <i>canvas.</i>
Páño báito, <i>coarse cloth.</i>	Bayéta, <i>bays.</i>
Páño tundído, <i>mill'd cloth.</i>	Lána, <i>wooll.</i>
Grána, or } <i>Scarlet.</i>	Estámbré, <i>worsted.</i>
Escarlata, }	Séda, <i>silk.</i>
Ráxa, <i>cloth rash.</i>	Bocací, <i>buckram.</i>
Sayál, <i>sackcloth.</i>	Jóya, <i>a jewel.</i>
Frísa, <i>frize.</i>	Hevília, <i>a buckle.</i>
Estaméña, <i>serge.</i>	Alamáres, <i>loops on coats.</i>
Estófa, <i>stuff.</i>	Ojál, <i>a button-hole.</i>
Tafetán, <i>taffety.</i>	Bordadúra, <i>embroidery.</i>
Ráso, <i>satín.</i>	Botón, <i>a button.</i>
Terciopélo, <i>velvet.</i>	Fránja, or } <i>fringe.</i>
Damásko, <i>damask.</i>	Fluéque, }
Brocado, <i>brocade.</i>	Púntas, or encáxe, <i>lace.</i>
Gorgorán, <i>grogram.</i>	Cínta, <i>a ribbon.</i>
Chamelóte, <i>taby.</i>	Listón, <i>a broad ribbon.</i>
Téla de óro, <i>cloth of gold.</i>	Passamáno, <i>gold or silver</i>
Algodón, <i>cotton.</i>	<i>lace.</i>
Fustán, <i>fustian.</i>	Ribéte, <i>an edging.</i>
Líno, <i>flax.</i>	Sombréro, <i>a hat.</i>
Cambráy, <i>cambrick.</i>	Cópa del sombréro, <i>the</i>
Holánda, <i>holland.</i>	<i>crown of the hat.</i>
Ruán, <i>fine French linnen.</i>	Fálda del sombréro, <i>the</i>
Téla de cáñamo, <i>hempen</i>	<i>brim of the hat.</i>
<i>cloth.</i>	Trencillo, <i>the hat-band.</i>
Terlíz, <i>ticken.</i>	Plumáge, <i>a feather.</i>
Calicú, <i>calico.</i>	Bonerillo de viéjo, <i>a skull-</i>
Gáza, <i>muzlin,</i>	<i>cap.</i>

Bonéte,

*Of all that appertains to Cloathing.*

De lo que tóca al vestír.

Bonéte, <i>a cap.</i>	Bótas, <i>boots.</i>
Bonéte pára dormir, <i>a night-cap.</i>	Poláinas, <i>spatterdashies.</i>
Bonéte de clérigo, <i>a clergy-man's square cap.</i>	Espuélas, <i>spurs.</i>
Górra, <i>an old fashion cap.</i>	Púños, or } <i>cuffs or ruffles.</i>
Caperúza, <i>another sort of cap.</i>	Buéltas, }
Camísa, <i>a shirt.</i>	Tahalí, <i>a shoullder-belt.</i>
Almilla, <i>a wastecoat.</i>	Tíros, <i>a waste-belt.</i>
Chúpa, <i>a wastecoat.</i>	Espáda, <i>a sword.</i>
Calzoncillos, <i>drawers.</i>	Dága, <i>a dagger.</i>
Jubón, <i>a doublet.</i>	Cápa, <i>a cloak.</i>
Mánga, <i>a sleeve.</i>	Cafaca, <i>a coat.</i>
Mánga perdida, <i>a loose hanging sleeve.</i>	Ungarína, <i>a coat.</i>
Faldillas de jubón, <i>the skirts of a doublet.</i>	Guánte, <i>a glove.</i>
Calzones, <i>breeches.</i>	Ceñidór, <i>a girdle.</i>
Balóna, <i>a band.</i>	Cabelléra, <i>a wig.</i>
Cuéllo, <i>a collar.</i>	Pañuélo, or } <i>a pocket</i>
Coléto, <i>a buff coat.</i>	Pañizuélo, or } <i>hand-</i>
Agujéta, <i>a point.</i>	Liénzo de fal- } <i>ker-</i>
Faltriquéra, <i>a pocket.</i>	triquéra, } <i>chief.</i>
Bolsillo, <i>a coat or waste-coat-pocket.</i>	Rópa, or } <i>a gown.</i>
Médias, <i>stockins.</i>	Ropón, }
Médias de féda, <i>silk-stockings.</i>	Rópa de levantár, <i>a morn-ing gown.</i>
Médias de estambre, <i>worsted stockings.</i>	Pelico, or } <i>a shepherd's</i>
Lígas, <i>garters.</i>	Zamárra, } <i>jerkin.</i>
Zapátos, <i>shoes.</i>	
Escarpínes, <i>socks.</i>	
Pantúflo, <i>a slipper.</i>	
Borceguí, <i>a buskin.</i>	

Pára Mugéres,

*For Women.*

Tocádo, <i>a head-dress.</i>
Tóca, <i>a quois.</i>
Mánto, <i>a veil.</i>
Sáya, <i>a petticoat.</i>
Vasquiña, <i>an upper petticoat</i>
Guardapiés, <i>a petticoat.</i>
Enáguas, <i>the petticoat next to them.</i>

*Of all that appertains to Cloathing for Women.*

De lo que tóca al vestír pára Mugéres.

Avantál, <i>or</i> delantál, <i>an</i>	Avaníco, <i>a fan.</i>
apron.	Guardasól, <i>or</i>
Ballénas, <i>stays.</i>	Quitafól, } <i>an umbrella.</i>
Rópa, <i>a gown.</i>	Relóx, <i>or</i>
Mantílla, <i>a mantle.</i>	Muéltra, } <i>a watch.</i>
Capillo, <i>a hood.</i>	Tablillas, <i>tables.</i>
Chápin, <i>properly a Spanish</i>	Espéjo, <i>a looking-glass.</i>
<i>high clog, made of cork,</i>	Buxeta, <i>a little box.</i>
<i>but applied to signify any</i>	Estufilla, <i>a muff.</i>
<i>other.</i>	Calcéas, <i>under stockings of</i>
Liénzo del cuélllo, <i>a neck-</i>	<i>thread or cotton.</i>
<i>handkerchief.</i>	Péinadór, <i>a combing cloth.</i>
Zarcillos, <i>ear-rings.</i>	Cosas de niños, <i>things for</i>
Arracádas, <i>pendants.</i>	<i>children.</i>
Gargantílla, <i>a necklace.</i>	Pañales, <i>clouts.</i>
Collár, <i>a collar.</i>	Mantíllas, <i>mantles.</i>
Maníllas, <i>or</i>	Fáxa, <i>a rowler or swaitb.</i>
Bracelétes, } <i>bracelets.</i>	Juguétes, <i>play-things.</i>
Jóyas, <i>jewels.</i>	Cúna, <i>a cradle.</i>
Sortijas, <i>rings.</i>	Ama, <i>a nurse.</i>
Pedrerías, <i>precious stones.</i>	Díxes, <i>toys.</i>
Anillo, <i>a ring.</i>	

*Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.*

De lo tocánte al Comér y Bebé.

<b>L</b> A comida del médio	Hastío, <i>a loathing of meat</i>
día, <i>dinner.</i>	<i>for want of stomach.</i>
Céna, <i>supper.</i>	Asco, <i>a loathing at the</i>
Almuérzo, <i>breakfast.</i>	<i>sight of nastiness.</i>
Meriéndá, <i>bever, or after-</i>	Borrácho, <i>a drunkard.</i>
<i>noon's luncheon.</i>	Buén bebedor, <i>a good</i>
Colación, <i>collation.</i>	<i>drinker.</i>
Banquète, <i>an entertainment.</i>	Buen apetíto, <i>a good appe-</i>
Combidádo, <i>a guest.</i>	<i>tite.</i>
Hámbre, <i>hunger.</i>	Glótón, <i>a glutton.</i>
Sed, <i>thirst.</i>	Pan, <i>bread.</i>

*Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.*

De lo tocánte al Comér y Beber.

Pan bláncó, <i>white bread.</i>	Pepitória, <i>giblets.</i>
Pan candiál, <i>the whitest bread.</i>	Carbonáda, <i>meat broil'd on the coals.</i>
Pan bázo, <i>brown bread.</i>	Picadíllo, <i>a hash.</i>
Pan molléte, <i>French bread.</i>	Cecína, <i>hung meat.</i>
Pan reciénte, <i>new bread.</i>	Perníl, or } <i>a gammon or</i>
Pan de tódo el trígu, <i>wheaten bread.</i>	Jamón, } <i>ham.</i>
	Carnéro, <i>mutton.</i>
Pan de centéno, <i>rye bread.</i>	Váca, <i>beef.</i>
Pan deceváda, <i>barley bread.</i>	Cordéro, <i>lamb.</i>
Pan de avéna, <i>oaten bread.</i>	Ternéra, <i>veal.</i>
Pan de mýjo, <i>millet bread.</i>	Puérco, <i>pork.</i>
Pan de levadúra, <i>leavened bread.</i>	Cábra, <i>goat's flesh.</i>
	Cabrító, <i>kid.</i>
Biscócho, <i>bisケット.</i>	Tocíno, <i>bacon.</i>
Rebanáda de pan, <i>a slice of bread.</i>	Piérna de carnéro, <i>a leg of mutton.</i>
Cantéro de pan, <i>a crust of bread.</i>	Espálda de carnéro, <i>a shoulder of mutton.</i>
La cortéza, <i>the crust.</i>	Lómo, <i>a loin.</i>
Mássa, <i>dough.</i>	Pécho, <i>a breast.</i>
Tórta, <i>a cake.</i>	Mános de carnéro, <i>sheep's trotters.</i>
Rosquílla, <i>a fine sort of cake; made like a roll.</i>	Ruéda de ternéra, <i>a fillet of veal.</i>
Buñuélo, <i>a fritter.</i>	Affadúra, <i>the pluck.</i>
Tárta, <i>a tart.</i>	Salchícha, <i>a saucidge.</i>
Quesadílla, <i>a cheefecake.</i>	Longaníza, <i>a great saucidge.</i>
Empanáda, <i>a pye.</i>	Salchichón, <i>the biggest saucidge.</i>
Cárne, <i>flesh.</i>	Morcílla, <i>a blood pudding.</i>
Cárne cozída, <i>boil'd meat.</i>	Pastél, <i>a pasty.</i>
Cárne affáda, <i>roast meat.</i>	Cáldo, <i>broth.</i>
Cárne estofáda, <i>stew'd meat.</i>	Sópa, <i>soop.</i>
Cárne fríta, <i>fry'd meat.</i>	Potáge, <i>pottage.</i>
Cárne grilláda, <i>broil'd meat.</i>	
Cárne mómia, <i>flesh without bones.</i>	

Pápas,

*Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.*

De lo tocante al Comér y Beber.

Pâpas, or }	any sort of	Huévos y torrénos, col-
Púches, }	pap.	lops and eggs.
Písto, jelly broth.		Huévos rebueltos, butter'd
Léche, milk.		eggs.
Náta, cream.		Huévos de saltriquéra,
Suéro, whey.		yolks of eggs in a shell of
Requesón, curds.		jugar, to carry in the
Mantéca, butter.		pocket.
Quéso, cheese.		Huévos reáles, } sweet eggs
Cuájo, rennet.		or Cabéllos } spun out
Cuajáda, milk bardned with		de ángeles, } like hairs.
rennet, before it breaks		Sazón, seasoning.
into curds and whey.		Salmuéra, brine.
Huévo, an egg.		Espécias, spice.
Yéma de huévo, the yolk		Pimiénta, pepper.
of an egg.		Gengibre, ginger.
Clára del huévo, the white		Clávo de especias, cloves.
of the egg.		Canéla, cinnamon.
Huévo blándo, a soft egg.		Nuéz muscada, or de
Huévo dúro, a hard egg.		especia, nutmeg.
Huévo frésco, a new egg.		Flor de especia, mace.
Huévo en cáscara, an egg		Mostáza, mustard.
in the shell.		Agráz, verjuice.
Huévo cozído, a boil'd egg.		Vinágre, vinegar.
Huévo afsádo, an egg roast-		Azéite, oyl.
ed in the embers.		Sal, salt.
Huévo estrelládo, a fry'd		Azúcar, sugar.
egg.		Escabéches, pickles.
Huévo huéro, an addle egg.		Dúlces, sweatmeats.
Huévo empolládo, an egg		Almívar, sugar boil'd up
with a chicken in it.		for conserves.
Huévos de pescádo, the		Consérvas, conserves.
spawn of fish.		Confítes, comfits.
Huévos mexídos, yolks of		Mermeláda, marmelade.
eggs stew'd with white		Peráda, pears preserv'd like
wine and sugar.		marmelade.

*Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.*

De lo tocánte al comér y Beber.

Pastillas de bóca, <i>sweet lozenges.</i>	Víno añéjo, <i>old wine.</i>
Naranjada, <i>candy'd oranges.</i>	Mósto, <i>new wine.</i>
Turrón, <i>a rich sweetmeat made of almonds, honey, &amp;c.</i>	Víno ligéro, <i>light wine.</i>
	Vinázo, <i>a strong wine.</i>
	Víno moscatél, <i>muskadine wine.</i>
Barquillos, <i>or</i> } <i>sweet-</i>	Malvasía, <i>malmsey.</i>
Suplicaciones, } <i>wafers.</i>	'Agua pié, <i>liquor made of</i>
Bebida, <i>drink.</i>	<i>water put to the grapes</i>
Víno, <i>wine.</i>	<i>after they have been</i>
Víno puro, <i>pure wine.</i>	<i>press'd.</i>
Víno aguádo, <i>wine and water.</i>	Hez del víno, <i>wine lees.</i>
Víno vuélto, <i>prick'd wine.</i>	Hypocrás, <i>hypocras.</i>
Víno tinto, <i>red wine.</i>	Aguardiente, <i>brandy.</i>
Víno blanco, <i>white wine.</i>	Cervéza, <i>ale or beer.</i>
Víno halóque, <i>pale wine.</i>	Alója, <i>meath or metheglin.</i>
Víno claréte, <i>claret wine.</i>	Cídra, <i>cyder.</i>
Víno dulce, <i>sweet wine.</i>	Chocoláte, <i>chocolate.</i>
Víno picánte, <i>sharp wine.</i>	Teá, <i>or Thé tea.</i>
	Limonáda, <i>limonade.</i>

Los Animáles, 'Aves, Péces, Frútas, Híerbasp,  
Raíces, &c. comestíbles, se hallarán debaxo  
de sus propios Títulos.

*The Beasts, Fowls, Fishes, Fruits, Herbs, Roots,*  
*&c. that are eatable, will be found under*  
*those Heads.*

Béstias.

*Beasts.***B**éstia, *a beast.*Váca, *a cow.*Béstia domestica, *or*  
Mánfa, *a tame beast.*Buéy, *an ox.*Carnéro, *a sheep.*Béstia feróz, *a fierce beast.*Ovéja, *an ewe.*Ganádo, *cattle.*Cordéro, *a lamb.*Ganádo mayór, *great cattle.*Bezérro, *a calf.*Tóro, *a bull.*Javalí, *a wild boar.*

Puérco,



Puércó, <i>an hog.</i>	Alazán tostádo, <i>a dark sorrel.</i>
Búfalo, <i>a buffalo.</i>	Hovéro, <i>that has a white spot on the off hind foot.</i>
Cabállo, <i>an horse.</i>	Rubicán, <i>flea-bitten.</i>
Cabállo castrádo, <i>a gelding.</i>	Cabállo aguádo, <i>py-bald.</i>
Garañón, <i>a stallion.</i>	Yégua, <i>a mare.</i>
Cabállo entéro, <i>a stone-horse.</i>	Cabrón, <i>a he-goat.</i>
Cabállo corredór, <i>a race-horse.</i>	Cábra, <i>a she-goat.</i>
Cabállo de alquiler, <i>a horse to be let.</i>	Cabríto, <i>a kid.</i>
Cabállo de máno, <i>a led horse.</i>	Pérro, <i>a dog.</i>
Cabállo de pósta, <i>a post-horse.</i>	Pérro de caza, <i>a hound.</i>
Cabállo rebélde, <i>a restive horse.</i>	Sabuésfo, <i>a blood-hound.</i>
Cabállo desbocádo, <i>a hard mouth'd horse.</i>	Podénco, or } <i>a setting-dog.</i>
Cabállo medrófo, <i>a starting horse.</i>	Perdiguéro }
Cabállo tropezadór, <i>a stumbling horse.</i>	Pérro calládo, <i>a hound that does not open well.</i>
Cabállo que sacúde, <i>a jolting horse.</i>	Párro báxo, <i>a terrier.</i>
Cabállo asmático, <i>a broken winded horse.</i>	Lebrél, <i>a grey-hound.</i>
Cabállo indómito, <i>a horse that has not been broke, or will not be broke.</i>	Pérro ventór, <i>a finder.</i>
Cabállo bávo, <i>a bay horse.</i>	Pérro del águá, <i>a water-dog.</i>
Báyo castaño, <i>a chestnut bay.</i>	Maftín, <i>a mastif.</i>
Báyo escúro, <i>a brown bay.</i>	Pérro de pastór, <i>a shepherd's dog.</i>
Báyo dorádo, <i>a bright bay.</i>	Pérro veladór, <i>a house dog.</i>
Picázo, <i>a py'd horse.</i>	Perrillo de falda, <i>a lap-dog.</i>
Rúzio rodádo, <i>dapple grey.</i>	Aláno, <i>a bull-dog.</i>
De colór de gamúza, <i>or gamuésa, a cream colour.</i>	Gálgo, <i>a hare hound.</i>
Alazán, <i>a sorrel.</i>	Lechón, <i>a sucking-pig.</i>
	Cochíno, <i>a young hog.</i>
	Coréjo, <i>a rabbit.</i>
	Hacanéa, <i>a pad.</i>
	Muléto, <i>a young mule.</i>
	Múlo, <i>an he mule.</i>
	Múla, <i>a she mule.</i>
	Pótro, <i>a colt.</i>
	Pollíno, <i>an asses's colt.</i>
	Ciérvo, <i>a stag.</i>

Ciérva, *a bind.*Cachorro de ciérvo, *a* Ratón, *a mouse.**fawn.*'Afla de ciérvo, *a stag's*  
*horns.*Rástro, *o pisadas de ciérvo,*  
*the track of a stag.*Comadréja, *a weasel.*Texón, *a badger.*Gamúza, *a wild goat.*Cábra montés, *a roe-buck.*Gáto de algália, *a civet-cat.*Gámo, *a fallow-deer.*Dáma, *a doe.*Hardílla, *a squirrel.*Elephánte, *an elephant.*Foína, *or* } *a martin.*  
Márta, }Móno, *a monkey.*Gímio, *an ape.*Armínio, *an ermin.*Erízo, *an hedge-hog.*Liebre, *an hare.*Liebrílla, *a leuret.*Conéjo, *a rabbit.*Lirón, *a dormouse.*Zorra, *or* } *a fox.*  
Rapósa, }Tópo, *a mole.*Hiéna, *an biena.*Leopárdo, *a leopard.*León, *a lion.*Leóna, *a lyones.*Leoncillo, *a lion's whelp.*Lóbo, *a wolf.*Lóbo cervical, *an ounce.*'Osso, *a bear.*Ofsillo, *a bear's cub.*Pantéra, *a panther.*Abáda, *or* } *a rhino-*  
Rhinocerónte, } *ceros.*Tígre, *a tiger.*Puérco montés, *a wild*  
*boar.*Navájas, *or colmillos de*  
*javalí, the tusks of a wild*  
*boar.*Lavajál de javáli, *the soil*  
*of a wild boar.**Creatures that drag on the Earth.**Animáles que se arrástran por Tiérra.*Serpiénte, *a serpent.*Serpiénte aláda, *a flying*  
*serpent.*Dragón, *a dragon.*'Aspid, *an asp.*Culébra, *a snake.*Cocodrillo, *a crocodile.*Lagartíja, *a lizard.*Lagarto, *an alligator.*Bívora, *or víbora, a viper.*Bivoréño, *or viboréño,*  
*a young viper.*

*Amphibious Creatures.*

Animales Amphibios.

Bívaro, or	} a bever, or	Tortúga, or	} a tortoise.
Castór,		Galápago,	
Nútria, or	} an otter.		
Lódra,			

Savandíjas.

*Insects.*

Araña, a spider.	Chínche, a bug.
Arañuéla, a little spider.	Langósta, a locust.
Carcóma, a worm in wood.	Escorpión, a scorpion.
Orúga, a caterpillar.	Tarántula, a tarantula.
Aradór de la máno, an	Polilla, a moth.
band-worm.	Móscá, a fly.
Sápo, a toad.	Moscárda, a wasp.
Escarabájo, a beetle.	Abéja, a bee.
Caracól, a snail.	Molcón, a great fly.
Hormíga, a pismire, or ant.	Zángano, a drone.
Rána, a frog.	Cigárta, a grasshopper.
Grillo, a cricket.	Abísca, or avisca, a wasp.
Reboltón, an insect that	Tahón, a gad bee, or hornet.
spoils vines.	Lucernéja, a fire-fly.
Piójo, a louse.	Maripósa, a butter-fly.
Liéndre, a nit.	Vaquilla de diós, a lady-
Púlga, a flea.	bird.

'Aves.

*Birds.*

'Aguila, an eagle.	Gárza, an heron.
Aguilúcho, an eaglet.	Gárzota, a small heron.
Búitre, a vulture.	Milano, a kite.
Esmerejón, a merlin.	Cuéervo, a crow, or raven.
Gavilán, a sparrow-hawk.	Cornéja, a rook.
Mochuélo, a tassel-hawk.	Calándria, a lark.
Halcón, a falcon.	Nevecilla, a wagtail.
Torzuélo, a male facon.	Canário, a canary bird.
Girifálte, a gersfalcon.	Gilguéro, a goldfinch.
Alcotán, a lanner.	Mírla, a blackbird.
Sácre, a sacre.	Pinzón, a chafinch.

Ruiseñór, <i>a nightingale.</i>	Pávo, <i>a turkey.</i>
Verderón, <i>a greenbird.</i>	Estorníno, <i>a sterling.</i>
Papagáyo, <i>a parrot.</i>	Francolín, <i>a godwit.</i>
Urúca, <i>a magpye.</i>	Faisán, <i>a pheasant.</i>
Grájo, <i>a daw.</i>	Zorzál, <i>a thrush.</i>
Lechúza, <i>an owl.</i>	Hortoláno, <i>an ortolan.</i>
Morciélagó, <i>a bat.</i>	Gorrión, <i>a sparrow.</i>
Mochuélo, <i>a chough.</i>	Perdíz, <i>a partridge.</i>
Cumáya, <i>a night raven.</i>	Palóma, <i>a dove.</i>
Chotacábras, <i>a goat-sucker.</i>	Pichón, <i>a pigeon.</i>
'Anade, <i>a duck.</i>	Palomíno, <i>a young pigeon.</i>
Cercéta, <i>a teal.</i>	Tórtola, <i>a turtle-dove.</i>
Chirlíto, <i>a curlew.</i>	Alción, <i>a king's-fisher.</i>
Cuervo maríno, <i>a cormo- rant.</i>	Golondrina, <i>a swallow.</i>
Gánsó, <i>a goose.</i>	Avestruz, <i>an ostrich.</i>
Páto, <i>a goose.</i>	Ciguéña, <i>a stork.</i>
'Anár, or } <i>the same.</i>	Cuculillo, <i>a cuckow.</i>
Anféron, }	Císne, <i>a swan.</i>
Cernícalo, <i>a wind whiffer.</i>	Pitiróxo, <i>a robin-red breast.</i>
Fúlga, <i>a moorhen.</i>	Grúlla, <i>a crane.</i>
Abión, <i>a martin.</i>	Pezpítalo, or } <i>a wagtail.</i>
Gavióta, <i>a gull.</i>	Chirivía, }
Somorgujón, or } <i>a diver.</i>	Abuillo, <i>a lapwing.</i>
Cercéta, }	Oropéndola, <i>a witwal.</i>
Cuervo maríno, <i>a cormo- rant.</i>	Vencéjo, <i>a martlet.</i>
Chócha, or } <i>a wood-</i>	Abejarúco, <i>a titmouse.</i>
Gallína ciega } <i>cock.</i>	Abutárda, <i>a bustard.</i>
Tórdo, <i>a stare, or starling.</i>	Tórdo loco, <i>an owl.</i>
Codorníz, <i>a quail.</i>	Pelícano, <i>a pelican.</i>
Capón, <i>a capon.</i>	Feníz, or phénix, <i>a phoenix.</i>
Gállo, <i>a cock.</i>	Chírlo, <i>a wood-pecker.</i>
Gallína, <i>a hen.</i>	Picoverde, <i>a green beak.</i>
Póilo, <i>a chicken.</i>	Reyezuélo, <i>a plover.</i>
Pólla, <i>a pullet.</i>	Aguzaniéve, <i>a wren.</i>
	Talavilla, <i>a bunting.</i>
	Mérgo, <i>a puffin.</i>

*Parts of a Bird.*

Pártes de 'Ave.

El pico, <i>the beak.</i>	Búche, <i>the craw.</i>
Plúma, <i>a feather.</i>	Gárras, or } <i>the claws, or</i>
Plumázo, <i>the down.</i>	Uñas, } <i>talons.</i>
'Ala, <i>the wing.</i>	Rabadílla, <i>the rump.</i>
Peñolas, or } <i>quills, or pen-</i>	Pechúga, <i>the wing of a</i>
Penulas, } <i>feathers.</i>	<i>fowl dress'd.</i>
Pié, <i>the foot.</i>	Entrepechúga, <i>the brawn.</i>
Cóla, <i>the tail.</i>	

*Pézes.*

*Fishes.*

Abúrno, <i>a blech.</i>	Lampréa, <i>a lamprey.</i>
Sábalo, <i>a rich fish like salmon.</i>	Langostílla, <i>a prawn.</i>
Anchóva, <i>an anchove.</i>	Lóbo, <i>a bass.</i>
Anguila, <i>an eel.</i>	Sárda, <i>a mackarel.</i>
Balléna. <i>a whale.</i>	Marfópa, <i>a porpoise.</i>
Bárbo, <i>a barble.</i>	Abadéxo, <i>poor jack.</i>
Méro, <i>the holybut.</i>	Merlúza, <i>stock-fish.</i>
Lúfo, <i>a pike.</i>	Alméja, <i>a muscle.</i>
Cárpa, <i>a carp.</i>	Ortiga pez, <i>the stinging-fish.</i>
Calamaréjo, <i>a calamary.</i>	Pérca, <i>a perch.</i>
Talpáire, <i>the miller's thumb.</i>	Púlpo, <i>a polipus.</i>
Cabállo maríno, <i>a sea horse.</i>	Ráya, <i>a thornback.</i>
Cóngrio, <i>a conger.</i>	Líza, <i>skate.</i>
Delphín, <i>a dolphin.</i>	Sardína, <i>a pilchard.</i>
Doradillo, <i>the gilt back.</i>	Salmón, <i>salmon.</i>
Lenguádo, <i>a foal.</i>	Xíbia, <i>a cuttle fish.</i>
Langósta, <i>a lobster.</i>	Ténca, <i>a tench.</i>
Esturión, <i>a sturgeon.</i>	Atún, <i>a tunny fish.</i>
Góbio, <i>a gudgeon.</i>	Tremiélga, <i>a cramp fish.</i>
Harénque, <i>a herring.</i>	Trúcha, <i>a trout.</i>
'Ostra, <i>an oyster.</i>	Rodoválo, <i>a turbot.</i>

*Parts of a Fish.**Partes del Pez.*

Hocico, <i>the snout.</i>	Huévos de pez, <i>the spawn</i>
Agallas, <i>the gills.</i>	<i>properly the hard row,</i>
'Alas con que náda, <i>the fins.</i>	<i>which is in small grains.</i>
Escamas, <i>the scales.</i>	Léche del pez, <i>is the soft</i>
Espinas, <i>the bones.</i>	<i>row,</i>
Cóncha, <i>the shell of such</i>	
<i>as have one.</i>	

*'Arboles.**Trees.*

Alvaricóque, <i>an apricot</i>	Manzano, <i>an apple tree.</i>
<i>tree.</i>	'Alamo negro, <i>an alder</i>
Alméndro, <i>an almond tree.</i>	<i>tree, or black poplar.</i>
Durázno, <i>a peach tree.</i>	Alamo blanco, <i>the common</i>
Guíndo, <i>a cherry tree.</i>	<i>poplar.</i>
Cerézo, <i>an hart cherry tree.</i>	Cédro, <i>a cedar tree.</i>
Castáño, <i>a chestnut tree.</i>	Sahúco, <i>an elder tree.</i>
Cídro, <i>a citron tree.</i>	Enzina, <i>or</i> }
Membrillo, <i>a quince tree.</i>	Róble, } <i>an oak.</i>
Servál, <i>a service tree.</i>	Cornízo, <i>the cornil tree.</i>
Pálma, <i>a date tree.</i>	Cyprés, <i>the cypress tree.</i>
Higuéra, <i>a fig tree.</i>	'Ebano, <i>the ebony tree.</i>
Azuféifo, <i>a jujub tree.</i>	Arze, <i>the maple.</i>
Granádo, <i>a pomgranate tree.</i>	Háya, <i>the beach.</i>
Limón, <i>a lemon tree.</i>	Fréfno, <i>the ash.</i>
Morál, <i>a mulberry tree.</i>	Azébo, <i>the holm, or holy</i>
Níspelo, <i>a medlar tree.</i>	<i>oak.</i>
Avelláno, <i>a nut tree.</i>	Téxo, <i>the ewe tree.</i>
Nogál, <i>a walnut tree.</i>	Laurél, <i>the laurel.</i>
Olívo, <i>or Azeitúno, an</i>	Alcornóque, <i>the cork tree.</i>
<i>olive tree.</i>	Olmo, <i>the elm.</i>
Azebúche, <i>a wild olive tree.</i>	Píno, <i>a pine tree, or fir</i>
Naránjo, <i>an orange tree.</i>	<i>tree.</i>
Alvérchigo, <i>a peach tree.</i>	Plántano, <i>a plane tree.</i>
Ciruélo, <i>a plum tree.</i>	Sáuze, <i>a willow tree.</i>
Perál, <i>a pear tree.</i>	Téjo, <i>the linden tree.</i>

**Arbolillos, or Mátas.**

Agnocásto, *the agnus castus.*  
 Aliso, *the lote tree.*  
 Bálsamo, *the balsam tree.*  
 Bóx, *the box tree.*  
 Madrefélva, *the honey-suckle-tree.*  
 Zarzamóro, *the blackberry-bush.*  
 Hiniésta, *broom.*  
 Uva espino, *a gooseberry-bush.*  
 Adélpha, *ivy.*

**Shrubs.**

Brúsko, *butcher's broom.*  
 Alhócigo, *the pistacho tree.*  
 Regalíz, or regalicia, *the liquorice tree.*  
 Roméro, *rosemary.*  
 Rosál, *a rose tree.*  
 Savína, *savin.*  
 Tamaríz, *a tamarind tree.*  
 Aléña, *privet.*  
 Viña, *a vine.*  
 Labrúsca, *a wild vine.*  
 Párra, *a wall vine.*

**Frúta,**

Albaricóque, *an apricot.*  
 Alméndra, *an almond.*  
 Madróño, *a fruit like a straw-berry.*  
 Durázno, *a peach.*  
 Guínda, *a cherry.*  
 Ceréza, *an heart-cherry.*  
 Castaña, *a chesnut.*  
 Cídra, *a citron.*  
 Membríllo, *a quince.*  
 Sérvá, *service.*  
 Dátil, *a date.*  
 Hígo, *a fig.*  
 Bréva, *the first fig.*  
 Azufáifa, *a jujub.*  
 Granáda, *a pomegranate.*  
 Limón, *a lemon.*  
 Móra, *a mulberry.*  
 Níspero, *a medlar.*  
 Avellána, *a hazel nut.*  
 Nuéz, *a walnut.*  
 Azeitúna, *an olive.*

**Fruit.**

Naránja, *an orange.*  
 Alvérchigo, *a peach.*  
 Ciruéla, *a plumb.*  
 Ciruéla passa, *a prune.*  
 Péra, *a pear.*  
 Péra bergamóta, *a bergamot-pear.*  
 Manzána, *an apple.*  
 Camuéfa, *a pippin.*  
 Manzána de S. Juan, *a John-apple.*  
 Uva espín, *a gooseberry.*  
 Melocotón, *a melocotoon.*  
 Melón, *a melon.*  
 Bellóta, *an acorn.*  
 Algarróba, *a carob.*  
 Alcapárra, *a caper.*  
 Zárza móra, *a blackberry.*  
 Tamaríz, *a tamarind.*  
 Piñón, *the kernel of a pine-apple.*  
 Uva, *a grape.*

*Things belonging to Fruit and Trees,*  
*Cófas tocántes a Frútas y 'Arboles.*

Cáscara de granáda, nuéz,	Raíz, a root.
Éc. the shell of a pomegranate, nut, or the like.	Hébras de raíz, the fibres of a root.
Telíta de granáda, o ótra semejante frúta, the thin film in the pomegranate, or such fruit.	Arraigár, to take root.
Pimpóllo, the sucker or sprout of a vine.	Trónco, the trunk of a tree.
Sarmiéto, a twig of a vine.	Cortéza del árbol, the bark.
Yéma de viña, the bud of a vine.	Zúmo del árbol, the sap.
Zarcillos de la vid, the tendrils of a vine.	Móho, the moss.
Pámpano, a vine branch.	Rámo, a branch.
Renuévo de vid, a young shoot of a vine.	Hója, a leaf.
Racimo de úvas, a bunch of grapes.	Cuéscó de frúta, the stone of fruit.
Pépita de la úva, a grape-stone.	Mondadúras de frúta, the paring of fruit.
Podár, to prune.	Pezón, the stalk.
Escavár, to lay open the roots.	Engerír, or ingerír, to engraft.
Rodrigár, to prop a vine.	Almáciga, a nursery of trees.
Desojár, to nip the superfluous leaves of the vine.	Arboléda, a grove.
Cavár, to dig about a vine.	Arbol silvéstre, a wild tree.
Rozár, to weed.	Plantár, to plant.
	Marhojár, to bark trees.
	Engerír de púa, to engraft.
	Engerír de cañúto, to inoculate.
	Engérto, a graft.
	Pépita, the seed or small kernel of fruit.

*Corn, and its Parts,*  
*Trígos, y sus Pártes.*

Trigo, wheat.	Trigo rubión, red wheat.
Trigo candíal, the best wheat.	Escándia, bearded wheat.
	Herrén, masting corn.
	Espélta,



Espélta, <i>spelt.</i>	Tallo de la espíga, <i>the stem.</i>
Centéno, <i>rye.</i>	Núdo de la espíga, <i>the knot under the ear.</i>
Ceváda, <i>barley.</i>	Núdo del tallo, <i>the joynt of the stem.</i>
Avéna, <i>oats.</i>	Gránza, <i>the husk or chaff.</i>
Arróz, <i>rice.</i>	Rásfa de la espíga, <i>the beard.</i>
Míjo, <i>millet.</i>	
Míjo gránde, or } <i>indian</i>	
Maíz, } <i>wheat.</i>	

*Legúmbres,*

*Pulses.*

Alverjón, <i>a great vetch.</i>	Lantéja, <i>a lentil.</i>
Garvanzos, <i>a sort of spanish peas.</i>	Altramúz, <i>a lupin.</i>
Arvéjas, or } <i>peas.</i>	Judía, <i>a french bean.</i>
Guilántes, }	Zicerchás, <i>tares.</i>
Hába, <i>a bean.</i>	Cáscara, <i>the cod.</i>
	Holléjo, <i>the husk.</i>

*Roots, Plants, and Herbs.*

*Rayces, Plantás, y Yérvas.*

Ajénjo, <i>wormwood.</i>	Cóles, <i>coleworts.</i>
'Apio, <i>smallage.</i>	Bérza, <i>cabbage.</i>
'Ajo, <i>garlick.</i>	Repóllo, <i>a sprout.</i>
Enéldo, <i>dil.</i>	Colyflór, <i>coliflower.</i>
Anís, <i>aniseed.</i>	Calabáza, <i>a pumpkin or gourd.</i>
Armuéllles, <i>orach, or golden flowers.</i>	Pepíno, <i>a cucumber.</i>
Alcachófa, <i>an artichoke.</i>	Perexíl de la mar, <i>samphire.</i>
Espárago, <i>asparagus.</i>	Mastuérzo, <i>garden cresses.</i>
Abrótano, <i>southernwood.</i>	Escalona, <i>a scallion.</i>
Acélga, <i>white beet.</i>	Escaróla, <i>endive.</i>
Blédo, <i>a blite.</i>	Espináca, <i>spinage.</i>
Borrája, <i>borage.</i>	Hinójo, <i>fennel.</i>
Cádo, <i>a thistle.</i>	Hoblón, <i>bops.</i>
Zanahórias, <i>carrots.</i>	Lechúga, <i>a lettice.</i>
Voléza, <i>chervil.</i>	Lechúga cerrá- } <i>cabbage</i>
Hóngo, <i>a musbrome.</i>	da, or Murciána, } <i>lettice.</i>
Chirivía, <i>a skirret.</i>	Lechúga crespa, <i>curl'd lettice.</i>
Achicória, <i>succory or endive.</i>	

Nábo,

Nábo, <i>a turnep.</i>	Genciána, <i>gentian.</i>
Cebólla, <i>an onion.</i>	Camedréos de água, <i>germander.</i>
Acetófa, <i>french sorrel.</i>	Hierba puntéra, <i>houfeleek.</i>
Romáza, <i>long sorrel.</i>	Veléño, <i>benbane.</i>
Azedéra, <i>common sorrel.</i>	Marrúbio, <i>borehound.</i>
Perexíl, <i>parsley.</i>	Matricária, <i>feverfew.</i>
Puérró, <i>a leek.</i>	Málvas, <i>mallows.</i>
Verdolága, <i>purslain.</i>	Coróna de rey, <i>melilot.</i>
Ruíponces, <i>rampions.</i>	Torongíl, <i>balm.</i>
Xaramágo, <i>or</i> }	Mercuriál, <i>mercury.</i>
Ruquéta, } <i>rocket.</i>	Mil hójás, <i>or</i> }
Rúda, <i>rue.</i>	Ciénto en rama, } <i>milfoil.</i>
Sálvia, <i>sage.</i>	Corazoncíllo, <i>St. John's wort.</i>
Criadílla de tierra, <i>a truffle or pignut.</i>	Nárdó, <i>spikenard.</i>
Marjeróna, <i>sweet marjoram.</i>	Orégano, <i>origanum.</i>
Culántro, <i>coriander.</i>	Tabáco, <i>tobacco.</i>
Agárico, <i>agarick.</i>	Parietária, <i>pellitory.</i>
Gaféte, <i>or</i> }	Cepacavállo, <i>ground thistle.</i>
Epatório, } <i>agrimony.</i>	Dormidéra, <i>poppey.</i>
Acíbar, <i>aloes.</i>	Perficária, <i>arsesmart.</i>
Angélica, <i>angelico.</i>	Pervínca, <i>perwinkle.</i>
Celidónia, <i>celandine.</i>	Rósa montés, <i>piony.</i>
Betónica, <i>betony.</i>	Llantén, <i>plantain.</i>
Bistórta, <i>bistort or snake-weed.</i>	Polipódio, <i>polypody.</i>
Manzanilla, <i>camomile.</i>	Axenúz, <i>or</i> }
Culantríllo de pózo, <i>maiden-bair.</i>	Neguílla, } <i>bishop's wort.</i>
Centória, <i>centory.</i>	Hierba cidréra, <i>briony.</i>
Coloquintida, <i>coloquintida.</i>	Poléo, <i>penniroyal.</i>
Verbásco, <i>or</i> }	Elebóro, <i>belebore.</i>
Gardolóbo, } <i>wolflade or greatlungwort.</i>	Ruybárbo, <i>rheubarb.</i>
Hamapóla, <i>a poppey.</i>	Sanguinária, <i>bloodwort.</i>
Dítamo, <i>ditony.</i>	Sanícula, <i>self-heal.</i>
Artadégua, <i>fleabane.</i>	Sarazinésca, <i>heart-wort.</i>
Eléboro, <i>belebore.</i>	Satyrión, <i>ragwort.</i>
Tártago, <i>spurge.</i>	Saxifrágia, <i>saxifrage.</i>
	Escabiosa, <i>scabious.</i>
	Escamonéa, <i>scammony.</i>
	Cebólla

Cebólla albarrana, <i>a wild onion.</i>	Líno, <i>flax.</i>
Alfórvas, <i>fenugreek.</i>	Cegúta, <i>bemlock.</i>
Hierba cána, <i>ground-sell.</i>	Halécho, <i>fern.</i>
Valeriána, <i>valerian.</i>	Palomilla, <i>fumitory.</i>
Verbéna, <i>vervein.</i>	Yézgo, <i>danewort, or dwarf elder.</i>
Bránca urfina, <i>bears foot.</i>	Júnco, <i>a rush.</i>
Acónito, <i>wolfsbane.</i>	Cerrája, <i>sow thistle.</i>
Espliego, <i>lavender spike.</i>	Mandrágora, <i>mandrake.</i>
Amór del horteláno, <i>burdock.</i>	Morélla, <i>night shade.</i>
Perexíl de água, <i>water parsley.</i>	Correhuéla, <i>knot grass.</i>
Tamaríz silvéstre, <i>tamarisk shrub.</i>	Ortiga, <i>a nettle.</i>
Asarabáca, <i>asarabacca.</i>	Valéfa, <i>pepperwort.</i>
Calaminto, <i>catmint.</i>	Azafrán, <i>saffron.</i>
Caña, <i>a reed.</i>	Xabonéra, <i>soap-wort.</i>
Doradilla, <i>mules fern.</i>	Alfálfa, <i>darnel.</i>
Cañamo, <i>hemp.</i>	Albaháca, <i>sweet basil.</i>
	Hierbabuéna, <i>mint.</i>
	Sérpol, <i>wild thyme.</i>
	Tomillo, <i>thyme.</i>

*Flóres,*

*Flowers.*

Jacinto, <i>the hyacinth.</i>	Velloríta, <i>a cowslip.</i>
Jasmin, <i>jasmin.</i>	Ranúnculo, <i>the ranunculus.</i>
Junquillo, <i>the junquil.</i>	Rófa, <i>a rose.</i>
Azucéna, <i>a lilly.</i>	Maravilla, <i>a marigold.</i>
Máya, <i>a daisy.</i>	Girasól, <i>the sun-flower.</i>
Narcisso, <i>the daffodil.</i>	Tulipán, <i>a tulip.</i>
Clavél, <i>a pink.</i>	Violéta, <i>a violet.</i>
Amaránte, <i>the velvet flower.</i>	Alelí, <i>a white violet.</i>
Peónia, <i>a peony.</i>	Capúllo, <i>a rose-bud.</i>

*Colóres,*

*Colours.*

Morádo, <i>purple.</i>	Colór de ladrillo, <i>brick colour.</i>
Colór de auróra, <i>aurora colour.</i>	Azúl, <i>blue.</i>
Bláncó, <i>white.</i>	Colombíno, <i>dove-colour.</i>
	Limonádo,

Limonádo, <i>lemon colour.</i>	Grána, <i>scarlet.</i>
Amúfco, <i>filamot.</i>	Leonádo, <i>tawny.</i>
Colór de lláma, <i>flame colour.</i>	Négro, <i>black.</i>
Colór de fuégo, <i>fire colour.</i>	Anaranjádo, <i>orange colour.</i>
Carmesí, <i>crimson.</i>	Azeitunádo, <i>olive colour.</i>
Pádo, <i>grey.</i>	Róxo, <i>or</i> } <i>red.</i>
Ceniciênto, <i>ash colour.</i>	Colorádo, } <i>red.</i>
Amarillo, <i>yellow.</i>	Berméjo, <i>reddish.</i>
Encarnádo, <i>carnation.</i>	Colór de rófa, <i>rose colour.</i>
	Vérde, <i>green.</i>
	Colór de mar, <i>sea-green.</i>

Virtúdes y Vícios, buenas y malas Calidades de los Hómbres.

*Virtues and Vices, good and bad Qualities of Men.*

<b>R</b> ecatádo, <i>cautious.</i>	Reboltófo, <i>mutinous.</i>
Diéstro, <i>dextrous.</i>	Bien criádo, <i>well-bred.</i>
Dócil, <i>docil.</i>	Cortés, <i>courteous.</i>
Galán, <i>gallant.</i>	Gráve, <i>sober.</i>
Símple, <i>harmless.</i>	Jústo, <i>just.</i>
Agúdo, <i>sharp.</i>	Prudente, <i>discreet.</i>
Vívo, <i>sprightly.</i>	Desvergonzádo, <i>impudent.</i>
Sutíl, <i>subtil.</i>	Fogófo, <i>fiery.</i>
Chocarréro, <i>given to buff-foony.</i>	Impertinênte, <i>impertinent.</i>
Nécio, <i>foolish.</i>	Importúno, <i>troublesome.</i>
Astúto, <i>crafty.</i>	Ligéro, <i>light.</i>
Lóco, <i>mad.</i>	Descuidádo, <i>careless.</i>
Malicióso, <i>malicious.</i>	Temerário, <i>rash.</i>
Temeróso, <i>fearful.</i>	Afáble, <i>affable.</i>
Espantadízo, <i>apt to be frightened.</i>	Amigáble, <i>friendly.</i>
Valeróso, <i>brave.</i>	Bizárro, <i>brave.</i>
Tónto, <i>stupid.</i>	Charitativo, <i>charitable.</i>
Fantástico, <i>fantastical.</i>	Cásto, <i>chaste.</i>
Embuftéro, <i>deceitful.</i>	Constánte, <i>constant.</i>
Desatinádo, <i>distracted.</i>	Devoto, <i>devout.</i>
Grosséro, <i>clownish.</i>	Diligênte, <i>diligent.</i>
	Fiél, <i>faithful.</i>
	Generóso, <i>generous.</i>

Humilde,

Humilde, <i>humble.</i>	Rabiôso, <i>outrageous.</i>
Misericordiôso, <i>merciful.</i>	Alégre, <i>merry.</i>
Paciénte, <i>patient.</i>	Ufâno, <i>gay.</i>
Religiôso, <i>religious.</i>	Indeciso, <i>irresolute.</i>
Ambiciôso, <i>ambitious.</i>	Zelôso, <i>jealous.</i>
Sobérbio, <i>proud.</i>	Adúltero, <i>an adulterer.</i>
Avariêto, <i>covetous.</i>	Rufián, <i>a ruffian.</i>
Hypócrita, <i>an hypocrite.</i>	Matadór, <i>a murderer.</i>
Cobárde, <i>a coward.</i>	Blasphemadór, <i>a blasphemer.</i>
Holgazán, <i>idle.</i>	Salteadór, <i>a highway-man.</i>
Altivo, <i>haughty.</i>	Juradór, <i>a swearer.</i>
Chismôso, <i>a tale-bearer.</i>	Calumniadór, <i>a slanderer.</i>
Aduladór, <i>a flatterer.</i>	Murmuradór, <i>a censurer.</i>
Golôso, <i>a glutton.</i>	Hechicéro, <i>a sorcerer.</i>
Desleál, <i>faithless.</i>	Trampôso, <i>a cheat.</i>
Desagradecido, <i>ungrateful.</i>	Homicida, <i>a murderer.</i>
Inhumáno, <i>inhumane.</i>	Incestuôso, <i>incestuous.</i>
Insolênte, <i>insolent.</i>	Ladrón, <i>a thief.</i>
Luxuriôso, <i>lewd.</i>	Mentirôso, <i>a liar.</i>
Posiádo, <i>positive.</i>	Perjúro, <i>perjur'd.</i>
Perezôso, <i>slothful.</i>	Pérfido, <i>perfidious.</i>
Pródigo, <i>prodigal.</i>	Profáno, <i>profane.</i>
Váno, <i>vain.</i>	Rebelde, <i>a rebel.</i>
Mugeriêgo, <i>given to women.</i>	Sacrílego, <i>a sacrilegious person.</i>
Atrevído, <i>bold.</i>	Traidór, <i>a traitor.</i>
Colérico, <i>passionate.</i>	

Pártes de un Réino,  
*Parts of a Kingdom.*

Província, <i>a province.</i>	Aldéa, <i>a village.</i>
Ciudad, <i>a city.</i>	Distrito, <i>a district.</i>
Villa, <i>a market town.</i>	

Pártes de úna Ciudad,  
*Parts of a City.*

Cása, <i>a house.</i>	Iglesia, or } Témplo, } <i>a church.</i>
Tiênda, <i>a shop.</i>	
	Palácio,

Palácio, <i>a palace.</i>	Mercádo, <i>a market.</i>
Hospítal, <i>an hospital.</i>	Carnicería, <i>the shambles.</i>
Cáfa de la villa, <i>or del</i>	Encrucijáda, <i>a cross way.</i>
ayuntamiéto, <i>the town-</i>	Lónja, <i>or</i> } <i>an exchange.</i>
house.	Bólfa, }
Tribunál, <i>a court of justice.</i>	Cárcel, <i>a prison.</i>
Arsenal, <i>an arsenal.</i>	Múros, <i>or</i> } <i>the walls.</i>
Académia, <i>an academy.</i>	Murállas, }
Colégio, <i>a college.</i>	Fortificacióes, <i>fortifica-</i>
Calle, <i>a street.</i>	tions.
Callejón, <i>an ally.</i>	Plazuéla, <i>a little market</i>
Calléja, <i>or</i> }	<i>or square.</i>
Callejúela, }	
	<i>a lane.</i>

*Of the Inhabitants of Cities,*  
De los Moradóres de las Ciudades.

Niño, <i>a child.</i>	El poblácho, <i>or la plébe,</i>
Muchácho, <i>a boy.</i>	<i>the mob.</i>
Muchácha, <i>a girl.</i>	Canálla, <i>the rabble.</i>
Mózo, <i>a youth.</i>	Ciudadáno, <i>a citizen.</i>
Hómbre, <i>a man.</i>	Oficiál, <i>a tradesman.</i>
Mugér, <i>a woman.</i>	Mecánico, <i>a mechanick.</i>
Viéjo, <i>an old man.</i>	Labradór, <i>a peasant.</i>
Viéja, <i>an old woman.</i>	Aldeáno, <i>a countryman.</i>
Decrépito, <i>one that is de-</i>	Pícaro, <i>a rogue.</i>
<i>crepit.</i>	Esclávo, <i>a slave.</i>
Cóxo, <i>lame of the legs.</i>	Platéro, <i>a goldsmith.</i>
Mánco, <i>lame of the hands.</i>	Libréro, <i>a bookseller.</i>
Ciégo, <i>blind.</i>	Barbéro, <i>a barber.</i>
Sórdo, <i>lame.</i>	Mercadér de féda, <i>a mer-</i>
Magistrádo, <i>a magistrate.</i>	<i>cer.</i>
Nóble, <i>noble.</i>	Mercadér de páño, <i>a</i>
Hidálgo, <i>a gentleman.</i>	<i>woollen-draper.</i>
Caballéro, <i>a knight.</i>	Mercadér de liénzo, <i>a</i>
Tendéro, <i>a shop-keeper.</i>	<i>linnen-draper.</i>
Mercadér, <i>or</i> }	Sástre, <i>a tailor.</i>
Hombre de }	Costuréra, <i>a sempstress.</i>
negocio, }	Sombreréro, <i>a hatter.</i>
	Calcetéro, <i>a hosier.</i>
	Zapatéro,

Zapatéro, <i>a shoe-maker.</i>	Juéz, <i>a judge.</i>
Herréro, <i>a smith.</i>	Carceléro, <i>a goalor.</i>
Albéitar, <i>a farrier.</i>	Verdúgo, <i>the executioner.</i>
Cerrajéro, <i>a lock-smith.</i>	Ceréro, <i>a wax-chandler.</i>
Lavandéra, <i>a laundress.</i>	Ganapán, or { <i>a porter to</i>
Comádre, } <i>a midwife.</i>	esportillero, { <i>carry bur-</i>
or Partéra, }	dens.
Médico, <i>a physician.</i>	Remendón, <i>a botcher, or</i>
Cirujano, <i>a surgeon.</i>	cobler.
Charlatán, <i>a mountebank.</i>	Tataravuelo, <i>a grandfa-</i>
Sacamuélas, <i>a tooth drawer.</i>	ther's grandfather.
Sillero, <i>a sadler.</i>	Bisfavuelo, <i>a great grand-</i>
Carpintero, <i>a carpenter.</i>	father.
Peón, <i>a labourer.</i>	Avuelo, <i>a grandfather.</i>
Albañil, <i>a bricklayer.</i>	Pádre, <i>a father.</i>
Pintór, <i>a painter.</i>	Mádre, <i>a mother.</i>
Panadero, <i>a baker.</i>	Hijo, <i>a son.</i>
Carnicéro, <i>a butcher.</i>	Hija, <i>a daughter.</i>
Frutera, <i>a fruiterer.</i>	Nieto, <i>a grandson.</i>
Verdulera, <i>an herb woman.</i>	Bisnieto, <i>a great grandson.</i>
Pastelero, <i>a pastry-cook.</i>	Hermáno, <i>a brother.</i>
Tabernero, <i>a vintner.</i>	Cuñado, <i>a brother in law.</i>
Cervezéro, <i>a brewer.</i>	Padrastro, <i>a step-father.</i>
Mesonero, <i>an inn-keeper.</i>	Madrástra, <i>a stepmother.</i>
Ventéro, <i>the same.</i>	Suégro, <i>the husband's, or</i>
Reloxero, <i>a watchmaker.</i>	the wife's father.
Pregonero, <i>a cryer, or</i>	Nuera, <i>the wife of the son.</i>
hawker.	Yérno, <i>the husband of the</i>
Joyero, <i>a jeweller.</i>	daughter.
Boticário, <i>an apothecary.</i>	Primo hermano, <i>a cousin</i>
Buhonero, <i>a pedlar.</i>	german.
Vidriero, <i>a glazier.</i>	Tío, <i>an uncle.</i>
Carbonero, <i>a collier.</i>	Sobrino, <i>a nephew.</i>
Jardinero, <i>a gardiner.</i>	Primo segundo, <i>a second</i>
Letrado, <i>a learned man,</i>	cousin.
or a lawyer.	Marido, <i>an husband.</i>
Procurador, <i>a solicitor.</i>	Muger, <i>a wife.</i>
Abogado, <i>an advocate, or</i>	Növio, <i>a bridegroom.</i>
counsellor at law,	Desposado, <i>one betrothed.</i>
	U Ahijado,

Ahijado, <i>a godson.</i>	Víudo, <i>a widower.</i>
Padrino, <i>a godfather.</i>	Hermáno de leche, <i>a foster-</i>
Madrina, <i>a godmother.</i>	<i>brother.</i>
Compadre, <i>an be-gossip.</i>	Niño de la piedra, <i>a found-</i>
Comadre, <i>a gossip.</i>	<i>ling.</i>
Compañero, <i>or</i> } <i>a com-</i>	Niño supuesto, <i>a false child.</i>
Camarada, } <i>panion.</i>	Bastardo, <i>a bastard.</i>
Mellizo, <i>a twin.</i>	Donzélla, <i>a maiden.</i>
Cofrade, <i>a brother of the</i>	Mugér casada, <i>a married</i>
<i>same society.</i>	<i>woman.</i>
Cofradía, <i>a guild or society.</i>	Mugér parida, <i>a lying-in</i>
Comunidad, <i>a company.</i>	<i>woman.</i>
Huérfano, <i>an orphan.</i>	'Ama de leche, <i>a wet nurse.</i>
Soltéro, <i>a bachelor.</i>	Mancéba, <i>a lewd mistress.</i>
Heredero, <i>an heir.</i>	Raméra, <i>or,</i> }
Tutor, <i>a tutor.</i>	Púta, } <i>a whore.</i>
Curador, <i>a guardian.</i>	

*A House, and all that belongs to it.*  
 Casa, y todo lo perteneciente a ella.

Cása, <i>a house.</i>	Artezón, <i>an arch'd ceiling.</i>
El solár, <i>the ground the</i>	Bóveda, <i>a vault.</i>
<i>house stands upon.</i>	'Alto de casa, <i>a story of a</i>
Cimiento, <i>the foundation.</i>	<i>house.</i>
Paréd, <i>a wall.</i>	Escalera, <i>a stair-case.</i>
Pátio, <i>a court.</i>	Tejado, <i>a til'd roof.</i>
Fachada, <i>the front.</i>	Puerta, <i>a door.</i>
Un andar or álto, <i>a floor.</i>	Passadizo, <i>a passage or en-</i>
Portál, <i>a porch.</i>	<i>try.</i>
Ventána, <i>a window.</i>	Corrál, <i>a court-yard.</i>
Entresuelo, <i>a low room or</i>	Trafcorrál, <i>a back-yard.</i>
<i>floor between the upper</i>	Cámara, <i>a bed-chamber.</i>
<i>and lower that are more</i>	Aposento, <i>or</i> }
<i>lofty.</i>	Pieza, } <i>a chamber.</i>
Zaquizamí, <i>or cielo, the</i>	Quárto, <i>an apartment.</i>
<i>ceiling; also the space be-</i>	Anticámara, <i>an anticham-</i>
<i>tween the ceiling and the</i>	<i>ber.</i>
<i>roof of a house, and a</i>	Requádra, <i>a back room.</i>
<i>cock-loft.</i>	Sála, <i>a hall.</i>

Corredór,



Corredór, <i>a gallery.</i>	Umbrál, <i>the threshold.</i>
Retrete, <i>a closet.</i>	Bastidores de la puerta, <i>the frame of the door.</i>
Estúdio, <i>a study.</i>	Postigo, <i>a wicket.</i>
Armário, or } <i>a cupboard.</i>	Quícios, or } <i>hinges.</i>
Alazéna, }	Góznos, }
Escaparate, <i>a press for cloaths, or the like.</i>	Cerradura, <i>a lock.</i>
Guarda róba, <i>a wardrobe.</i>	Cerradura de golpe, <i>a spring-lock.</i>
Alcova, <i>an alcove.</i>	Candado, <i>a padlock.</i>
Desván, <i>a garret.</i>	Pestillo, <i>the bolt of a lock.</i>
Balcón, or } <i>a balcony.</i>	Cerrójo, <i>a bolt.</i>
Miradór, }	Llave, <i>a key.</i>
Azutéa, <i>the flat roof of an house.</i>	Ventanilla, <i>a little window.</i>
Camaranchón, <i>a cockloft.</i>	Picapórte, <i>a latch.</i>
Tórre, <i>a tower.</i>	Tranca de puerta, <i>the bar of a door.</i>
Bodega, or } <i>a cellar.</i>	Guardas de la llave, <i>the wards of a lock.</i>
Cueva, }	Cañuto de llave, <i>the pipe of a key.</i>
Repostería, <i>the butler's room.</i>	Vidriera, <i>the glass of the window.</i>
Despensa, <i>a buttery or pantry.</i>	Réjas de ventana, <i>the bars of a window.</i>
Cozina, <i>a kitchen.</i>	Escalera de caracól, <i>a winding stair-case.</i>
Caballeriza, <i>the stable.</i>	Llanos de escalera, <i>the landing places of stairs.</i>
Perreria, <i>a dog-kennel.</i>	Descanso de escalera, <i>the half pace of stairs.</i>
Palomar, <i>a dove-house.</i>	Grada, or } <i>a step.</i>
Gallinero, <i>a hen-roost.</i>	Escalón, }
Jardín, <i>a garden.</i>	Escalera secreta, <i>back stairs.</i>
Párque, <i>a park.</i>	Viga, <i>a beam.</i>
Privada, or } <i>the privy.</i>	Vigón, <i>the girder, or main beam.</i>
Necesaria, }	Tábla, <i>a board.</i>
Coronilla del edificio, <i>the top of the structure.</i>	Cruzéro, <i>a rafter.</i>
Téja, <i>a tile.</i>	U 2 Ladrillo,
Pizarra, <i>a slate.</i>	
Rípia, <i>a shingle.</i>	
Ala de tejado, <i>the eaves of the house.</i>	
Canál, <i>the gutter.</i>	

Ladrillo, *a brick.*Paréd maéstra, *the main wall.*Paréd de en médio, *the party-wall.*Paréd de cal y canto, *a wall of lime and stone.*Tabique, *a lath and plaister partition.*Cal, *lime or plaister.*Argamássa, *mortar.*Encostradura de paréd, *the plaister of a wall.*Yéssio, *very fine white lime.*Jalbégue, *white-wash.*Mésa, *a table.*Báncó, *a bench.*Silla, *a chair.*Silla de brázos, *an arm-chair.*Taburète, *a chair with a back.*Sitiál, *a stool without a back.*Banquillo, *a stool.*Cáxa, *a box.*Arca, or arcón, *a chest.*Caxón, *a case of drawers.*Tiradór, *a drawer.*Escritório, *a cabinet.*Cáma, *a bed.*Lécho, *the part of the bed that is laid on.*Armadura, or maderáge de cáma, *a bedstead.*Ciélo de la cáma, *the bed's tester.*Cortinas de cáma, *bed-curtains.*Rodapiés, *the bases of the bed.*Tapéte, *a carpet.*Sávanas, *sheets.*Frazádas, *blankets.*Covertór, *the counterpane.*Almohádas, *pillows.*Tapicería, *tapestry.*Pintúra, or quádro, *a picture.*Espéjo, *a looking-glass.*Candeléro, *a candlestick.*Despaviladéras, *snuffers.*Araña, *a branch to hold many candles.*Yéscá, *tinder.*Pajuéla, *a match.*Pedernál, *a flint.*Eslabón, *the steel to strike fire.*Orinál, *a chamber-pot.*Colchón, *a quilt to lye on.*Cólcha, *a quilt to lay on the bed.*Cátre, *a couch.*Cáma de campo, *a field-bed.*Testéra de cáma, *the bed's-head.*Colúnas de cáma, *the bed-posts.*Xergón, *a straw-bed.*Estéra, *a mat.*Calentadór de cáma, *a warming pan.*Chimenéa, *a kitchen.*Respiradéro, or cañón de chimenéa, *the funnel of the chimney.*

Morillos,

Morillos, <i>andirons.</i>	Herráda, <i>a bucket or pail.</i>
Fuélles, <i>bellows.</i>	Cúbo, <i>a tub.</i>
Tenázas, <i>tongues.</i>	Lexía, or } <i>lye.</i>
Pála, or badíl, <i>a shovel.</i>	Coláda, }
Guárda fuégo, <i>a skreen.</i>	Xabón, <i>soap.</i>
Urgadór, atifadór, <i>a pot-ker.</i>	Levadúra, <i>leaven.</i>
Olla, <i>a pottage-pot.</i>	Rodílla de cozina, <i>a coarse kitchen cloth.</i>
Tapadéra, <i>the pot-lid.</i>	Estropájo, <i>a dish-clout.</i>
Afa, <i>the ear of the pot.</i>	Pála del hórno, <i>the peel for the oven.</i>
Puchéro, <i>a pipkin.</i>	Harína, <i>meal.</i>
Cucharón, <i>a ladle.</i>	Salvados, <i>bran.</i>
Caldéra, <i>a kettle.</i>	Artéssa, <i>a tray.</i>
Efcalfadór, <i>a chafing-dish.</i>	Mantéles, <i>table-cloth.</i>
Trévedes, <i>a trevet.</i>	Servilléta, <i>a napkin.</i>
Hornillo, <i>a stove.</i>	Aguamaníl, <i>an ewer.</i>
Hórno, <i>an oven.</i>	Almofía, <i>a bason.</i>
Sartén, <i>a frying-pan.</i>	Toálla, <i>a towel.</i>
Cázo, <i>a sauce-pan.</i>	Platillos, <i>plates.</i>
Cazuéla, <i>a little pan.</i>	Cuchillo, <i>a knife.</i>
Efcumedéra, <i>a skimmer.</i>	Tenedór, <i>a fork.</i>
Parrillas, <i>a gridiron.</i>	Saléro, <i>salt.</i>
Coladéro, <i>a cullander, or streiner.</i>	Plato, <i>a dish.</i>
Cedázo, <i>a sieve.</i>	Efcudílla, <i>a porringer.</i>
Rálla, <i>a grater.</i>	Cuchára, <i>a spoon.</i>
Agúja de mechár, <i>a larding-pin.</i>	Tajadór, <i>a chopping-block.</i>
Affadór, <i>a spit.</i>	Jarro, <i>a mug.</i>
Azeitéra, or } <i>an oyl pot.</i>	Táza, <i>a cup or dish.</i>
Alcúza, }	Salvílla, <i>a salver.</i>
Vinagéra, <i>a cruet.</i>	Flásko, <i>a flask, or bottle.</i>
Almiréz, <i>a metal mortar.</i>	Vídrio, <i>a glass.</i>
Mortéro, <i>a stone mortar.</i>	Mondadiéntes, <i>a tooth-picker.</i>
Máno de mortéro, <i>a pestle.</i>	Mayordómo, <i>a steward.</i>
Braferillo, <i>a chafing-dish.</i>	Trinchánte, <i>a carver.</i>
Redóma, <i>a vial.</i>	Secretário, <i>a secretary.</i>
Sumidéro, <i>a sink.</i>	Camaréro, <i>a chamberlain, or valet de chambre.</i>
Cántaro, <i>a pitcher.</i>	U 3 Despenséro,

Despenséro, <i>a caterer, or clerk of the kitchen.</i>	Maéstre sala, <i>a sewer.</i>
Capellán, <i>a chaplain.</i>	Bodeguéro, <i>a butler.</i>
Limosnéro, <i>an almoner.</i>	Repostéro, <i>a butler.</i>
Páge, <i>a page.</i>	Halconéro, <i>a falconer.</i>
Lacáyo, <i>a footman.</i>	Cozinéro, <i>a cook.</i>
Cochéro, <i>a coachman.</i>	Galopín, <i>a scullion.</i>
Mózo de cabállos, <i>a groom.</i>	Portéro, <i>a porter.</i>
Caballerízo, <i>a gentleman of the horse.</i>	Caséro, <i>or hu-éspe- éño, or ámo</i>
Copéro, <i>a cupbearer.</i>	de la cása, <i>the land-lord.</i>

*Of Country Affairs.*  
De las cósas del Cámpo.

Alquería, <i>a country or farm house.</i>	Rastrillo, <i>the harrow.</i>
Quintéro, <i>a farmer.</i>	Sembradór, <i>a sower.</i>
Boyéro, <i>or } a cow-keeper.</i>	Escardadór, <i>a weeder.</i>
Vaquéro, <i>} a cow-keeper.</i>	Rozadór, <i>a weeding-hook.</i>
Porquéro, <i>or } a swine- porquerízo, } herd.</i>	Segadór, <i>a reaper.</i>
Pastór, <i>a shepherd.</i>	Guadña, <i>a scythe.</i>
Zurrón, <i>a scrip.</i>	Trillo, <i>a flail.</i>
Cayádo, <i>a shepherd's crook.</i>	Hórca, <i>a fork.</i>
Hón- <i>da, a sling.</i>	Viéldo, <i>a winnowing fan.</i>
Orteláno, <i>or } a gardiner.</i>	Pescadór, <i>a fisher-man.</i>
Jardinéro, <i>} a gardiner.</i>	Red barredéra, <i>a drag-net.</i>
Cavadór, <i>a ditcher.</i>	Vára, <i>or caña pára pescár, a fishing rod.</i>
Vinadéro, <i>a vine dresser.</i>	Sedál de la cáña, <i>a fishing-line.</i>
Azáda, <i>or } a spade.</i>	Anzuélo, <i>a fishing-hook.</i>
Azadón, <i>} a spade.</i>	Cazadór, <i>a huntsman.</i>
Aradór, <i>or } a plough- Labradór, } man.</i>	Cébo, <i>a bait.</i>
Arádo, <i>a plough.</i>	Líga, <i>birdlime.</i>
Estéva, <i>or } a plough</i>	Jáula, <i>a cage.</i>
Manzéra, <i>} handle.</i>	Obréro, <i>or } a day la- Jornaléro, } bourer.</i>
Réja del arádo, <i>a plough- share.</i>	Añéro, <i>a keeper of asses.</i>
	Hómbre

Hombre del campo, <i>a country-man.</i>	Bóveda de párras, <i>an arbour.</i>
Campo que descansa, <i>a fallow-field.</i>	Labérinto, <i>a labyrinth.</i>
Tierra entre los sulcos, <i>a ridge.</i>	Gruta, <i>a grotte.</i>
Súlco, <i>a furrow.</i>	Cascada, <i>a cascade.</i>
Trigo en hiérba, <i>green corn.</i>	Fuente, <i>a fountain.</i>
Tierra inculta, <i>land not till'd.</i>	Chorro de água, <i>a water-spout.</i>
Monte, <i>or</i> } <i>a bill, or</i>	Pilón de fuente, <i>the vase of a fountain.</i>
Montaña, } <i>mountain.</i>	Encañado, <i>or</i> } <i>an aqueduct.</i>
Cuesta, <i>or</i> } <i>a little bill.</i>	aquedúcto, }
Collado, }	Hortaliza, <i>all sorts of herbage.</i>
Cérro, <i>a rising ground.</i>	Planta, <i>a plant.</i>
Válle, <i>a valley.</i>	Camino real, <i>the high-way.</i>
Abísimo, <i>a bottomless pit.</i>	Sénda, <i>or</i> } <i>a path.</i>
Zanja, <i>a ditch.</i>	Vereda, }
Langúna, <i>a lake, or marsh.</i>	Pisada, <i>or</i> } <i>a track.</i>
Llanúra, <i>a plain.</i>	Rástro, }
Péña, <i>or</i> } <i>a rock.</i>	Cavalgadúra, <i>a beast for the saddle.</i>
Róca, }	Carréta, <i>a waggon.</i>
Peñasco, <i>a great rock.</i>	Cárrro, <i>a cart.</i>
Despeñadéro, <i>a precipice.</i>	Ruéda, <i>a wheel.</i>
Bósque, <i>a forest.</i>	Ráyo de ruéda, <i>the spoke of a wheel.</i>
Esplanada, <i>a curious plain.</i>	Llántas, <i>or</i> } <i>the felloes of</i>
Máta, <i>a thicket.</i>	Cámbas, } <i>the wheel.</i>
Zárza, <i>a bramble.</i>	Cúbo de ruéda, <i>the nave of the wheel.</i>
Espína, <i>a thorn.</i>	'Exe de ruéda, <i>the axle-tree.</i>
Prádo, <i>a meadow.</i>	Estáca, <i>or</i> } <i>the pin of a</i>
Vergél, <i>a garden, a bower.</i>	Clavo, } <i>wheel.</i>
Huérta, <i>an orchard.</i>	Caléssa, <i>a caloche or chaise.</i>
Jardín, <i>a garden.</i>	Litéra, <i>a horse litter.</i>
'Era de jardín, <i>a bed in a garden.</i>	'Andas, <i>the shafts.</i>
Glorieta de jardín, <i>a bed of flowers.</i>	Cóche, <i>or carróza, a coach.</i>
Almáciéga, <i>a seed-plot.</i>	U 4 Rástra,

Rástra, or }	a sledge.	Bolsa, a purse.
Nárria, }		Costál, or }
Césta, a basket.		Sáco, }
Canásta, a flasket.		Maléta, a portmanteau.
Espuérta, a dirt-basket.		Talégo, a bag.
Cherrión, a dung-cart.		Valíja, a cloak-bag.
Banásta, a great hamper.		Zurrón, a budget or scrip.
Alfója, a wallet.		

*The Church, and Things pertaining to Religion.*

## Iglésia, y cosas Religiosas.

Náve de iglésia, the isle of a church.	Missál, a mass-book.
Cimbório, the dome.	Sotána, a cassock.
Pináculo, a pinnacle.	Sobrepelliz, a surplice.
Chóro, the choir.	Roquéte, a short surplice.
Capílla, a chapel.	Bonéte, a cap.
Atril, a desk.	Mitra, a miter.
Sacristía, the vestry.	Báculo, a crozier.
Campanário, the belfry.	Patriárcha, a patriarch.
Campana, a bell.	Arzobispo, an archbishop.
Badájo, the clapper of the bell.	Obispo, a bishop.
Píla de bautizár, the font.	Obispado, a bishoprick.
Isópo, a sprinkler.	Diocésis, a diocese.
Confessionário, a confession- seat.	Coadjutór, a coadjutor.
Tribúna, a tribune, or gal- lery.	Sufragáneo, a suffragan.
Cimentério, the church- yard.	Sacerdóte, a priest.
Osiário, the charnel.	Sacerdócio, priesthood.
Altár, an altar.	Diácono, a deacon.
Frontál, an antependium.	Subdiácono, a subdeacon.
Tabernáculo, or } the ta- Sagrário, } bernacle.	Acólyto, one that serves the priest at the altar.
Pálio, a canopy.	Lectór, a reader.
Mantél del altár, the altar- cloth.	Clérigo, a clergyman.
	Preládo, a prelate.
	Abád, an abbot.
	Abadéssa, an abbess.
	Abadía, an abbey.
	Canónigo, a canon.
	Deán, a dean.

Prevoste,

Prevôste, <i>a provost.</i>	Lección, <i>a lesson.</i>
Archidiácono, <i>an arch-deacon.</i>	Verfête, <i>a verse.</i>
Precentór, <i>a precentor.</i>	Sermón, <i>a sermon.</i>
Maéstre de chóro, <i>the master of the choir.</i>	Meditación, <i>meditation.</i>
Cantór, <i>a singing-man.</i>	Oración vocál, <i>vocal prayer.</i>
Sacristán, <i>the vestry keeper.</i>	Oración mentál, <i>mental prayer.</i>
Prebendádo, <i>a prebendary.</i>	Predicár, <i>to preach.</i>
Cúra, <i>the parson of a parish.</i>	Hacér el catechísmo, <i>to catechize.</i>
Paróchia, <i>a parish.</i>	Entérrar, <i>or</i> } <i>to bury.</i>
Vicário, <i>a vicar.</i>	sepultár, }
Oficiál, <i>an official.</i>	Excomunión, <i>excommunication.</i>
Promotór, <i>a proctor.</i>	Suspensión, <i>suspension.</i>
Encomiéndá, <i>a thing given in commendam.</i>	Entredícho, <i>an interdict.</i>
Bautísmo, <i>baptism.</i>	Irregularidad, <i>irregularity.</i>
Confirmación, <i>confirmation.</i>	Descomulgár, <i>to excommunicate.</i>
Matrimónio, <i>matrimony.</i>	Iglésia cathedrál, <i>a cathedral church.</i>
Comulgár, <i>to receive the holy sacrament.</i>	Conventuál, <i>the church of a monastery.</i>
Ordenes fácos, <i>holy orders.</i>	Parrochiál, <i>a parish church.</i>
Ceremónia, <i>a ceremony.</i>	Adviénto, <i>the time of advent.</i>
Rúbrica, <i>the rubrick.</i>	Quarésma, <i>the lent.</i>
Rituál, <i>a ritual.</i>	Témporas, <i>ember-weeks.</i>
Ofício divíno, <i>divine service.</i>	Vigília, <i>an eve.</i>
Pfaltério, <i>the psalter.</i>	Ayúno, <i>a fast.</i>
Pfalmo, <i>a psalm.</i>	
Antíphona, <i>an antiphon.</i>	

*Things relating to War.*

Cófas tocántes a la Guérra.

Artillería, <i>artillery, or great guns.</i>	Cañón, <i>a cannon.</i>
Pieza de artillería, <i>a canon.</i>	Bóca de cañón, <i>the mouth of the gun.</i>
Tren de artillería, <i>the train of artillery.</i>	Fogón, <i>the touch-hole.</i>
	Culéta

Culáta del cañón, <i>the breech of the gun.</i>	Lánza, <i>a lance.</i>
Carretón de cañón, <i>a carriage of a great gun.</i>	Alabárda, <i>an halbard.</i>
Cargár, <i>to load.</i>	Partesana, <i>a partesan.</i>
Apuntár, <i>to level.</i>	Píca, <i>a pike.</i>
Disparár, <i>to fire.</i>	Alfánge, <i>a cymiter.</i>
Tíro de cañón, <i>a cannon-shot.</i>	Espáda, <i>a sword.</i>
Desmontár un cañón, <i>to dismount a gun.</i>	Púño de la espáda, <i>the handle of the sword.</i>
Enclavár un cañón, <i>to nail up a gun.</i>	Pomo de la espáda, <i>the pommel of the sword.</i>
Culebrína, <i>a culverin.</i>	Guarnición de espáda, <i>the hilt of the sword.</i>
Falconéte, <i>a falconet.</i>	La hója, <i>the blade.</i>
Pedréro, <i>a patterero.</i>	Puñál, <i>a poniard.</i>
Cañón entéro, <i>a whole cannon.</i>	Bayonéta, <i>a bayonet.</i>
Médio cañón, <i>a half cannon.</i>	Dága, <i>a dagger.</i>
Petárdo, <i>a petard.</i>	Yélmo, <i>a whole helmet.</i>
Bómba, <i>a bomb.</i>	Celáda, <i>the same.</i>
Mortéro, <i>a mortar-piece.</i>	Morrión, <i>a morrion.</i>
Granáda, <i>a granade.</i>	Viséra, <i>the vizor of an helmet.</i>
Mosquéte, <i>a musket.</i>	Gorjál, <i>the gorget.</i>
Carabína, <i>a carbine.</i>	Péto, <i>a breast-plate.</i>
Escopéta, <i>a fire-lock.</i>	Coráza, <i>a cuirass.</i>
Pistóla, <i>a pistol.</i>	Espaldár, <i>the back-plate.</i>
Bála, <i>a bullet.</i>	Cofeléte, <i>a corset.</i>
Pólvora, <i>powder.</i>	Braceléte, <i>armour for the arms.</i>
Mécha, <i>match.</i>	Escarcelón, <i>armour from the waste to the thighs.</i>
Pedernál, <i>a flint.</i>	Grévas, <i>greaves for the thighs.</i>
Flécha, <i>an arrow.</i>	Inojéras, <i>armour for the knees.</i>
Dardo, <i>a dart.</i>	Broquél, <i>a buckler.</i>
Javalína, <i>a boar-spear.</i>	Escúdo, <i>a shield.</i>
Hónda, <i>a sling.</i>	Adárga, <i>a target.</i>
Arco, <i>a bow.</i>	Cóta de málla, <i>a coat of mail.</i>
Máza de armas, <i>a battle-axe.</i>	



General, <i>a general.</i>	Centinela, <i>a sentinel.</i>
Teniente general, <i>a lieutenant-general.</i>	Avanguardia, <i>the vanguard.</i>
Sargento mayor de batalla, <i>a major-general.</i>	Cuerpo de batalla, <i>the main body of the army.</i>
Maestre de campo, <i>or coronel, a colonel.</i>	Retaguardia, <i>the rear.</i>
Sargento mayor, <i>a major.</i>	Cuerpo de reserva, <i>the corps de reserve.</i>
Capitan, <i>a captain.</i>	Cuerpo de guardia, <i>the corps de guard.</i>
Teniente, <i>a lieutenant.</i>	Ala, <i>the wing of an army.</i>
Corneta, <i>a cornet.</i>	Batallon, <i>a battallion.</i>
Alférez, <i>an ensign.</i>	Regimiento, <i>or</i>
Sargento, <i>a serjeant.</i>	Tercio, <i>} a regiment.</i>
Cabo de esquadra, <i>a corporal.</i>	Tropa de caballos, <i>a troop of horse.</i>
Quadrillero, <i>a brigadier.</i>	Compañia de infanteria, <i>a company of foot.</i>
Soldado, <i>a soldier.</i>	Hilera, <i>a rank.</i>
Caudillo, <i>a leader, or commander.</i>	Fila, <i>a file.</i>
Tambor, <i>a drum.</i>	Esquadrón, <i>a squadron.</i>
Pifano, <i>a fife.</i>	Mochillero, <i>a soldier's boy.</i>
Trompeta, <i>a trumpet.</i>	Bagage, <i>the baggage.</i>
Atabal, <i>a kettle-drum.</i>	Vivandero, <i>a sutler.</i>
Soldado de acaballo, <i>a trooper.</i>	Partida, <i>a party.</i>
Soldado de apié, <i>a foot-soldier.</i>	Corredores, <i>the forlornbope</i>
Dragón, <i>a dragoon.</i>	Batidores, <i>discoverers.</i>
Piquero, <i>a pikeman.</i>	Murallas, <i>or</i>
Mosquetero, <i>a musketeer.</i>	Muros, <i>} walls.</i>
Escopetero, <i>a fusilier.</i>	Almena, <i>a battlement.</i>
Infante, <i>a foot soldier.</i>	Parapeto, <i>the parapet.</i>
Infanteria, <i>the infantry.</i>	Castillo, <i>a castle.</i>
Caballeria, <i>the cavalry.</i>	Fuerte, <i>a fort.</i>
Artillero, <i>a gunner.</i>	Fortaleza, <i>a fortress.</i>
Bombardero, <i>a bombardier.</i>	Fortificación, <i>a fortification.</i>
Ingeniero, <i>an ingeneer.</i>	Torre, <i>a tower.</i>
Minero, <i>a miner.</i>	Ciudadela, <i>a citadel.</i>
Gastador, <i>a pioneer.</i>	Bastion, <i>a bastion.</i>

Cortína, <i>a curtain.</i>	Contramárcha, <i>a counter-march.</i>
Média lúa, <i>an half-moon.</i>	Escaramúza, <i>a skirmish.</i>
Tronéra, <i>a loop-hole.</i>	Batálla, <i>a battle.</i>
Terrapléno, <i>a rampart.</i>	Sítio, <i>a siege.</i>
Caballéro, <i>a cavalier, or mount.</i>	Quartél, <i>quarter.</i>
Rebelín, <i>a ravelin.</i>	Encamifáda, <i>a camifade, or surprise.</i>
Contraescárpa, <i>the counter-scarp.</i>	Salída, <i>a sally.</i>
Barrera, <i>a barrier.</i>	Batír, <i>to batter.</i>
Fálfa brága, <i>a fausse-bray.</i>	Brécha, <i>a breach.</i>
Fóflo, <i>the ditch.</i>	Escaláda, <i>an escalade.</i>
Repécho, <i>a breast-work.</i>	Afláto, <i>an assault or attack.</i>
Garíta, <i>a sentinel's box.</i>	Llamáda, <i>the chamade.</i>
Casemáta, <i>a casemate.</i>	Capitulación, <i>a capitulation.</i>
Galería, <i>or</i> } <i>a gallery.</i>	Guarnición, <i>a garrison.</i>
Corredór, }	Tocár la cáxa, <i>to beat the drum.</i>
Estráda cubiérta, <i>the covered way.</i>	Levantár génte, <i>to raise men.</i>
Cestón, <i>a gabion.</i>	Pagár el suéldo, <i>to pay the men.</i>
Estáca, <i>a palisade.</i>	Batír la estráda, <i>to scour the country.</i>
Redúto, <i>a redoubt.</i>	Levantár el sítio, <i>to raise the seige.</i>
Ataláya, <i>a place for discovery, or the person that is to discover.</i>	Marchár a vandéras desplegadas, <i>to march with flying colours.</i>
Mánta, <i>a mantlet, or cover for men from the shot.</i>	Reforzár el ejército, <i>to reinforce the army.</i>
Fagina, <i>fascines.</i>	Tocár a recogér, <i>to sound a retreat.</i>
Mína, <i>a mine.</i>	Entregár una pláza, <i>to surrender a place.</i>
Contramína, <i>a countermine.</i>	
Trinchéra, <i>a trench.</i>	
El réal, <i>the camp.</i>	
Vituállas, <i>provisions.</i>	
Municiones, <i>ammunition.</i>	
Visoño, <i>a fresh water soldier.</i>	
Picoréro, <i>a marauder.</i>	

*The Year, and its Parts.*

El 'Año y sus Pártes.

'Año, <i>a year.</i>	Mañana, <i>the morning.</i>
Mes, <i>a month.</i>	Tarde, <i>the evening.</i>
Semána, <i>a week.</i>	Hóra, <i>an hour.</i>
Día, <i>a day.</i>	Minúto, <i>a minute.</i>
Nóche, <i>a night.</i>	Momento, <i>a moment.</i>

*The Months.*

Lós Méfes.

Enéro, <i>january.</i>	Júlio, <i>july.</i>
Febrero, <i>february.</i>	Agósto, <i>august.</i>
Márzo, <i>march.</i>	Setiémbre, <i>september.</i>
Abríl, <i>april.</i>	Octúbre, <i>october.</i>
Máyo, <i>may.</i>	Noviémbre, <i>november.</i>
Júnio, <i>june.</i>	Deciémbre, <i>december.</i>

*The Days of the Week.*

Días de la Semána.

Domíngo, <i>sunday.</i>	Juéves, <i>thursday.</i>
Lúnes, <i>monday.</i>	Viérnes, <i>friday.</i>
Mártés, <i>tuesday.</i>	Sábado, <i>saturday.</i>
Miércoles, <i>wednesday.</i>	

*Navegación.*

*Navigation.*

Navío, or náve, or náo, } <i>a ship.</i>	Fragáta, <i>a frigate.</i>
Navío de guérta, <i>a man of war.</i>	Sáica, <i>a saick.</i>
Navío mercantíl, <i>a mer- chant-ship.</i>	Caráca, <i>a carrack.</i>
Navío ligero, <i>a light ves- sel for sailing.</i>	Fústa, <i>a foist.</i>
Galéra, <i>a galley.</i>	Pináza, <i>a pinnace.</i>
Galeáza, <i>a galeass.</i>	Bárca de passage, <i>a ferry- boat.</i>
Galeón, <i>a galleon.</i>	Canóa, <i>a canoe.</i>
Galeóta, <i>a galliot.</i>	Pirágua, <i>a piragua.</i>
	Góndola, <i>a sort of boat so called.</i>
	Esquífe, <i>a skiff.</i>

Barquéta,

Barquéta, <i>or</i> }	<i>a boat.</i>	Véla del trinquéte, <i>the fore-sail.</i>
Barquilla, }		Véla cevadéra, <i>the sprit-sail.</i>
Bálfa, <i>a float.</i>		Véla latina, <i>a shoulder of mutton sail.</i>
Capitána réal, <i>the admiral.</i>		Rémo, <i>an oar.</i>
Almiránta, <i>the vice-admiral.</i>		Pála de rémo, <i>the blade of the oar.</i>
Armáda, <i>a navy of men of war.</i>		Tronéras, <i>the port-holes.</i>
Flóta, <i>a fleet of merchants.</i>		Empavesadas, <i>the nettings.</i>
Esquádra, <i>a squadron.</i>		Gallardéte, <i>a pendant.</i>
Abórdo, <i>aboard.</i>		Vanderóla, <i>a flag.</i>
Pópa, <i>the poop, or stern.</i>		Vandéra, <i>the colours.</i>
Próa, <i>the prow, or head.</i>		Brúxula, <i>the compass.</i>
Tartána, <i>a tartan.</i>		Púnta de la próa, <i>the stern.</i>
Bergantín, <i>a brigantin.</i>		Puén-te, <i>the deck.</i>
Navío de fuégo, <i>a fire-ship.</i>		Cubiérta, <i>the same.</i>
Patáche, <i>a patach.</i>		Tílla, <i>the hatches.</i>
Felúca, <i>a felucca.</i>		Báncos de galéra, <i>the thoughts of a galley.</i>
Bárca, <i>a bark.</i>		Timón, <i>the helm.</i>
Bárco, <i>or</i> }	<i>a boat.</i>	Quílla, <i>the keel.</i>
Batél, }		'Ancora, <i>an anchor.</i>
Sentína, <i>the well.</i>		Amár-ra, <i>or</i> }
Lástre, <i>ballast.</i>		Maróma, }
Mastíl, <i>or</i> }	<i>the mast.</i>	Són-da, <i>the sounding lead.</i>
'Arbol, }		Pilóto, <i>a pilot, or master.</i>
'Arbol mayór, <i>the main-mast.</i>		Guardián, <i>the boat-swain.</i>
La gábia, <i>the round top.</i>		Mariné-ro, <i>a sailor.</i>
Tinquéte, <i>the fore-mast.</i>		Forzádos, <i>or</i> }
Quilla del árbol, <i>the step of the mast.</i>		Galeótes, }
Enténa, <i>a yard.</i>		Espaldér, <i>the hindermost rower in a galley.</i>
Véla, <i>a sail.</i>		Vogavánte, <i>the fore-man in rowing.</i>
Véla mayór, <i>the main-sheet.</i>		Cómitre, <i>the boat-swain in a galley.</i>
Véla de gábia, <i>the top-sail.</i>		
Perroquéte, <i>the top-gallant sail.</i>		
Véla mefána, <i>the mizzen sail.</i>		

Coffario, or } <i>a pyrate.</i>	Cálma, <i>a calm.</i>
Piráta, }	Viénto en pópa, <i>the wind full astern.</i>
Cámara grande, <i>the great cabbin.</i>	Coger el viénto, <i>to ply to windward.</i>
Torménta, <i>a tempest.</i>	Ir a la bolina, <i>to ply and tack upon a wind.</i>
Borrásca, <i>a storm.</i>	
Bonanza, <i>fair weather.</i>	



## Algúnas Senténcias, y Refránes Españoles. *Some Spanish Sentences, and Proverbs.*

<b>A</b> Zéite, víno, y amigo, antiguo.	<b>O</b> IL, wine, and a friend, the older the better.
Aunque séas prudente viejo, no desdénas el consejo.	Though you be a discreet old man, do not disdain to be advised.
Aunque compuéstala mentira, siempre es vencida.	Alie though never so well disguised, is always worsted.
Aunque vistáis à la móna de feda, móna se queda.	Though you cloath a monkey in silk, it is still a monkey; that is, there is no making a silk purse of a sow's ear.
Asno de muchos, lóbos de cómen.	An ass that has many masters is devour'd by the wolves; that is, every bodies business is no bodies business.
A río rebuélto, ganancia de pescadóres.	It is best fishing in troubled waters.
Aquella es bien casada, que ni tiene suegra, ni cuñada.	She is well marry'd, who has neither mother, nor sister in law.
A quién dices tu puridad, a éste das tu libertad.	When you entrust one with your secret, you give up your liberty.
Aquéllos son ricos, que tienen amigos.	They are rich who have friends.

A quién

- A quién no le sóbra el pan, *He that has not bread to spare, must not keep a dog.*
- A quién dan, no escóge. *Beggars must not be choosers.*
- A pádre guardadór, hijo *A niggardly father has a prodigal son.*
- Cáda ovéja, con su paréja. *All should match with their equals.*
- !Ande yó caliente, y ríase *So I keep myself warm, no matter if people laugh at me.*
- la génte.
- !Antes que te cáses, míra *Mind what you do before you marry; that is, look before you leap.*
- lo que háces.
- Amigo del buén tiémpo, *A fair weather friend, turns with the wind.*
- múdase con el viénto.
- Amigo quebrádo, aunque *Friendship that has been broken, may be patch'd up, but will never be sound.*
- foldádo, núnca es sano.
- Amigo de úno, enemigo *Be a friend but to one, and an enemy to none.*
- de ninguno.
- A lo que puédes sólo, no *When you can do a thing yourself, do not wait for another.*
- espéres a ótro. .
- Al desdichádo, póco levále *If a man is unfortunate, it avails him little to be brave.*
- fer esforzádo.
- Allégate a los buénos, y *Keep good company, and you will be one of them.*
- féras úno déllos.
- Al hómbré osádo, la for- *Fortune favours the bold.*
- túna le da la máno.
- Al buén varón, tiérras *A good man reckons all countries his own.*
- ajénas patria le son.
- Al agradecído, mas de lo *Give a grateful man more than he asks.*
- pedido.
- Al villáno dádle el pie, *Give a clown an inch, and he will take an ell.*
- tomaráse la máno.
- Al que da el capón, dále *If one gives you a capon, give him the leg, and the wing.*
- la piérna, y el alón.
- Al que tiéne mugér her- *He that has a beautiful wife,*
- mosa, ò cástillo en *or a castle on the frontiers,*
- frontérra, or.

frontéra, ò viña en car- *or a vineyard upon the*  
 rera, nunca le fálta *road, is never without*  
 guerra. *quarrels.*

A cabállo dádo, no le *Do not look a gift horse in*  
 míren el diénte. *the mouth.*

Burláos con el áfno, daros *Play with an ass, and he'll*  
 ha en la bárba con el *slap you on the face with*  
 rábo. *his tail. No jesting with*  
*fools.*

Buén principio, la metád *A good beginning is half the*  
 es hécha. *work done.*

Bocádo de mal pan, ni lo *Do not eat a morsel of bad*  
 cómas, ni lo des a tu *bread, nor give it to your*  
 can. *dog.*

Bocádo comído, no gána *What is eaten gains no friend.*  
 amígo. *Past favours forgotten.*

Bien áma, quién nunca *That's a true lover, that*  
 olvída. *never forgets.*

Bien fábe el fábio que no *A wise man is sensible of his*  
 fábe, el necio piénfa *ignorance, a fool thinks*  
 que fábe. *himself wise.*

Béstia que ánda lláno, para *I would have a beast that*  
 mi me la quiéro no pára *carries easy for myself, not*  
 mi hermánó. *for my brother; every one*  
*loves the best for himself.*

Cría cuérvo, y sacárte ha *Breed up a crow, and he'll*  
 el ójo. *pull out your eyes.*

Con latín, rocín, y florín *Latin, a nag, and money*  
 andarás el mún-do. *will carry you through*  
*the world.*

Cóbra buena fama, y *Get a good name, and you*  
 échate en la cáma. *may lye abed.*

Cortesía de bóca múcho *Good words are worth much,*  
 vále, y póco cuésta. *and cost little.*

Cantarillo que múchas vé- *The picher that goes often*  
 ces va à la fuente, ò *to the well, comes home*  
 déxa la áfa, o la frén-te. *broke at last.*

Cada gállo cánta en su *Every cock can crow on his*  
 muladár, *own dunghil,*

Cánta la rana, y no tiene *The frog sings, and yet has*  
 pelo, ni lana. *neither hair, nor wooll.*  
*The poorest people are*  
*merry.*

Casa labrada, y viña plan- *A house ready built, and a*  
 tada. *vineyard ready planted,*  
*i. e. they are best to buy.*

Dó entra el beber, fále el *When the wine is in, the wit*  
 saber. *is out.*

Por dónde fuéres, ház *When you are at Rome, do*  
 cómo viéres. *as they do at Rome.*

Dó falta dicha, por demás *Industry avails little with-*  
 es diligéncia. *out fortune.*

Do fuerza viéne, derécho *Might overcomes right.*  
 se piérde.

Dícen que éres bueno, *They say you are a good*  
 méte la mano en tu *man, but put your hand*  
 féno. *into your bosom; that is,*  
*consult your own consci-*  
*ence.*

Dolór de espóso, dolór de *A husband's sorrow is like*  
 códo, duele mucho, y *a pain in the elbow, very*  
 dura poco. *sharp, but soon over.*

De amigo reconciliado, *Never trust a reconciled*  
 guárdate del cómo del *friend any more than you*  
 diáblo. *would the devil.*

Del agua mansa me guarde *God deliver me from a still*  
 diós, que de la bráva *water, for I will deliver*  
 yo me sabré guardár. *myself from that which is*  
*rough; alluding to the*  
*tempers of people.*

De luéngas vías, luéngas *Long travels produce great*  
 mentíras. *lies.*

De un hombre nécio, à *A fool sometimes gives good*  
 véces buen conséjo. *advice.*

Después de descabrado, *To break a man's head, and*  
 untár el casco. *then give him a plaister.*

Del loco, porrada, ò mála *From a madman you may ex-*  
 palabra. *pect a blow, or ill language.*

Mas



- Mas vále un tóma, que dos te daré. *A bird in hand, is worth two in the bush.*
- Después de beber, cáda uno dice su parecer. *When people have drunk, they are open hearted.*
- Después de comér, dormir ; después de cenár, pássos mil. *After dinner sleep a while, after supper walk a mile.*
- Debáxo de buen fáyo, está el hómbré malo. *A good coat often covers a wicked fellow.*
- De quién póne los ójos en el suélo, no fíes tu dinero. *Do not trust a man that looks on the ground with your money: that is, an hypocrite.*
- Guárdate, de hómbré que no hábla, y de can que no ládra. *Take heed of a man that does not talk, and of a dog that does not bark.*
- Echár el mángo trás el destal. *To throw the belve after the hatchet.*
- 'Echate a enfermár, y fábrás quién te quiere bien, y quién mal. *Take your bed, as if you were sick, and you will know who does, and who does not love you.*
- El dar limósna, nunca méngua la bólsa. *Giving alms never lessens the stock.*
- El perezóso si émpre es menesteróso. *A sloathful man is always needy.*
- El avariénto rico, no tiéne pariente ni amígo. *A covetous rich man has neither relations, nor friends.*
- El bóbo si es calládo, por fesúso es reputádo. *A fool that says little passes for a wise man.*
- El que tiéne tejádos de vidrio, no tíre piedras al de su vezíno. *He whose house is covered with glass, must not throw stones at his neighbours.*
- El huésped, y el péce, a tres dias, hiéde. *A guest and fish stinks when kept three days.*
- El harto del ayúno, no tiéne duélo algúno, *He that is full, has no compassion on him that is fasting.*

- El dar es honor, y el pedir dolor. *It is an honour to give, and a trouble to ask.*
- El hombre es el fuego, la muger la estopa, viene el diablo y sopla. *Man is fire, and woman is tow, the devil comes and blows.*
- El viejo en su tierra, y el mozo en la ajena, mienten de una manera. *An old man in his own, and a young man in another country, are both liars alike.*
- El lobo harto se mete fraile. *When the devil was sick, the devil a monk would be; when the devil was well, the devil a monk was he.*
- En tal signo nací, que quiero mas para mi que para ti. *I was born under such a planet, that I have more kindness for my self than for you.*
- En casa llena presto se guisa la cena. *When the house is full, the supper is soon dress'd.*
- Fortuna, y azeituna, a veces, mucha, a veces ninguna. *Fortune, and olives sometimes come in a glut, and sometimes none at all.*
- Gato escaldado, del agua fría ha miedo. *The burnt child dreads the fire.*
- Humo, y gatera, y muger parlara, echan el hombre de su casa fuera. *A smoaky house, the rain coming in, and a scolding wife, turn a man out of doors.*
- Hijo malo, mas vale doliente que sano. *A wicked son is better sick than in health.*
- Juras del que ama muger, no se han de creer. *The oaths of one that loves a woman are not to be regarded.*
- Los niños de pequeños, que no hai castigo despues para ellos. *Children must be chastised when they are little, for it is afterwards too late.*
- Lo que los ojos no ven, corazón no dessea. *What the eye does not see, the heart does not rue.*
- Los yerros del médico, la tierra los cubre. *The earth hides the mistakes of physicians.*

Lo que no quíeres pára ti, no lo quíeras pára mi.	<i>Do as you would be done by.</i>
La oración bréve súbe al ciélo.	<i>A short prayer reaches heaven.</i>
La traición apláce, mas no el que la háce.	<i>We love the treason, but not the traitor.</i>
La mugér compuésta à su marído quita de puérta ajéna.	<i>A wife well dressed keeps her husband from run- ning to other women.</i>
La víuda ríca, con un ójo llóra, y con el ótro re- píca.	<i>A rich widow weeps with one eye, and laughs with the other.</i>
La mugér, y el víno, fá- can al hómbré de tíno.	<i>Women and wine, make a man mad.</i>
Múla, que háce hin, y mu- gér que parla latín, núncia hiciéron buén fin.	<i>A mule that kicks, and a woman that speaks latin, never come to a good end.</i>
Mugér, viénto, y ventúra présto se múda.	<i>Women, wind, and fortune, are given to change.</i>
Múcho sábe la rapósa, pe- ró mas el que la tóma.	<i>The fox is very cunning, but he is more cunning that catches her.</i>
Mugér placéra, de tódos díce, y tódos délla.	<i>A gossiping woman talks of all people, and all of her.</i>
Múcho sabía el cornúdo, peró mas el que se los púso.	<i>The cuckold was very subtle, but he was more crafty that cuckolded him.</i>
Méte el ruín en tu pajár, y querérte há heredár.	<i>Let a scoundrel into your barn, and he will con- trive to be your heir.</i>
Mas vále favór, que ju- stícia, ni razón.	<i>Favour goes farther than justice and reason.</i>
Mas vále pedír, y men- digár, que en la hórca perneár.	<i>It is better to ask and beg, than to swing on the gal- lows.</i>
Mal me quíeren mis com- mádrés, porque dígo las verdádes.	<i>My gossips bear me ill will, because I speak the truth.</i>

Mas vále guardár, que demandár. *It is better to be sparing, than to beg.*

Mas vále mála avenéncia, que buéna senténcia. *A bad composition is better than a favourable judgment.*

Mas fábe el lóco en su cása, que el cuérdo en la ajéna. *A mad man knows his own business better than a wise man does another's.*

Mas vále a quién diós ayúda, que el que mucho madruga. *He thrives better who has God's blessing, than he that rises early.*

Núnca espéres, que hága tu amigo lo quo tu pudiéres. *Never expect your friend to do that which you can do yourself.*

No es náda, sinó que mátan a mi marido. *The matter is not much but that they are killing my husband.*

No hái mejór maéstra, que necesidad y pobreza. *There is no better mistress than necessity and want.*

No hái mal tan lastiméro, cómo no tener dinero. *No calamity so grievous, as to be without money.*

No hái mejór bocádo, que el hurtádo. *No bit so sweet as that which is stolen.*

No hái peór fórho, que el que no quiere oír. *None so deaf as he that will not hear.*

Niña, viña, perál, y habár, malos son de guardar. *A girl, a vineyard, a garden of peas, and a field of beans, are hard to be kept.*

Ni por cása, ni por viña, no tomes mugér ximia. *Do not for the sake of an house, or of a vineyard take a monkey wife; that is, deformed.*

No hái sábado sin sol, ni viejo sin dolor, ni mocica sin arrebol. *There is no saturday without some sunshine, nor an old man without an ailing, nor a young wench without a charm.*

- Ni de estopa, buena camisa; ni de puta, buena amiga. *There is no having a good shirt of tow, nor a good friend of a whore.*
- Ni caválgues en pótro, ni tu mugér alábes a ótro. *Do not ride upon a colt, nor praise your wife to another man.*
- Ni firmes carta que no Léas, ni bébas água que no véas. *Never sign any writing without reading, nor drink water without looking into it.*
- Ni à rico débas, ni à pobre prométras. *Never owe money to a rich man, nor promise anything to a poor one.*
- Nécios, y porfiados hacen ricos los letrados. *Fools, and obstinate people enrich lawyers.*
- Ovéja que bála, bocádo pierde. *The sheep that bleats loses a mouthful.*
- Oír, ver, y callár, récias cosas son de obrár. *It is very hard to hear, see, and say nothing.*
- Por ningún tempéro, déxes el camíno réal por el fendéro. *Whatsoever the weather is, do not leave the highway to follow the path.*
- Por hacer placér al sueño, ni saya, ni camisa tengo. *Through indulging of sleep, I have neither petticoat, nor smock.*
- Por mucho madrugár, no amanéce mas aína. *Rising early makes it not day the sooner.*
- Póco, y en paz, mucho se me haz. *A little in peace is much to me.*
- Por el hilo, sacarás el ovillo; y por lo pasado, lo no venído. *You will find the clue by the thread, and what is to come by what is past.*
- Por dinero, báila el perro. *The dog dances for money; money makes the mare to go.*
- Por ser Réy, se quiebra toda ley. *All justice is broke to gain a crown.*
- Pléito, y orinál, llévan el hombre al hospítal. *Lawyers and physicians send a man to the hospital.*

- Piénsa el ladrón, que todos *The thief thinks all men ũke*  
son de su condición. *him.*
- Pescadór de vára, mas có- *An angler eats more than he*  
me que gána. *gets.*
- Peléan los ladrones, descú- *When thieves fall out, honest*  
brense los húrto. *men come by their goods.*
- Pérro ladradór, nunca *A barking dog never bites.*  
buén morderór.
- Pára amór, ni muérte, no *No house is strong enough to*  
háí cása fuérte. *keep out love and death.*
- Paños lúcen en palácio, *Fine cloaths are regarded at*  
que no híjos dálgo. *court, and not gentility.*
- Palábras de fánto, y úñas *To talk like a saint, and claw*  
de gáto. *like a cat.*
- Pága lo que débes, fabrás *Pay your debts, and you'll*  
lo que tiénes. *know what you are worth.*
- Panadéra éras ántes, y *Formerly you was a baker,*  
aora tráhes guántes. *and now you wear gloves.*
- Quién à todos créce, yér- *He who believes all men is*  
ra; quién à ninguno, *in the wrong, and he who*  
no aciérta. *believes none is not in the*  
*right.*
- Quién no álza un alfilér, *He that will not take up a*  
no estíma à su mugér. *pin, does not value his wife.*
- Quién fía, ò prométe, en *He that is bound for ano-*  
déuda se méte. *ther, or makes a promise,*  
*contracts a debt.*
- Quién dá lo súyo ántes de *He who gives away what*  
morír, aparéjase à bien *he has before he dies, must*  
sufrír. *prepare to endure much.*
- Quién há criádos, há ene- *He who has servants, has*  
migos no escusádos. *unavoidable enemies.*
- Quién no tuviére que ha- *He who wants something to*  
cér, árme navío, ò tome *do, may fit out a ship, or*  
mugér. *marry a wife.*
- Quién póco tiéne, y ésto *He who has little, and gives*  
dá, présto se arrepentirá. *it away, will soon repent.*
- Quién à la rapósa há de *He that will deceive the fox*  
engañar, cúmplele ma- *must rise betimes.*  
drugár.

- Quién tiéne quátro, y gásta He who gets four, and  
cínco, no ha menestér spends five, has no need  
bolsíco. of a purse.
- Quién ruín es en su tierra, He that is base in his own  
ruín es en la ajéna. country, is so in another.
- Quién lo féo ama, her- He who loves that which is  
móso le parece. deformed, fancies it hand-  
some.
- Quién á su pérro quiere He that will kill his dog  
matár, rábia le há de must say he is mad.  
levantár.
- Quién cóme la váca del He who eats the king's cow,  
Réy, à cien años pága pays for the bones an  
los huéssos. hundred years after.
- Quién te háce la fiésta, He that gives you a treat,  
que no te fuéle hácer, ò and did not use to do it,  
te quiere engañár, ò te either designs to deceive,  
há menestér. or stands in need of you.
- Quién de présto deter- He that resolves in haste,  
mína, de espácio se ar- repents at leisure.  
repiénte.
- Quién léngua há, à Róma He who has languages may  
vá. travel to Rome.
- Quién bién quiere à Bel- Love me, and love my dog.  
tran, bién quiere à su can.
- Quién al ciélo escúpe, en He that spits at heaven, has  
la cára le cáe. it fall in his face.
- Quién léxos se vá à casár, He who goes far to be mar-  
ò vá engañádo, ò vá à ried, either is deceived,  
engañar. or goes to deceive.
- Quién siémбра en el ca- He that sows in the high-  
míno, cànsa los buéyes ways, tires his oxen, and  
y piérde el trígó. loses his corn.
- Quiéres que te síga el can, If you would have the dog  
dále pan. follow you, give him bread.
- Quién se cása por amóres, They that marry for love,  
málos dias, y buénas have bad days, and good  
nóches. nights.

Quién

- Quién pobreza tién, de *He that is poor is despised by*  
 sus déudos es desdén; *his kindred, and he that is*  
 y el rico fin sérlo, de *rich is a kin to every body,*  
 todos es déudo. *though he be not.*
- Quándo el coflário pro- *When the pyrate makes vows*  
 méte missas, y cera, *to heaven, his vessel is in*  
 con mal ánda la galéra. *a bad plight.*
- Quándo el hiérro está en- *You must strike whilst the*  
 cendído, entónces há de *iron is hot.*  
 fer batído.
- Quándo el villáno está en *Set a beggar a horse-back,*  
 el mulo, no conóce à *and he will ride to the*  
 diós, ni al mundo. *devil.*
- Quándo el hombre méa *When a man bepisses his*  
 las bótas, no es buéno *boots, he is not fit for*  
 para las mózas. *young women.*
- Quándo el diáblo réza, *When the fox preaches, take*  
 engañarte quiere. *heed of the geese.*
- Quál el dueño, tal el pérro. *Like master, like man.*
- Riñen las commádras, des- *When gossips quarrel, the*  
 cubrense las verdádes. *truth comes out.*
- Ratón que no sabe mas de *The cat soon catches the*  
 un horádo, préstole *mouse that knows but one*  
 cóge el gáto. *hole.*
- Súfre por saber, y trabája *Have patience to learn, and*  
 por tenér. *take pains to be rich.*
- Si tenéis la cabeça de ví- *If you have a glass head,*  
 drio, no os toméis à *do not pretend to throw*  
 pedrádas conmigo. *stones at me.*
- Siéntate en tu lugar, no *Sit in your own place, and*  
 te harán levantár. *you will not be forced to*  
*rise.*
- Si el nécio no fuéssé al *If fools did not go to market,*  
 mercádo, no se vende- *that which is nought would*  
 ría lo málo. *not be sold.*
- Si quieres aprendér à orár, *If you would learn to pray,*  
 éntra en la mar. *go to sea.*
- Si te dá el póbre, es pór- *If a poor man gives, it is in*  
 que mas tome. *hopes to receive more.*



Si quiéres vivír sano, házte viéjo tempráno.	<i>If you would be healthy, be old betimes.</i>
Sé mózo bién mandádo, y comerás con tu amo.	<i>Be a diligent servant, and you will eat with your master.</i>
Salió del lódo, y entró en el arróyo.	<i>He leaped out of the frying- pan into the fire.</i>
Tópanse los hómbrés, y no los móntes.	<i>Men meet, but mountains do not.</i>
Tódos los duélos, con pan son ménos.	<i>Fat sorrows are better than lean.</i>
Una golondrina no háce veráno.	<i>One swallow makes no sum- mer.</i>
Viéjo amador, inviérno con flór.	<i>An amorous old man is like flowers in winter.</i>
Vendér miél al colmené- ro.	<i>To sell honey to him that keeps hives; that is, to carry coals to Newcastle.</i>
Vánse los amóres, y qué- dan los dolóres.	<i>Love goes off, but the sting of it remains.</i>
Vánse los gátos, y estién- dense los rátos.	<i>When the cat's away, the mice play.</i>
Yérba mála, no la empéce la heláda.	<i>The frost does not hinder the growth of weeds; that is, ill weeds grow apace.</i>
Yantár tárde, y cenár cé- do, fácan la meriéndá de en médio.	<i>A late dinner, and an early supper, save an after- noon's luncheon.</i>
Zorrílla que múcho tárda, cáza aguárda.	<i>The fox that stays out long, waits for a prey.</i>
Zorrílla tagarnilléra, há- cese muérta por asír préfa.	<i>The subtle fox counterfeits being dead, to lay hold of the prey.</i>
Por dó salta la cábra, sal- ta la que la máma.	<i>Where the goat leaps, the kid follows; that is, cat after kind.</i>



Nombres próprios de Hómbres y Mugéres.  
*Proper Names of Men and Women.*

<b>A</b> Mbrósio, <i>Ambrose.</i>	Fernándo, <i>Ferdinand.</i>
Andrés, <i>Andrew.</i>	Juán, <i>John.</i>
Augustín, <i>Augustin.</i>	Lorénzo, <i>Lawrence.</i>
Bartholomé, <i>Bartholomew.</i>	Luís, <i>Lewis.</i>
Beníto, <i>Benedict.</i>	Lúcas, <i>Luke.</i>
Bernárdo, <i>Bernard.</i>	Lucía, <i>Lucy.</i>
Catarína, <i>Catherine.</i>	Márcos, <i>Mark.</i>
Cecília, <i>Cecily.</i>	Martín, <i>Martin.</i>
Sufána, <i>Susan.</i>	Mathías, <i>Matthias.</i>
Chrisóstomo, <i>Chrysoptom.</i>	Nicolás, <i>Nicholas.</i>
Christóval, <i>Christopher.</i>	Páblo, <i>Paul.</i>
Cárlos, <i>Charles.</i>	Philípe, <i>Philip.</i>
Domíngo, <i>Dominick.</i>	Margaríta, <i>Margaret.</i>
Estévan, <i>Stephen.</i>	Sebastián, <i>Sebastian.</i>
Francísco, <i>Francis.</i>	Simón, <i>Simon.</i>
Guillérmo, <i>William.</i>	Thomás, <i>Thomas.</i>
Jerónimo, <i>Jerome.</i>	Isabel, <i>Elizabeth.</i>
Jorge, <i>George.</i>	María, <i>Mary.</i>
Diégo, <i>James.</i>	'Ana, <i>Anne.</i>
Henríque, <i>Henry.</i>	Joséph, <i>Joseph.</i>

Vérbos tocántes á las Persónas de Hómbres, y  
 Mugéres.  
*Verbs relating to the Persons of Men and Wo-*  
*men.*

Andár, <i>to go.</i>	Comér, <i>to eat.</i>
Corrér, <i>to run.</i>	Bebér, <i>to drink.</i>
Saltár, <i>to leap.</i>	Hartárfc, <i>to gorge.</i>
Danzár, } <i>to dance.</i>	Ayunár, <i>to fast.</i>
báilar, }	Chupár, <i>to suck.</i>
	Mastár,

Mascár, <i>to chew.</i>	Jugár, <i>to play.</i>
Tragár, <i>to swallow.</i>	Trabajar, <i>to work.</i>
Rascár, <i>to scratch.</i>	Escribir, <i>to write.</i>
Espulgar, <i>to pick fleas.</i>	Holgar, <i>to be idle.</i>
Acostarse, <i>to go to bed.</i>	Leer, <i>to read.</i>
Dormir, <i>to sleep.</i>	Despertar, <i>to awake.</i>
Levantarse, <i>to rise.</i>	Huir, <i>to run away.</i>
Vestirse, <i>to put on one's</i>	Bravear, <i>to boast.</i>
<i>cloaths.</i>	Alabar, <i>to praise.</i>
Tocarse, <i>a woman to dress</i>	Despreciar, <i>to despise.</i>
<i>her head.</i>	Soltar, <i>to let go.</i>
Hacerse la barba, <i>to trim.</i>	Abrazar, <i>to embrace.</i>
Bostezar, <i>to yawn.</i>	Atacar, <i>to lace.</i>
Velar, <i>to watch.</i>	Abotonar, <i>to button.</i>
Calzarse los zapatos, <i>to</i>	llamar, <i>to call.</i>
<i>put on shoes.</i>	Rezár, <i>to pray.</i>
Calzarse las medias, <i>to</i>	Predicar, <i>to preach.</i>
<i>put on stockings.</i>	Obedecer, <i>to obey.</i>
Enfermar, <i>to grow sick.</i>	Mandar, <i>to command.</i>
Curar, <i>to cure.</i>	Gobernar, <i>to govern.</i>
Herir, <i>to wound.</i>	Parir, <i>to bring forth.</i>
Matar, <i>to kill.</i>	Bezar, <i>to kiss.</i>
Emborrachar, } <i>to make</i>	Hacer testamento, <i>to make</i>
embeodár, } <i>drunk.</i>	<i>a will.</i>



## Phrases Familiáres. *Familiar Phrases.*

<b>T</b> engo mucho sueño, <i>I am very sleepy.</i>	Despertad, <i>Awake.</i>
Dexádmе dormir, <i>Let me</i>	Dormís demasiado, <i>You</i>
<i>sleep.</i>	<i>sleep too much.</i>
Dormís? <i>Are you asleep?</i>	Levantáos presto, <i>Rise</i>
Estáis aún en la cama? <i>Are you in bed still?</i>	<i>quickly.</i>
	Porqué no os dáis prisa? <i>Why do you not make haste?</i>
	Estáis

- Estáis levantádo? *Are you up?* Queréis salsa? *Will you have sauce?*
- Cuidádo no os resfriéis, *Take care you do not get cold.* Con sal me contento, *I am satisfied with salt.*
- Vestíos, *Put on your cloaths.* Porqué no coméis? *Why do you not eat?*
- Lavád las mãos, *Wash your hands.* Aquí está la pechúga de una pólla, *Here is the wing of a pullet.*
- Peinád la cabéza, *Comb your head.* No coméis pan? *Don't you eat bread?*
- Atacádme, *Lace me.* Queréis beber? Pedídllo. *Will you drink? Call for it.*
- Ayudáme, *Help me.* Dádme un bocádo de qué-fo, *Give me a bit of cheese.*
- Calzádme, *Put on my shoes and stockings.* No hái frúta? *Is there no fruit?*
- Havéis rezádo? *Have you said your prayers?* Quirád los mantéles, *Take off the table-cloth.*
- Adónde están mis horas? *Where is my prayer-book?* Juguémos à los náipes, *Let us play at cards.*
- Queréis almorzár? *Will you breakfast?* Mas vale írnos al jardín, *We had better go into the garden.*
- Decídmel lo que queréis, *Tell me what you will have.* Hâce mucho frío, y nos podremos acatarrár, *It is very cold, and we may get a cold.*
- Unos huévos, *Some eggs.* Hâce calor y no es sano el andár à médio día, *The weather is hot, and it is not wholesome to walk at noon.*
- Una xícara de chocolate, *A dish of chocolate.* Quedémonos pués aquí, *Then let us stay here.*
- Eshóra de comer, *It is dinner time.* Durmámos la siésta, *Let us take an afternoon's nap.*
- Sentáos à la mésa, *Sit down to table.* Aquí
- No téngo servilléta, ni cuchillo, ni tenedór, *I have no napkin, nor knife, nor fork.*
- Esta ólla está bién gui-fada, *This soup is very well made.*
- No cómo carne górda, *I eat no fat meat.*

Aquí viéne fuláno, *Here comes such a one.*

Rogadle que éntre, *Desire him to come in.*

Que nuévas tráhe v. md, *What news do you bring.*

No hái cósa de nuévo, *There is nothing new.*

Ciéрто que hái muchas novedádes, *Indeed there is much news.*

Contádnos algúna cósa, *Tell us something.*

Dícen que el cónde de N. se há casádo, *They say the earl of N. is married.*

Que se cáse, ò se déxe de casár, que nos importa? *Whether he marries or marries not, what does it concern us?*

Hái avíso que el duque de N. se ha muerto, *There is advice that the duke of N. is dead.*

Mas quiéro que se muerán féis dúques, que morir-me yó, *I had rather six dukes should die than die myself.*

Si no hacéis cáso de mis nuévas, que queréis que os diga? *If you do not regard my news, what would you have me say to you?*

Morírse éste, ò casárse el ótro, cósa es que cáda día sucéde, y la repub-

lica póco gána, ò piérde en éllo, *For one man to die and another to be married is what happens every day, and the publick neither gains nor loses much by it.*

Múchos son de parecér que havrá guérra, *Many are of opinion that there will be a war.*

Otros porfían que ha de havér paz, *Others affirm there will be peace.*

Los corsários de Argél hacen múcho daño, *The Algier rovers do much mischief.*

Pués los de Túnes y Tripóli no están ociosos, *Those of Tunis and Tripoli are not idle.*

Conocéis aquélla dáma? *Do you know that lady?*

Bién la conósko, es múi hermosa, *I know her very well, she is a great beauty.*

Múi modesta, y múi discreta, *Very modest, and very discreet.*

Tiéne gran dóte, *She has a great portion.*

Su mádre siémpre la acompaña, *Her mother is always with her.*

La hía es múi obediénte, *The daughter is very obedient.*

- Y la madre bien lo merece, *And the mother deserves it.* Que nos importa, *What is that to us.*
- Pues fu hijo es bizarro caballero, *Then her son is a fine gentleman.* Vámos à la plaza, *Let us go to the square.*
- Ha servido con reputacion en la guerra, *He has served in the war with reputation.* Que harémos allá? *What shall we do there?*
- Además, es hombre de letras, *Besides he is a man of learning.* Ver y fer vístos, *See and be seen.*
- Múi cortés, *Very courteous.* Que hóra es? *What a clock is it?*
- Náda fanfarrón, *Nothing given to boasting.* Son las quátro, *Four a clock.*
- Por su valór ha medrado, *He has been preferred for his valour.* No puéde fer, *It cannot be.*
- Es Coronél de un tércio, *He is colonel of a regiment.* Por mi relóx así es, *It is so by my watch.*
- Véis aquél que pássa? *Do you see him that goes by?* Por el sol no falta un quártoto, *It does not want a quarter by the sun.*
- Quién es? *Who is he?* Aún es tempráno pára salir de cása, *It is too early to go abroad yet.*
- Es tódo lo contrário del ótro, *He is just the reverse of the other.* Mas vále andár de día, que de nóche, *It is better to walk by day than by night.*
- Cómo así? *How so?* De nóche tódos los gátos son párdos, *At night all cats are gray.*
- Es un miserable, *He is a wretched fellow.* Múchos róbos se cométen de nóche, *Many robberies are committed in the night.*
- Cobárde en estrémo, *A great coward.* Siéndo tantos, quién se há de atrevér? *Being so many, who will dare to attempt us?*
- Sumaménte ignoránte, *Supinely ignorant.* La nóche es múi fría, *The night is very cold.*
- Desvergonzádo, *Impudent.* Hagámos buena lúmbre, *Let us make a good fire.*
- Echadór de bravátas, *Always bullying.*

- Trahéd carbón, *Bring coals.* Lástima es que se imprí-  
 Echád leña, *Lay on wood.* man tales disparates, *It*  
 Cerrád éssa puérta, *Shut is pity that such fopperies*  
*that door.* *should be printed.*
- Leámos un ráto, *Let us* La empréнта háce mucho  
*read a while.* *bién, y mucho mal,*  
 Que libros son éstos? *Printing does much good,*  
*What books are these? and much harm.*
- Tódos son de entreten- Adónde hái buen gobiér-  
 mién-to, *They are all of no no debiéra hacer mal,*  
*diversion.* *Where the government is*  
 No gústo de novélas, *I do good it should do no harm.*  
*not like novels.* Adónde se hálla ésse buen  
 Ahí hái Comedias, *There* *gobierno? Where is that*  
*are plays.* *good government to be*  
 Si son buenas se puéden found?  
 leér, *If they are good* En todas pártes hái su lē-  
*they may be read.* *gua de mal camíno,*  
 Son de los mejóres poétas, *There is something amiss*  
*They are writ by the every where.*  
*best poets.* No hái cósa perfecta en  
 Mejor es história, *History* *éste mundo, Nothing is*  
*is better.* *perfect in this world.*
- Pués que os parece de Dexémonos de cuéntos, y  
 viages? *What do you no juzguémos, Let us*  
*think of voyages?* *leave off stories, and not*  
 Nos dan a conocér todo judge.  
 el mundo, sin salir de Merendémos, *Let's eat*  
 nuéstra patria, *They our afternoon's luncheon.*  
*make us acquainted with* 'Eſso es de niños, *That is*  
*all the world, without like children.*  
*going out of our native* Mózos sómos, comámos  
*country.* *miéntras podemos, We*  
 A veces nos llénan la ca- *are young, let's eat*  
 béza de mentíras, *Some- whilst we can.*  
*times they fill our heads* Pasiéémonos un ráto, *Let*  
*with lies.* *us walk a little.*
- Lo mismo hácen las histó- El áire es templádo, *The*  
 rias, *Histories do the same.* *air is temperate.*

- Volvamos à la ciudad, Y sôbre tódo la señôra,  
*Let us return to the city. And the lady above all.*  
 Linda cãlle es ésta, This Mui obligáda les estói, I  
*is a fine street. am much obliged to you.*  
 Las tiénda son hermosas, Adónde hái mérito, no  
*The shops are beautiful. hái obligaciôn, Where*  
 Mirád la pómpa de aquel *there is merit, there is no*  
 tendéro, *See how statelly obligation.*  
*that shop-keeper is.*  
 Bién sobérbios son mu- mi persôna, *Praise my*  
 chos, *Many are very goods and not my person.*  
*proud.*  
 En teniéndo dinéro se en- *!Eso fué in justícia, That*  
 fãchan, *When they would be unjust.*  
*have got money they*  
*grow haughty.*  
 Aquella tendéra parece *Comprád lo que se vénde,*  
 una condéfa, *Buy what is to be sold.*  
*That fe- Mas quisiéra la señôra que*  
*male shop-keeper, looks tóda la tiénda, I would*  
*like a countess. rather have the mistress*  
*than all the shop.*  
 Comprémos algúna cósã, *Mi marido no me vénde,*  
*Let us buy something. My husband will not sell*  
*me.*  
 Que gústan vuestras mer- *Ni el querrá deshacérse de*  
 cédes? *What will you tal alãja, ni hái précio*  
*please to have? que la cômpre, Neither*  
*will be part with such a*  
 Una tabaquera curiôsa, *jewel, nor will any mo-*  
*A curious snuff-box. ney purchase it.*  
 Tixéras de Frãncia, *Aquí viéne mi marido,*  
*French scizars. Here comes my husband.*  
 Hevíllas de las mejôres, *Dichôso es el, He is a*  
*Some of the best buckles. happy man.*  
 Aquí náda fãlta, *Havéis mostrádo à éstos*  
*no want of any thing. señôres lo que les agra-*  
*Vuestras mercedes véan lo dá? Have you shown*  
*que les agráda, Gentle- these gentlemen what they*  
*men, see what pleases you. like?*  
 Tódo nos parece bién, *We like all.*



- Tódo aquí nos contémta, *All here pleases us.*  
 'Eſſo eſlo que deſéo, *That is what I wiſh.*  
 Múi venturóſo ſóis, *You are very fortunate.*  
 No me puédo quexár de mi fuérte, *I cannot complain of my lot.*  
 Diós os guárde, *God keep you.*  
 El miſmo váya con vueſtras mercédes, *God go with you.*  
 Acá volverémos por lo que ſe ofreciére, *We ſhall return hither for what we want.*  
 Serán ſervídos con tóda eſtimación, *You ſhall be ſerved with all reſpect.*  
 Havéis viſto mas bélla criatúra? *Did you ever ſee a more charming creature?*  
 Parece que os há enamórado, *You ſeem to be in love with her.*  
 Mi amor eſ caſto, *My love is chaſte.*  
 Su preféncia lo meréce, *Her preſence deſerves it.*  
 Aquí tenéis ótro eſtrémo, *Here you have the contrary extreme.*  
 Diós nos libre, *God deliver us.*  
 De que os aſuſtáis? *What are you frightened at?*  
 De mirár un demónio, *deſpués de haver viſto un Angel, To look upon a devil after having ſeen an angel.*  
 Tan féa cómo eſ, preſúme de ſi, *As ugly as ſhe is, ſhe has a conceit of herſelf.*  
 Paſſémos, que no puédo tolerárla, *Let us paſs by, for I cannot endure her.*  
 El Réy viéne, Diós le guárde, *The king is coming, God bleſs him.*  
 Parémonos aquí, *Let us ſtand here.*  
 Quién viéne en el cóche con ſu mageſtád? *Who is in the coach with his majeſty?*  
 La Reyna nueſtra ſeñóra ſoberána, *Our ſovereign lady the queen.*  
 Los ótros dos perſonáges, *The other two great perſons.*  
 El caballerízo mayór, *The maſter of the horſe.*  
 Y el gran teforéro, *And the high treaſurer.*  
 En el primér cóche quien hái? *Who is in the firſt coach?*  
 Los gentíles hómbrés, *The gentlemen uſhers.*  
 Las libréas ſon múi rícas, *The liveries are very rich.*

- Las guárdas son vistófas, *The guards are a very fine sight.* No señálan los tribútos? *Donot they set the Taxes?*
- Adónde va su magestád? *Whither is his majesty going?* También esso les tóca, *That also belongs to them.*
- A la comédia, *To the play.* No lo rehúsan a véces? *Do not they refuse it sometimes.*
- Pues lo sabéis, decidme algo de la corte, *Since you know it, tell me something of the court.* Los Españóles son muy leales, *The Spaniards are very loyal.*
- Las córtés tódas se parecen, *All courts resemble one another.* No respondéis à mi pregunta, *You do not answer my question.*
- Peró el gobiérno de España cómo es? *But how is the government of Spain?* Paréceme que sí, *I think I do.*
- El Réy es absoluto, *The king is absolute.* Cómo así? *How so?*
- Que son las Córtés? *What are the Cortes?* Porque siendo tan leales, le dan à su Rey lo que pide, *Because being so loyal, they give the king what he asks.*
- Los procuradóres del Réino, *The representatives of the kingdom.* Y el Réy no pide mas de lo que há menester, *And the king asks no more than he wants.*
- Tienen poder sobre el Réy? *Have they any power above the king?* Dichoso Réy, y dichosa gente, *an happy king, and an happy people.*
- El Réy de España no conoce superior, *The king of Spain owns no superior.* Contádme las grandézas de España, *Tell me what relates to the grandeur of Spain.*
- De que sirven las Córtés? *What is the use of the Cortes?* Hai en España doce Réinos, ó provincias grandes, *There are in Spain twelve kingdoms, or large provinces.*
- De representár las necesidades del Réino, *To represent the wants of the kingdom.*

- Quáles son? *Which are they?* *nasteries are reckoned to be above 9000.*
- Castílla, (*Castile*), Leon, Aragón, Navarra, (*Navarre*) Catalúña (*Catalonia*) Galícia, Valéncia, Murcia, Biscáya, (*Biscay*) Granáda, Andalucía, Estremadura.
- Estas contienen diez y seis mil, y setecientas villas, *These contain 16700 towns.*
- Once Arzobispádos, 11 *archbishopricks.*
- Quarénta y ocho Opispádos, 48 *bishopricks.*
- Quince Universidádes, 15 *universities.*
- Les réntas reáles móntan tréinta millones de ducádos, *The king's revenue amounts to 30 millions of ducats.*
- La rénta de los susodíchos arzobispados y opispádos, dos millones de ducádos, *The revenues of the aforesaid archbishopricks and bishopricks are two millions of ducats.*
- Las prebéndas, paróchias, y otros beneficios otro tanto, *The prebends, parishes, and other benefices as much more.*
- Convéntos se cuéntan mas de nueve mil, *The monasteries are reckoned to be above 9000.*
- Las persónas religiósas sénta mil, *The religious persons 70000.*
- Las haciendas de los Duques que son Grandes de España se estiman en un millón nuevecientos y novénta mil ducádos, *The estates of the dukes that are Grandees 1990000 ducats.*
- Las de los Marquéses Grandes trecientos y cinquenta mil, *Those of the marquesses Grandees at 350000.*
- Las de los Condes Grandes trecientos y cinquenta mil, *Those of the earls, Grandees 350000.*
- Las de los Dúques, Marquéses, y Cóndes, que no son Grandes, tres millones ciéto y cinquenta mil, *Those of the dukes, marquesses, and earls who are not Grandees three millions 150000.*
- Tódo ésto en España, *All this in Spain.*
- Los domínios de las Indias son inménfos, *The dominions in the Indies are immense.*

Su thesóro enriquece à todo el mundo, *Its treasures enrich all the world.*

Recojámonos pára tratar dessas cósas, que gústo múcho déllas, *Let us*

*go home to talk of these affairs, for I am much delighted with them.*

Vámos que se lléga la nóche, *Let us go, for night draws on.*



## Colóquio Priméro en úna Hostelería. *First discourse in an Inn.*

**A.** **D**Iós féa en ésta cáfa. Olá, quien hâi allá dentro?

**B.** En hóra buéna vénga v. m.

**A.** Sóis vos el huespéd?

**B.** Sói el mózo, y criádo de cáfa, para servir à los huespedes honrádos como v. m.

**A.** Seré yó bién hospedádo aquí ésta nóche?

**B.** Si señor, v. m. será muí bien tratádo, y no le faltára cósa que apetéscá.

**A.** Cómo se lláma el huésped?

**B.** Llámase Guillérmo el Buéno.

**A.** Quiéra Diós que tal le hálle. Quál es la enféña de su cáfa?

**A.** **G**OD be in this house. Hoy, who is there within?

**B.** Sir, you are very welcome.

**A.** Are you the landlord?

**B.** I am the man, and servant of the house, to serve such worthy guests as you, Sir.

**A.** Shall I be well entertained here to night?

**B.** Yes, Sir, you will be very well treated, and shall want for nothing you can desire.

**A.** What is my landlord's name?

**B.** His name is William Good.

**A.** God grant I may find him such. What sign has he to his house?

**B.** Mejór

**B.** Mejor no le hallará v. m. en ninguna parte. La enseña es la justicia. *B. You will not find a better any where. The sign is Justice.*

**A.** Buen huésped en casa, y la justicia à la puerta, no hai mas que desear, sino es que seáis vos conforme a lo demás. *A. A good landlord in the house, and justice at the door, there is nothing else to be desir'd, but that you be suitable to the rest.*

**B.** V. m. diga de mi lo que la experiencia le enseñare; que no es de hombres honrados alabarse à si propios. *B. Sir, You may speak of me as you shall find by experience; for it is not the part of honest men to commend themselves.*

**A.** Ea pues, llevád mi caballo a lo caballeriza, dádle harta paja, y no le quitéis luego la silla, que viene sudado. *A. Well then, lead my horse to the stable, litter him well, and take not off his saddle presently, because he is hot.*

**B.** Manda v. m. que le lleve al río a beber, o que le dé agua en la caballeriza? *B. Do you please I shall lead him to the river to drink, or that I give him water in the stable.*

**A.** Dexádle primero refrescar, y después dádle el agua, no le de torozón el beber estando tan caliente. *A. Let him cool first, and then give him his water, lest he should have the gripes by drinking when he is hot.*

**B.** V. m. es servido que le quite las botas, y le trahiga unos pantúflos? *B. Does it please you, Sir, that I draw off your boots, and bring you a pair of slippers.*

**A.** Bien dices, trahédlos; porqué he perdido mis zapatos en el camino. Trahédme tambien una escobilla para limpiar el vestido, y agua *A. You are in the right; bring them, for I have lost my shoes by the way. Bring me also a brush to clean my cloaths, and water to cool my hands,*

pára refrescárme las má-  
nos y la bóca, y quitár  
túdo éste pólvó.

*and mouth, and get rid  
of all this dust.*

B. Aquí tiéne v. m. túdo  
lo que pide; descánse,  
y mire si quiere cenár  
sólo, o con lós ótros  
huéspedes.

B. *Here is all you ask for,  
Sir, rest your self, and  
consider whether you  
will sup alone, or with  
the other guests.*

A. Mas vale cenár adón-  
de hai conversación  
que sólo, y en cenádo  
me acostaré, que véngo  
cansádo, y quiéro des-  
cansár.

A. *It is better to sup with  
company, than alone,  
and when I have supped,  
I will go to bed, for I  
am weary, and will rest  
me.*

B. Muí bien hará v. m.  
peró con ayuda de un  
traguíto de víno, se  
duérme mejór.

B. *You will do very well,  
Sir, but with the help of  
a little wine, a man sleeps  
better.*

A. No es málo él confé-  
jo, yó me acomodó  
con el; Vámos pués, si  
es hóra.

A. *Your advice is not amiss,  
it fits me; let us go then,  
if it is time.*

B. Túdo está aparejádo,  
y sólo espéran a v. m.

B. *All is ready, and they  
only wait for you, Sir.*

A. Pués yó vói, que no  
es razón hacér desco-  
modidad à los demás;  
y pára decir la verdád,  
me háлло bien dispuéstó  
pára comér; que la  
hámbré empiéza à pi-  
cár. Múcho me alégro,  
Señóres, de hallár tan  
buéna compañía, v. m.  
se sirvan de sentárse.

A. *I go then, for it is not  
reasonable to incommode  
the rest; and to say the  
truth, I find my self well  
disposed to eat, for hun-  
ger begins to pinch. Gen-  
tlemen, I am very glad  
to find such good compa-  
ny, be pleased to sit  
down.*

C. En tomádo v. m. su  
assiénto, nos irémos tó-  
dos acomodádo.

C. *Sir, when you are seat-  
ed, we will all place our  
selves.*

*A. Múcho*

- A. Mucho me hónran v<sup>s</sup>. m<sup>s</sup>. yó aquí estói mui bién; no gastémos el tiémpo en cumplimientos, que la cena fría no es buena.*
- D. Pues éste Caballéro lo mánda, obedescámos. Aquí no son menester trinchantes, mejor es que cada uno éche mano à lo que le agradare, y comámos ahora; que después havrá tiémpo para discurrir lo necesario.*
- A. 'Esto es lo que à mi me conviene, por haver hécho jornada larga, y comido poco.*
- E. Mózo, dame de beber, para aguzár el apetito.*
- B. V. m. me diga lo que gusta de beber.*
- E. Dame un buen trago de vino de Fráncia, que es el mejor à mi gusto.*
- A. A mi, un buen vaso de cervéza, que tengo sed, y es buena para matarla.*
- D. Si tenéis buena cidra, por principio de cena me agrada mas que otra bebida.*
- C. Pues para mi, el vino del Rhin es el mayor regalo, si es verdadero.*
- A. You honour me much, Gentlemen, I am very well here; let us not waste time in compliments, for the supper cold, is not good.*
- D. Since this gentleman commands it, let us obey. Here is no need of carvers, it is better for every one to lay hold of what he likes, and let us eat now, for we shall have time to talk as much as is requisite afterwards.*
- A. That suits me very well, because I have made a long journey, and eaten little.*
- E. Waiter, give me drink to sharpen my appetite.*
- B. Sir, you will tell me what you please to drink.*
- E. Give me a good glass of French wine, which is the best in my opinion.*
- A. Give me a good cup of beer, for I am thirsty, and that is good to quench it.*
- D. If you have good cyder, I like it better than any other liquor to begin with at supper.*
- C. For me, Rhenish wine is most delicious, if it be right.*

\*

*E. Dícen;*

- E. Dícen, que el vino de Canárias és pára mugéres, però à mi gústo, no hai ninguno que se le iguale.* *E. They say Canary is for women, but for my palate none is to compare to it.*
- A. El vino en general es mejór que cuántas cosas han inventado los hombres pára paladeárse, o ántes pára destruírse.* *A. Wine in general is better than all other things, men have invented to please their palates, or rather to destroy themselves.*
- C. Los que excéden dela templánza, para destruírse lo gastan; però con moderación todos los liquores se pueden tomár.* *C. Those who exceed temperance, waste it to destroy themselves; but with moderation, all liquors may be used.*
- D. Si la gente se gobernára como débe, todas las cosas crió Diós para servício del género humano, y vémos el exceso que hai en todas.* *D. If people would govern themselves as they ought, God created all things for the service of humane race, yet we see the excess there is in all.*
- E. Han dado en abrafársé las entrañas con aguaardiente de mil géneros, y las mugéres en hartársé de téa hásta que no les cabe.* *E. They are fallen into a way of burning out their bowels with a thousand sorts of strong waters, and the women of filling themselves with tea, till they cannot hold it.*
- F. En ésta cása no falta náda, que se pueda apetecér pára comér, o bebér regaladaménte.* *F. There is nothing wanting in this house, that can be desired to eat and drink daintily.*
- A. Bien se écha de ver por lo que aquí tenemos presente, y será bien no cometámos las* *A. That is visible in what we have here before us, and it will be convenient that we do not commit*  
cúlpas



- cúlpas que condenámos en ótros. *the faults we blame in others.*
- C. Que hóra es, pára que nos acostémos tan pré-  
stó, teniéndo ocasion de divertírnos. ? *C. What a clock is it, that we should go to bed so hastily, when we can divert ourselves ?*
- B. Han dádo las dóce. *B. It has struck twelve.*
- C. El tiempo no se siénte en buena conversación. *C. Time slips away in good Company.*
- D. Bueno será retirárnos, que también la gènte de cása ha de descansar. *D. It will be well for us to withdraw, for the people of the house must rest too.*
- E. Muí buenas nóches les dé Diós à vuestras mercedes. *E. God give you a very good night, Gentlemen.*
- A. Veníd vos conmigo, mózo ? *A. Do you come along with me, waiter ?*
- B. Aquí estói pára servir à su mercéd. *B. I am here at your service, Sir.*
- A. Ayudádme a desnudár. *A. Help to undress me.*
- B. Aquí está la servilléta pára el bonéte. *B. Here is the napkin for a cap.*
- A. Está bien enjúta, y las sávanas lo están ? mirád no me matéis con rópa húmeda. *A. Is it very dry, and are the sheets so ? Take heed you do not kill me with damp linnen.*
- B. Mi áma es muí cuidadósá en ésse particular, es mugér de conciéncia, y no quíere que padéscan los huéspedes, por su descuído. *B. My mistress is very careful in that particular, she is a conscientious woman, and will not have her guests suffer through her neglect.*
- A. Pócas hái tan cuidadósas de sus huéspedes, o de sus álmás ; las mas cómo cóbren el dinéro, *A. Few take such care of their guests, or of their own souls, most of them, so they get the*

no se acuerdan de otra *money, think of nothing*  
côsa. *else.*

B. V. M. gusta que le *B. Does it please you, Sir,*  
sirva en otra côsa? *I should serve you any*  
*farther?*

A. Por ahora no me fál- *A. At present I only want*  
ta mas que dormir, y *to sleep, and I find it*  
el sueño se va acercán- *coming upon me.*  
do.

B. Dios se le dé a v. m. *B. God grant you very*  
descansado. *good rest, Sir.*



## Colóquios Españóles è Ingléses. *Spanish and English Colloquies.*

### Coloquio segundo,

### COLLOQUY II.

*Entre dos Caminantes, llama- Between two Travellers,*  
dos Don Juán, y Don *called Mr John, and*  
Ricárdo; interviniendo à *Mr Richard; their two*  
véces sus dos Criádos, y *Servants, and an Host,*  
un Huesped. *sometimes putting in a*  
*word.*

D. J. **S**Alido hémos al *Mr J. **W**E are at*  
fin de Sevilla. *length got*  
*out of Sevil.*

D. R. Háрто me pésa *Mr R. This parting*  
à mi de la salida, però es *troubles me sufficiently, but*  
fuerza hacer de la necesi- *it is requisite to make virtue*  
dad virtud; que quién *of necessity; for when a*  
mas no puede, morir se *man can do no more, he*  
déxa. *must submit to dye.*

D. J. Que havéis dex- *Mr J. What have you*  
ado atrás que tanto os a- *left behind, that you are so*  
flige su ausencia? *much grieved at its absence?*

D. R.

D. R. No he dexádo ménos, que el corazón, y el álma ; que há días, que están en poder de cierta dáma.

J. Dexádla, pues élla se quéda quiéta en su cása, y rogará a Diós por nosótro, que nos vámos cansádo por éste camíno.

R. Podré yó decíros lo que díxo un amígo, à quién se le avía muérto un niño, que consolándole algúnos con decír, tendría quien rogasse por el en el ciélo, respondió ; no se si tendrá tanta habilidád.

J. Mejor podréis decír lo que díxo el otro llevando à su mugér à enterrár ; que preguntándole cómo no iba con ella en el entiérro, respondió, Váyase esta vez assi, que à ótra yó fé lo que tengo de hacer.

R. Dexémos grácias, que no puédo tan présto olvidár à quién túve tanta voluntád.

J. No fé, si me aventure à decír, que en ésta dáma tuvísteis mal gústo.

R. Porque ?

J. Porque es mui gorda.

Mr R. *I have left no less than my heart, and soul, which have been for some time past at the disposal of a certain lady.*

J. *Do not mind her, since she is at ease in her house, and will pray to God for us, who are tiring ourselves upon our journey.*

R. *I may say to you, as a friend did, whose young child was newly dead, when some comforted him, saying, he would have one to pray for him in heaven, and he answered; I know not whether he is capable of it.*

J. *You had better say as another did, who when his wife was buried, being asked why he did not go with the burial, answered, let her go so for this time, I know what I have to do in the next.*

R. *Let us leave jesting, for I cannot so soon forget a person I so entirely loved.*

J. *I know not whether I may venture to say, that you had no good fancy in the lady.*

R. *Why ?*

J. *Because she is very fat.*

R. *Contra gusto, no hái disputa. Quanto y mas, que la muger gorda es fría en el verano, y en el invierno tiene con que abrigarse un hombre, y no huéssos que le hagan mal.* R. *There is no arguing against tastes. Besides, a fat woman is cool in summer, and keeps a man warm in winter, and is not all bones to bruise him.*

J. *No nos metámos en semejante disputa; dexémos à cada loco con su tema, y volvámos à hablar de Sevilla, que desde ésta cuesta se divide alguna parte de su grandeza, que no es tan poca que no se pueda decir mucho en su alabanza.* J. *Let us not enter upon such a controversy; let us leave every mad-man to his own humour, and let us again talk of Sevil, for from this hill, there is a view of some part of its grandeur, which is not so considerable, but that much may be said in praise of it.*

R. *La torre es la que se parece.* R. *It is the steeple that appears.*

J. *Notable es su altura, y mas que pueden subir hasta lo alto della dos personas juntas à caballo.* J. *The height of it is very remarkable, and it is so much more that two persons together may ride up a horse-back to the top of it.*

R. *Y la Girálida, \* que le falta si con cada viento se muda.* R. *And what can the \* Giralda want, if she turns with every wind.*

J. *Esto yo lo jurara.* J. *I would freely swear it.*

R. *Diréis, que porque tiene nombre de hembra.* R. *You mean, because she bears a woman's name.*

\* Note, That this Girálida is the name of a vast Figure of a Woman, that stands on the top of the aforesaid great Steeple of Sevil, and serves for a Weather-cock, turning with the Wind, and is called Girálida for Giraldia: and this from Girár, to turn about with the Wind.

J. Y éſſo no báſta? Pero volvámos à nuéſtro téma.

R. 'Eſta tórre con las dos hermánas a los ládos, ſon armas de ſu ſánta i-  
gléſia.

J. Quién ſon las dos hermánas?

R. Santa Juſta, y Santa Rufina, Patrónas déſta gran ciudad.

J. Siénto en el álma el no haber viſto en élla el monuménto que hácen el juéves ſanto.

R. Es cóſa peregrína éſſo, y las limóſnas que ſe dan eſſa ſemána.

J. Por ciérto, que la Igléſia es ſuntuóſa.

R. Havéis notádo las muchas Capillas que tiéne, puértas, y Altáres?

J. No.

R. Pues páſſan de ſe-  
ténta los Altáres que hái  
ella; tiéne también  
nuéve puértas, y ochénta  
vidriéras. La grandéza de  
aquellas grádas es cóſa  
peregrína; y ſin éſto, el  
Arzobispo, Dignidades,  
Canonigos, Racioneros,  
Veintenéros, Capellánes,  
Múſicos, Sacriſtánes, Mó-  
zos de chóro, Pertigué-  
ros, y ótros muchos;

J. *And is not that ſuf-  
ficient? But let us return to  
our ſubject.*

R. *This tower, with  
the two ſiſters on the ſides  
of it, are the arms of its  
holy church.*

J. *Who are the two ſi-  
ſters?*

R. *St Juſta, and St Ru-  
fina, the patronesses of this  
great city.*

J. *It grieves me to the  
heart that I have not ſeen  
in it the ſepulchre they make  
on Maundy Thursday.*

R. *That is very extra-  
ordinary, as are the alms  
which are given that week.*

J. *The church is cer-  
tainly very ſumptuous.*

R. *Have you obſerved  
how many Chapels, Doors,  
and Altars it has?*

J. No.

R. *Then, there are a-  
bove ſeventy Altars in it;  
it has alſo nine doors, and  
eighty windows. The gran-  
dour of the ſteps is extraordi-  
nary, without mentioning the  
Archbiſhop, Dignitaries, Ca-  
nons, Demy-Canons, Vi-  
cars Chorals, Chaplains,  
Muſicians, Sacriſtans, Sing-  
ing-boys, Vergers, and ma-  
ny more; but what is a-  
bove all the revenue only  
ſobre*

fóbre tódo, pássa la rénta *for repairs, is above fifty*  
de sóla su fábrica de cin- *thousand Ducats.*  
quénta mil Ducados.

J. La custódia, dicen, *J. The tabernacle, they*  
que es cósa admirable *say, is a wonderful thing to*  
vélla. *be seen.*

R. Es tan gránde que *R. It is so big that it is*  
la llévan en un cárro. *carried in a cart.*

J. Pués que tendrá de *J. What may it weigh*  
péso? *then.*

R. Mas de mil y tre- *R. Above a thousand*  
cientos marcos de pláta, *three hundred marks of*  
que hacen véinte y féis *plate, which amount to six*  
arróbas; dé altúra tres *hundred weight and a half;*  
váras y média; y ésto, *the height three yards and*  
fin la cruz que lléva por *a half, without including*  
remáte, que es de úna *the cross on the top, which*  
quárta; y el áncho de co- *is a quarter of a yard long;*  
lúna tiéne cerca de dos *and the breadth of it be-*  
váras. *tween the columns, is near*  
*two yards.*

J. Sospécho que es ú- *J. I fancy Sevil is one of*  
na de las ciudades mas *the antientest cities in Spain.*  
antiguas Sevilla, de cuántas hái en Espána.

R. Mil setecientos y *R. The ancient founda-*  
véinte y fiéte años, ántes *tion of it was laid a thou-*  
que Chrísto seencarnásse, *sand seven hundred and*  
túvo principio su antigua *twenty-seven years before*  
fundación. Però dexán- *the incarnation of Christ.*  
do ésto, es sin número la *Besides, the wealth it con-*  
riqueza que en si enciér- *tains is immense, as is the*  
ra, y la remóta gente que *number of remote nations*  
en élla se hálla. *that resort to it.*

J. Muchas cósas hái *J. There are many things*  
que affómbran en ésta *to be admired in this city, as*  
ciudad, cómo la Alcai- *the exchange of shops, the*  
zería, el Reál Alcázar, *royal palace, the custom-*  
la Aduana, cása de la Mo- *house, the mint, the mer-*  
*neda,*

néda, Lónja de los mer- *chants exchange, the goal,*  
caderes, la Cárcel, la Al- *the granaries, its jurisdic-*  
hóndiga, su jurisdicción con *tion with power of life and*  
hórca y cuchillo, &c. *death, &c.*

R. Sin esto, provée Se- *R. Besides, Sevil fur-*  
villa de azéite à tódo el *nishes the whole kingdom, and*  
Réino, y las *Indias.* *the West-Indies with oil.*

J. Yo he oído decír, *J. I have heard it said,*  
que muchos días se regí- *that several days, above ten*  
stran en la aduána mas de *thousand arrobas (that is*  
diéz mil arrobas. *125 tun) are entered in the*  
*custom house.*

R. Hablár de sus basti- *R. It would be endless to*  
mentos de pan, vino, cár- *talk of its provisions, of*  
ne, frútas, cáza, y pescá- *bread, wine, flesh, fruits,*  
do, sería núnca acabár. *fowl, and fish.*

J. Las dos colúnas que *J. The two pillars in it,*  
tiéne, en la úna puésta la *with the figure of Hercu-*  
figúra de *Hercules, the first founder of this*  
fundadór desta gran ciu- *great city on one of them;*  
dad; y en la ótra *Julio* *and on the other, that of*  
*Cesar, que la ilustró con* *Julius Cæsar, who adorn-*  
los muros, y cercas que la *ed it with the walls, and*  
rodéan, y quince puértas *works that encompass it,*  
en éllos que la engrandé- *and fifteen gates in it that*  
zen; son, por cierto, me- *contribute to its grandour,*  
morables. *are very remarkable.*

R. Si mirámos en éllo; *R. If we rightly confi-*  
que mayor grandéza que *der it; what more gran-*  
éstos Caños de Carmóna, *dour than this Aqueduct of*  
que fabricáron los Móros. *Carmona, which was built*  
*by the Moors.*

J. Pués havéis nom- *J. Since you have nam-*  
brádo a Carmóna, decid *ed Carmona, give some*  
algo délla, porque yo no *account of it, for I have*  
la hé vísto mas que de *seen no more than in pass-*  
páño, y sé que dista seis *ing through, and know it is six*  
léguas de Sevilla. *leagues from Sevil.*

R. La ciudad de Carmona está puésta en sitio eminénte, con fuértes muros, 118 torres, y vistófo alcázar; regándo sus dilatadás végas Córbonés y Guadána. Produce su término múcho pan, víno, azéite, áves, frútas, hortálizas, ganádos, y tódo lo que es necesárió pára la vida humana. Tiéne la ciudad tres mil vezínos, divididos en siéte Parróchias, con cinco convénros de Frailes, ótros tantos de Mónjas, y buénos Hospitáles.

J. No havéis oído hablar de úna famosá hechizéra que dicen húvo un tiémpo en Sevilla, y después se passó à Carmona?

R. No sólo he oído hablar délla, però la conocí, y ví tódos sus instruménros, que no éran finó unas baratijas, por lo qual no créo en hechizos.

J. Yo à la verdád créo que los hái; però que los háya, o no los háya, decídmé lo que sabéis de aquélla viéja embustéra.

R. 'Ella se aprovechába de mil cófas, como son hábas, verbéna, piédra del águila, pié de texón, sóga de ahorcádo, grános

R. *The city of Carmona is seated on an eminence, and has strong walls, with 118 towers on them, a beautiful palace, and its spacious meadows are watered by the rivers Carbones and Guadana. Its territory produces much corn, wine, oil, fowl, fruit, herbs, cattle, and all that is necessary for human life. The city contains three thousand families, divided into seven parishes, with five monasteries of men, and as many of nuns, and good Hospitals.*

J. *Have not you heard talk of a famous witch said to have lived sometime in Sevil, and to have removed thence to Carmona?*

R. *I have not only heard talk of her, but I knew her, and saw all her tools, which were mere trumpery, and therefore I believe nothing of witchcraft.*

J. *For my part I verily believe there is; but whether there is, or is not, tell me what you know of that cheating old woman.*

R. *She made use of a thousand things, as beans, verbein, eagle's stone, a badger's foot, a halter one had been hanged in, the seed of*



de helécho, espína de crí- *the fern, the prickle of an*  
zo, flor de yédra, huéñlos *hedge-bog, the flower of ivy,*  
de corazón de ciérvo, ó- *the bones of a stag's heart,*  
jos de lóba, unguéntos de *the eyes of a she-wolf, oint-*  
gáto négro, pedazos de *ment of a black cat, pieces*  
agújas clavádas en cora- *of needles stuck in hearts of*  
zónes de cabrítos, sáñgre *kids, blood and beard of a*  
y bárbas de cabrón bermé- *reddish be-goat, brains of*  
jo, séllos de asno, y úna *an ass, and a little vial of*  
redomílla de azéite ser- *oil of serpents, besides other*  
pentíno, sin ótras inven- *inventions which I cannot*  
ciónes de que no me acu- *call to mind.*  
érdo.

J. Y en que paráron  
tódos éstos hechízos?

J. *And what came of all*  
*these spells?*

R. En que la encoro-  
zaron, y à élla, y à ótros  
diéz, les diéron trecientos  
azótes, tras lo qual me  
embrió à avísar que se iba  
à *Antequéra*, que si que-  
ría la fuéñse à ver, y sino  
que me llevaría en bo-  
lándas.

R. *That she was carted,*  
*and she, and ten more, had*  
*three hundred lashes a-piece,*  
*after which, she sent me*  
*word she was going to An-*  
*tequera, if I pleased I might*  
*go see her, or if not she*  
*would carry me through the*  
*air.*

J. Fuéla à ver, o súpo  
que fin túvo?

J. *Did you go see her, or*  
*did you hear what end she*  
*had.*

R. No la ví, que no  
me importába el buscárla,  
ni pudo élla con todo su  
saber, hacerme bolár;  
peró súpe que fué à *An-*  
*tequéra*, dónde la cogié-  
ron haciéndo hilár un ce-  
dázo, y echándo únas há-  
bas, y le diéron ótros do-  
cientos azotes; partió de  
allí à *Málaga*, adónde dió  
fin à su miserable vída.

R. *I saw her not, for it*  
*did not concern me to look*  
*for her, nor could she with*  
*all her art make me fly;*  
*but I heard she went to An-*  
*tequera, where she was*  
*taken making a sievespin,*  
*and casting beans, and they*  
*gave her two hundred lashes*  
*more; she set out from thence*  
*to Malaga, where she end-*  
*ed her wretched life.*

*Criado* 1. Señores, no se olviden v<sup>s</sup>. m<sup>s</sup>. con la conversación, que se va llegando la noche, y si nos quedámos à la seña de la estrella, la cáma será dura, y la cena ligera.

Serv. 1. Gentlemen, let not your discourse make you forget that the night draws on, and if we should take up at the sign of the star (that is under the canopy of heaven) our bed will be hard, and our supper light.

J. La hambre debe de haver llegado, que la noche no está tan cercana, però el aviso no es para despreciar.

J. It is likely you are hungry, for night is not so near at hand, but the advice is not amiss.

*Criado* 2. En verdad, señores míos, que mi camarada tiene razón, que lo mejor es llegar con día à la posada, cenar despacio, y acostarnos temprano, pues éstos caballos nos traerán háрто molidos, y los estómagos bien gastados.

Serv. 2. In truth, my masters, my comrade is in the right, for it is best to get into the inn by daylight, to sup at leisure, and go to bed betimes, for these horses will tire us sufficiently, and get us good stomachs, or digest what we have eaten.

R. Pues tenéis parte en élla, no sabríais aprovecharos de la conversación, y no poner todo vuestro cuidado en comer y dormir, que son las cosas en común éntre los brutos y los hombres, siendo la razón la que nos diferencia de ellos.

R. Since you partake in it, could not you improve upon the discourse, and not set all your thoughts upon eating and sleeping, which are things in common between beasts and men, whereas it is reason that distinguishes us from them.

*Criado* 1. Señor mas vale una lonja de tozino para quien tiene hambre, y una cáma mullida para quien viene cansado, que toda la razón del mundo ;

Serv. 1. Sir, a rasher of bacon is better for a man that is hungry, and a soft bed for him that is tired, than all the reason in the world ; and reason itself

y la

y la misma razón nos en- teaches us to seek for that  
fena que busquémos lo which necessity requires, and  
que requiere la necesidad, to maintain our bodies.  
y el sustentár nueétros cu-  
érpos.

J. Ea, caminémos pués, J. Well, let us put on,  
aunque no sea por mas que tho' it be only to please our  
complacér à éstos mózos men, who seem to be hungry ;  
que parece que van con and what is still worse, I  
hambre ; y lo peor, que am afraid we have lost our  
témo havémos errádo el way, and here is no body to  
camíno, y aquí no háí à enquire of.  
quién preguntár.

R. En cuánto al cami- R. As for the way, I  
no, créo que vámos bien se- believe we are safe enough ;  
gúros ; pero con tódo, however, it will not be amiss  
buéno será preguntar, pu- to ask, for, if I mistake not,  
és, si no me engáño, allí I see a shepherd yonder.  
veo un pastór.

J. Lleguémonos allá à J. Let us go thither to  
preguntár. ask.

R. Amígo, decídnos, R. Tell us friend, is this  
es éste el camíno à Car- the way to Carmóna ?  
móna ?

Pastór. Bien van v<sup>s</sup>. m<sup>s</sup>. Shep. You are right,  
el camíno es derécho, no Gentlemen, the way is  
le puéden errár. straight, you cannot miss it.

J. Quanto camíno nos J. How far have we yet  
quéda aun hásta la ciu- to the city ?  
dad ?

Pastór. Dos léguas y Shep. Two leagues and  
média, tódo lláno, sin su- an half, without any ascent  
bída ni baxáda, tierra ráfa, or descent, plain ground,  
y limpia. and fair.

R. Díós quéde con vos, R. God be with you,  
amígo. friend.

Pastór. Y váya con v<sup>s</sup>. Shep. And go along with  
m<sup>s</sup>. you, Gentlemen.

*J.* Bien podemos caminar de espácio, pues tenemos bastante día, y conviene aliviár los cabállos, que han de caminar mañana.

*J.* *We may very well ride leisurely, since we have day enough, and it is good to ease the horses, who are to travel to morrow.*

*Criado 1.* Porcierto, señor, que es mucha la caridad pára con los cabállos, sin acordarse de que tambien nosotros no nos hemos de quedár en la cama.

*Serv. 1.* *In truth, Sir, your charity is very great towards the horses, without considering that we are not like to lie a-bed.*

*Criado 2.* Y si nos cogen los falteadores, que al anochecer salen de sus escondrijos, quedaremos peor librados, y podrá ser que sin cama, ni camisa.

*Serv. 2.* *And if we should fall into the hands of the highwaymen, who in the evening come out of their lurking holes, we shall be in a worse plight, and perhaps have neither bed nor shirt.*

*R.* Pues quién te díxo a ti, que aquí havia falteadores? éstos quando los hai es allá en Sierra Morena; que en tierra descubierta como ésta no se atreven à mostrar la cara.

*R.* *Why, who told you, that here were any highwaymen? when there are any it is yonder on the mountain Sierra Morena; for they dare not show their faces in such an open country as this is.*

*J.* Quanto y mas que siendo nosotros quatro, y todos con buenas armas de fuego, no han de ser pocos los que nos han de poder robár; porque además del dinero, fuera mucha pérdida de reputación dexarnos desvalijár, viniendo tan prevenidos.

*J.* *Besides that, we being four of us, and all carrying fire-arms, it must be no small number that can rob us; for besides that of our money, it would be a great loss of reputation to suffer ourselves to be stripped when we are so well provided.*

*Criado* 1. Yo le dói mi palabra a v. m. que ántes me máten que me quíten lo que llevo, que no me inclino à passar la nóche en un camíno muriendo de hámbré; péro, con todo, mas vále guardár lo que tenemos en paz, que no aventurár las vidas en defénfa déllo, sin necesidad.

*Serv. 1. I give you my word, Sir, they shall sooner kill me than take what I have from me, for I have no mind to lie all night, starving with hunger, upon the high-way; and yet it is better to save what we have in peace, than to hazard our lives in defence of it, without any need.*

*R.* Bien has dicho, y yó créo que Diós nos ha librado de semejantes aventuras, pues hémos llegado à las puértas de la ciudad.

*R. You say well, and I believe God has delivered us from any such adventures, for we are now at the city gates.*

*J.* Apeémonos en éste albergue, que es úno de los mejóres.

*J. Let us alight at this inn, which is one of the best.*

*R.* Diós féa en ésta casa.

*R. God be in this house.*

*Huesped. V<sup>s</sup>. m<sup>s</sup>. féan mui bien venidos mis señóres.*

*Host. You are very welcome, my masters.*

*J.* Tendrémos aquí todo lo necesario, Huesped? míre, que sómos personas que nos tratámos bien.

*J. Shall we be furnished with all that is necessary, landlord? take notice, that we are men who make much of our selves.*

*Huesped. Quanto quisíeren v<sup>s</sup>. m<sup>s</sup>. hallarán, à pedir de bóca, camas aseadas y sábanas límpias.*

*Host. You will find every thing you would have here, Gentlemen, ask and have neat beds, and clean sheets.*

*Criado 1.* Si, però pára cenár, que la cáma sin céna no háce buén sueño.

*Serv. 1. Ay, but the supper, for a bed without supper, will not make one sleep sound.*

R. Mirád vos por los cabállos, que téngan mucha y buena pája, buen héno, y buena cevada, o avéna, y dexád el cuidado de la cena, que en buenas mãos quéda.

J. Ahóra, huesped, que hái que comer?

*Huesped.* Hái liebre, conejos, perdices, póllos, póllas, capónes, gánfos, ánades, pávos, carnéro, váca, puérco, cabrito; escojan mis Señóres.

R. Con un par de perdices, & una buena póllo, havrá para nosotros; pero para los mózos será menestér cosa de mas peso.

*Huesped.* Dexénlo v. m. a mi cuenta que yo procuraré agradár á ámos, y criados.

J. Séa afsí, háya bastante para todos; y dádnos ahóra á probár de vueéstro vino, miéntras se guífa la cena.

*Huesped.* En cuánto al vino, no le hái mejor en toda España; que aunque no sói borracho, ni bebedór, lo que yo gásto quieró que séa bueno, y tal le dói á mis huespedes honrádos.

R. No quisiéra decír disparátes, péro los bué-

R. Do yo look to the horses, that they have plenty, and good straw, good hay, and good barley, or oats, and take no care of the supper, for that is in good hands.

J. Now, landlord, what is there to eat?

Host. There is hare, rabbits, partridges, chickens, pullets, capons, geese, ducks, turkeys, mutton, beef, pork, kid; do you choose, Gentlemen.

R. A couple of partridges, and a good pullet, will be enough for us; but our men must have something more substantial.

Host. Leave it to me, Gentlemen, and I will endeavour to please both masters and servants.

J. Let it be so, provide enough for all; and now let us taste your wine, whilst the supper is dressing.

Host. As for wine, there is no better in Spain; for tho' I am no drunkard, nor yet a drinker, what I drink must be very good, and such I give to my worthy guests.

R. I would not talk foolishly, but great drinkers  
nos

nos bebedóres tiénen por *have a saying, that good*  
 refrán, que el buén vino *wine carries men to heaven.*  
 lléva los hombres al ciélo.

J. No entiéndo cómo *J. I do not understand*  
 esso puéda fer. *how that can be.*

R. Dícen ellos, que el *R. They say good wine*  
 buén vino cría buena sán- *breeds good blood, good blood*  
 gre, la buena sánger en- *begets good conditions, good*  
 géndra buena condición, *conditions bring forth good*  
 la buena condición páre *works, good works carry*  
 buenas óbras, las buenas *men to heaven.*  
 óbras llévan los hombres  
 al ciélo.

J. Dexémos éstos dí- *J. Let us lay aside these*  
 chos profános, y vámonos *profane sayings, and go to*  
 à la iglésia mas cercána, à *the next church, to return*  
 dar grácias à Diós que nos *thanks to God for having*  
 ha trahído aquí con bién, *brought us hither in safety,*  
 y rogár nos guarde en a- *and pray he will protect*  
 delante. *us for the future.*

Pláticas éntre céna. *Discourse at supper.*

R. No hái mayor re- *R. There is no greater*  
 gálo que úna perdíz. *dainty than a partridge.*

J. Pára mi no le hái *J. There is no greater for*  
 mayor, que una buena *me, than a good pullet.*  
 pólla.

R. Cóntra gústo no hái *R. There is no disputing*  
 dispúta. Por esto se gásta *against tastes. That is the*  
 todo. *reason that all things go off.*

J. La experiéncia nos *J. Experience shows,*  
 muéstra, que lo mas ef- *that whatsoever is most*  
 cáso es siémpre lo mas e- *scarce, is ever most valued ;*  
 stimádo ; que lo que án- *for that which is over plen-*  
 da sobrádo, en póco es *tiful, is made little account*  
 tenído. *of.*

R. 'Essa es verdád múi *R. That is a truth well*  
 conocida, y arguír contra *known, and to argue against*  
 ella

ella fuéa negárse à lo que *it, would be opposing that*  
 estámos viéndo con los o- *which we daily see with our*  
 jos ; però hai pérsonas tan *eyes; but there are some*  
 amigas de porfiár, que *men so fond of contending,*  
 aún lo que está paténte à *that they will not believe*  
 los ójos no quiéren conce- *what is evident to their eyes.*  
 dér.

Ÿ. Por éssó hái tantas *J. That is the reason,*  
 dispútas en el mundo, por *why there are so many dis-*  
 el mal natural de táles per- *putes in the world, through*  
 sónas, que no quiéren dex- *the ill disposition of such per-*  
 árse llevár de la razón, si- *sons, who will not suffer*  
 nó de su vanidád, la qual *themselves to be led by rea-*  
 los háce nécios por no pa- *son, but by their vanity,*  
 recérlo. *which makes them fools for*  
*fear of being thought so.*

R. Essa vanidád es la *R. That vanity has the*  
 que mas páte tiéne en tó- *greatest share in most things*  
 do lo que hacémos, y de- *we do, and say; for there*  
 címos ; porqué pócas ó- *are few words or actions free*  
 bras, o palábras hái que *from some touch of that*  
 no téngan su púnta deste *vice.*  
 vício.

Huesped. Con su buéna *Host. With your good*  
 licéncia de v<sup>s</sup>. m<sup>s</sup>. véngo *leave, Gentlemen, I come*  
 à sabér si está la céna à *to know whether you like*  
 gústó ; si fálta algúna có- *your supper; or whether*  
 sa en que les podámos ser- *any thing be wanting that*  
 vír en esta cása, y si con- *this house affords, and whe-*  
 ténta el víno. *ther the wine is to your li-*  
*king.*

Ÿ. Si nos quexáramos, *J. If we should complain,*  
 la culpa fuéa nuéstra ; *it would be our own fault;*  
 que en verdád las áves no *for in truth the fowls cannot*  
 puéden ser mejóres, ni *be better, nor better dressed,*  
 mejór guisádas, y el víno *and the wine is such, that*  
 es tal, que si tuviéramos *if we were wont so to do,*  
 tal costúmbre nos hiciéra *it would intice us to drink*  
 bebér mas de lo necesário ; *more than is necessary, but*  
 però



peró sin cometér excéſſo *we will make much of our*  
 nos hemos de regalár con *ſelves without exceeding, for*  
 el, porque alégra el cora- *it cheers the heart.*  
 zón.

R. Es mui honrádo *R. Our Hoſt is a very*  
 nuéſtro huésped, y ſu trá- *honest man, and behaves*  
 to es confórme, y tal ferá *himſelf accordingly, and on*  
 de nuéſtra pártē la pága. *our part the pay ſhall be ſui-*  
*table.*

*Hueſped.* Viván mis ſeñó- *Hoſt. God preſerve you*  
 res muchos años, por la *many years, my maſters,*  
 mucha merced que me *for the great favour you do*  
 hacen, y el contento que *me, and the ſatisfaction I*  
 me dan en ſervir perſonas *receive in ſerving perſons of*  
 que tanto merecen; por- *ſo much worth; for ſome-*  
 qué à véces deſpués de *times after all poſſible pains*  
 havér trabajado lo poſſible *has been taken to pleaſe,*  
 por agradár, hái algúnos *there are ſome that cannot*  
 que no pueden dar buena *give a good word.*  
 palabra.

7. Eſſo ò procéde de *J. That either proceeds*  
 tener mui pervérſa condi- *from a perverſe temper, or*  
 ción, ò de ſu natural mi- *from their covetous nature,*  
 ſeráble; por parecérles, *believing that deſpiſing all*  
 que deſpreciando cuánto *that is ſet before them, they*  
 les pónen delante, quédan *are the leſs obliged to pay*  
 ménos obligados à la bu- *generouſly, always making*  
 éna pága, riñendo ſiém- *a broil about the reckoning.*  
 pre ſobre la cuenta.

R. Eſſo mañana lo ve- *R. We ſhall ſee that to*  
 rémos; y tengo en tan *morrow; and I have ſo good*  
 buena opinión à nuéſtro *an opinion of my hoſt, that*  
 huésped, que no créo *I do not believe there will*  
 habrá porqué reñir; quán- *be any cauſe to differ; be-*  
 to y mas que no me hallo *sides that, I am no way in-*  
 inclináo à eſſas pendén- *clined to thoſe quarrels, and*  
 cias, y ſi me la hacen úna *if I am once put upon, I*  
 vez me guárdo de la ſe- *take care of being ſo a ſecond*  
 gúnda,

gúnda, y avíso à todos los *time, and give notice to as*  
 que puédo que se guárden. *many as I can, that they*  
*may secure themselves.*

*Huesped.* Yo les promé- *Host.* I promise you,  
 to à v<sup>s</sup>. m<sup>s</sup>. que no tendrán *Gentlemen, you shall have*  
 de que guardárse, si la cu- *no occasion to shun me, if*  
 énta no les contentáre, pa- *the reckoning does not please*  
 garán lo que gustáren; *you, you shall pay what you*  
 que yó sé que no han de *please, for I know you*  
 querér que les sírvan de *would not be served for no-*  
 válde, ò que piérda quién *thing, or have me lose by*  
 les sírve. *serving you.*

*J.* Amigo, vuéstro bu- *J.* Friend, your civility  
 én procedér nos tiéne ob- *has obliged us, and we will*  
 ligádos, y nosótro no *not fail to do accordingly;*  
 dexarémos de correspon- *let us now go to bed, and*  
 dér; acostémonos ahora, *a good night to you.*  
 y quedád à buenas nó-  
 ches.

*Huesped.* Múi buenas se *Host.* God give you a  
 las dé Díos à v<sup>s</sup>. m<sup>s</sup>. *very good night, Gentlemen.*





Colóquios Españóles è Ingléſes.  
*Spanish and English Colloquies.*

Colóquio tercero. COLLOQUY III.

*Entre un Amo llamado Don Alónſo, y ſu Criádo, un Sáſtre, y una Lavandéra, y Don Pédro.* Between a Maſter called *Don Alonſo*, and his Servant, a Taylor, and a Laundreſs, and *Don Pédro*.

*Acérca de lo que tóca al veſtirſe, cortesía, y nuevas.* About what belongs to dreſſing, civility, and news.

*Amo.* **O** Yés, mózo, que hora es? *Maſter.* **D**O you hear, lad, what time of the day is it?

*Criádo.* Son las nueve dadas. *Servant.* It has ſtruck nine.

*A.* Porqué me dexáſte dormir, ſabiéndo que tenía que hacer? *A.* Why did you let me ſleep, knowing that I had buſineſs to do?

*C.* Por no enojár à v. m. pues quién duérme ſi émpre ſiente que le inquieten. *S.* For fear of making you angry, Sir, for they that ſleep, are always vexed to be diſturbed.

*A.* Yá no ſe puede remediár. Enciénde ahora la lúmbre, y caliéntame una camíſa, y únas calcétaſ, y ſácame ótros calzónes, que me quiero levantar. *M.* There is no remedy now. Light the fire, and warm me a ſhirt, and a pair of under-ſtockings, and take me out another pair of breeches, for I will riſe.

C. Qual

C. Qual vestido gusta v. m. de ponerse? S. *What suit of cloaths will you please to put on, Sir?*

A. Dame el negro. M. *Give me the black.*

C. Lo peor es, que no hai camisa limpia. S. *The worst of it is, that there is no clean shirt.*

A. Pues cómo, teniendo tantas? Eres descuidado en extremo, y me gastas la paciencia. M. *How so, when I have so many? You are excessive careless, and tire my patience.*

C. No se impaciente v. m. pues bien sabe que todas vinieron trahidas del camino, y que no ha havido tiempo de lavar, y enjugárlas, aunque yo mucho se lo encomendé à la lavandera; pero ella se ha venido, sin llamarla. S. *Sir, be not impatient; for you know they were all worn, upon our journey, and there has not been time to wash and dry them, though I gave the Laundress a great charge about it; but she is come, without sending for.*

A. Bien ha sucedido, y ella merece ser muy bien pagada por su cuidado, y diligencia. M. *It has hapned well, and she deserves to be very well paid for her care, and expedition.*

Lavandera. Dios le pague à v. m. éssa buena consideración, y charidad; que muchos caballeros hai, que quieren que los pobres les sirvan de valde. Laundress. *God reward you, Sir, for that good consideration, and charity; for there are many Gentlemen, who would have the poor to serve them for nothing.*

A. No se entiende ésto conmigo; decid lo que monta la ropa, y se os pagará. M. *That is not my temper; say what the Linnen comes to, and you shall be paid.*

L. El criado, Señor, la contará, y me dará lo que daba à otras. L. *The Servant, Sir, may count it, and give me as he gave another.*

C. A mi cuenta, monta diez reales. S. *According to my reckoning, it comes to ten royals.*

A. Este

*A.* 'Eſſe es hacér la cuenta ſin la huéſpeda ; de- zíd vos, Señóra, lo que os contentará ?

*L.* 'Eſſe, Senór, es precio ſabído, no hái que replicar ; ſi v. m. fuére ſervido de dárme alguna có- ſa por haver traſnochá- do pára ſervírle, le eſti- maré la merced.

*A.* Bien lo havéis me- recido, ahí tenéys los di- éz réales que mónta la ró- pa, y éſtos dos de ventája.

*L.* Mil años viva mi Señor, à quien ſuplico mánde ſiémpre à éſta ſu pób- re criada.

*A.* Id con Diós, y bol- ved el ſábado. Mózo, mandáſtes venir el Sáſtre ?

*C.* Dos horas há que le llamé, y créo que el es que ſúbe la eſcaléra.

*A.* A buen tiempo lle- gáis, que ya eſtába para ſalír ; cómo havéis tardá- do tanto ?

*Saſtre.* No púde mas, Señor ; que quien ſírve à muchos, no es dueño de ſu tiempo.

*A.* Bien eſtá, yó os hé embiado à llamar pára que me hagáis un par de ve- ſtidos.

*M.* *That is reckoning without your Hostess ; do you say, mistress, what will content you ?*

*L.* *That, Sir, is a known price, there is nothing to say to it ; if it shall please you to give me something for having sat up to serve you, I will be thankful for the favour.*

*M.* *You have well de- served it, there are the ten royals the linnen amounts to, and two royals over.*

*L.* *May my master live a thousand years, and I be- seech you always to employ this your poor servant.*

*M.* *God go with you, and come again on Satur- day. Lad, did you order the Taylor to come ?*

*S.* *I called him two hours ago, and believe it is he that is coming up the stairs.*

*M.* *You are just come in time, for I was ready to go abroad ; what made you stay so long ?*

*Taylor.* *I could not help it, Sir ; for he that is to serve many, is not master of his own time.*

*M.* *It is well, I have sent for you to make me two suits of cloaths.*

S. Ordéne v. m. cómo los quiere, y pára cuándo.  
T. Give your orders, Sir, how you will have them made, and against what time.

A. Haréisme un vestido entéro de escarláta, con sus guarniciones de oro, de las mejores. El otro será blanquecino llano, sin guarnición alguna.  
M. You must make me a whole suit of scarlet, with gold trimming of the best. The other of a whitish colour plain, without any lacing.

S. Aquí tráhigo buena cantidad de muéstras de todos géneros, v. m. mire si le agrádan.  
T. I have brought a considerable quantity of patterns of all sorts, see, Sir, whether you like them.

A. No es menester mirálo mas; éstas dos muéstras escójo, y los vestidos se hágan con toda brevedad.  
M. There is no need of looking any farther; I choose these two patterns, and let the cloaths be made as soon as possible.

S. Si v. m. no manda otra cosa, me vói à disponer lo que me há ordenado.  
T. If you have no other commands, Sir, I will go to provide what you have ordered.

A. Bien sabéis la confianza que hágo de vos, compradme un par de medias de seda, y otro de estambre, dígo de medias para cada vestido: y media docéna de guantes blancos; todo que sea presto, porque cómo vengo de camino no tengo lo necesario para parecer en la corte.  
M. You know how much I confide in you, buy me one pair of silk stockings, and another of worsted, I mean stockings for each suit: and half a dozen of white gloves; all as soon as may be, because being come off a journey, I have not necessaries to appear at court.

S. Mañana à la noche estará aqui el vestido llano, y de alli à dos dias el guarnecido, en esto no avrá falta.  
T. To-morrow night, the plain suit shall be here, and, two days after, the laced, there shall be no failure in it.

A. Si

*A.* Si así lo cumplís, *M.* If you perform it, I  
no pido mas. *desire no more.*

*C.* Señor, aquí está Don *S.* Sir, Don Pédro is  
*Pédro.* *here.*

*A.* Entre su mercéd, *M.* Let him come in,  
pues me la hace tan grán- *since he does me so great a*  
de en adelantárse en ve- *favour as to be before-hand*  
nirme à vér, siendo mi *with me in coming to see me,*  
obligación haver ído à be- *when it was my duty to have*  
fárle la máno. *gone to kiss his hands.*

*D. P.* Dexémos cum- *D. P.* Let us lay aside  
plimiéntos, que parecen *compliments, which do not*  
mal éntre amigos verda- *look well among real friends.*  
deros. *You are very welcome, Sir,*  
*V. m<sup>d</sup>.* féa múi *and I am glad to see you in*  
bién venído, y me alégro *good health.*  
de verle buéno.

*A.* Y yo lo mismo de *M.* And so am I to find  
hallarlé aquí y buéno. *you here and well.*

*D. P.* Yá que ha lle- *D. P.* Since the happy  
gádo la feliz hóra de vol- *hour is come, that we are*  
vérnos à juntár, decídme *met again, tell me something*  
algúna cósa de lo que ha- *of what you have seen in*  
véis vísto en *Fráncia,* *France, which I have so*  
que tanto la he deseádo *much coveted to see my*  
ver. *self.*

*A.* Los que han cami- *A.* Travellers are often  
nádo à véces son sospe- *liable to be suspected, as*  
chófos, tomándose la li- *taking the liberty to invent*  
bertád de inventár lo que *whatsoever their imagina-*  
les dicta su imaginacion ; *tion dictates to them ; some*  
unos exagerando las cósas *extolling things far beyond*  
múi allá de la verdád, y *truth, and others despising*  
ótro despreciando cuánto *all that is out of their own*  
háí fuera de sus própias *countries. France is such*  
tiérras. *Fráncia* es tal que *a one, that it needs no hy-*  
no necesita de hypér- *perboles to commend it, as*  
boles pára alabárla, te- *having so much truly to be*  
niendo tanto verdadero *admired, that the eyes are*  
*A a* *que*

que admirár, que no se *not satiated with beholding,*  
 hártan los ojos de mirár; *and it is a shame there*  
 y es verguénza, que háya *should be such foul tongues*  
 lénguas maldiciéntes que *as do speak ill of it.*  
 se atrévan à hablár mal  
 della.

*D. P.* Por fabér con *D. P. As I very well*  
 cuánto defenñado algunas *know with what an air*  
 persónas cuéntan lo que *some persons tell what they*  
 apénas han soñado, yo *scarce dreamed, I give lit-*  
 dói póco crédito à lo que *tle credit to what I hear in*  
 óigo en las conversaci- *conversation that accidental-*  
 ónes que acáso se ofrécen, *ly occurs, being satisfied there*  
 conociéndo, que no faltan *are men that value them-*  
 hombres, que se precian *selves upon lying; whereas*  
 de mentír; fiéndo un ví- *it is a vice that all men who*  
 cio de que todo hombre *are well born ought to be*  
 bien nacido se debe afren- *ashamed of.*  
 tár.

*A.* Infáme cósa es no *A. It is an infamous*  
 tratar verdad. *thing not to speak truth.*

*D. P.* Infinitos son los *D. P. Infinite mischiefs*  
 daños que acarréan éssas *are the consequence of that*  
 maldítas hablíllas. *curst tittle tattle.*

*A.* Quántos predica- *M. All the preachers in*  
 dores hái no son bastán- *the world are not able to*  
 tes pára ponér fréno à las *curb tongues, it is not likely*  
 lénguas, mal lo harémos *that we should do it.*  
 nosótro.

*D. P.* A que propósito *D. P. To what purpose is*  
 es el predicár, si la vida *it to preach, if the preacher's*  
 del predicadór no corres- *life is not suitable to the ser-*  
 pónde con el sermón. *mon. One bad example is*  
 Mas fuérza tiéne un mal *more prevalent than ten bo-*  
 exémplo que diéz pláticas *ly discourses. And what is*  
 sántas. Y lo que peór es, *still worse, the sermons be-*  
 cómo los sermónes se há- *ing made for worldly ends,*  
 cen por fines mundános, *it is not to be wondered*



no háí que espántar que *that they produce no spiri-*  
no hágan frútos espiritu- *tual fruit.*  
áles.

*A.* La mála vída de *M.* *The ill lives of the*  
los ecclesiásticos es la *churchmen are the ruin of*  
perdición de los seglares. *the laity. But let us not*  
Peró no nos vámos em- *launch out too far in other*  
barcádo en vídas ajénas; *mens lives; let every man*  
cáda úno míre por sí, y *look to himself, and the*  
andaré el mundo mejór. *world will go better.*

*D. P.* Así es; volvá- *D. P.* *That is right; let*  
mos pues à vuéstro viáge, *us therefore return to your*  
y contádmé alguna cósa *travels, and tell me some-*  
del. *thing of them.*

*A.* Que os hé de con- *A.* *What shall I tell*  
tár? Estas relaciones pí- *you? Those relations re-*  
den múcho espácio; si *quire much leisure; if you*  
deseáis informáros, leéd *desire to be informed, read*  
éssos borradores, en los *these notes, in which you*  
quáles hallaréis muchas *will find many particulars,*  
particularidades, que iba *that I still wrote down,*  
assentádo miéntras las te- *whilst they were fresh in*  
nía fréscas en la memoria. *my memory.*

*D. P.* Para mí no *D. P.* *Nothing can be*  
habrá mayor plácér. Pe- *more pleasing to me. But*  
ro decídmé que os paré- *tell me your opinion of the*  
ce de la nación *Francé- French nation.*

*A.* Acerca de la Na- *A.* *As to the French na-*  
ción *Francé- tion, I have nothing else to*  
sa no tengo *say, than that all in gene-*  
que decír ótra cosa, síno *ral are very civil; but to*  
que todos, en común, son *treat with them, is requisite*  
múi civiles, pero es me- *great consideration, because*  
nestér una grande arte pa- *they are very cunning and*  
ra tratár con ellos, pues *deceitful.*  
son múi sagaces y enga-  
ñófos.

*D. P.* Esto yá me lo *D. P.* *That I knew be-*  
sabía yo antes, pués úno *fore, since one of them*  
de ellos me engañó condos *cheated me of 200 pieces of*

mil pesos que le presté ; *eight that I lent him ; and*  
 y lo peor es, que jamás *what is the worst, is, that*  
 oí palabra de el hasta la *I never heard a word from*  
 semana pasada, que rece- *him till last week, that I*  
 bí una carta fuya. *received a letter from him.*

*A.* Apostaré, que es la *M. I will lay a wager*  
 misma persona que yo ví *that is the same person I*  
 en Orleans, pues me ha- *saw at Orleans, because he*  
 bló de v. m. este se lla- *spoke to me of you, his name*  
 maba . . . . . *was . . . . .*

*D. P.* El mismo, pero *D. P. The very same,*  
 la carta que tengo, lléva *but the letter I have from*  
 la fecha de París. *him, bears its date from*  
*Paris.*

*A.* Bien puede ser, *M. That may well be,*  
 porque según me dixo, *because as he told me, he*  
 tenía intención de partirse *had a mind to set out for*  
 para París el día sigui- *Paris the next day.*  
 ente.

*D. P.* Que haré yo pa- *D. P. What shall I do*  
 ra cobrar mi dinero ? *to get my money ?*

*A.* Que ? Venirse con- *M. What ? Come to*  
 mígo à París, y obligarle *Paris with me, and oblige*  
 allí que le pague ; yo in- *him there to pay you ; I in-*  
 tento volver allá dentro *tend to return thither within*  
 de dos meses, y el me *two months, and he told me*  
 dixo que quería estable- *that he would settle himself*  
 cerce alla en la calle de *there in St Anthony's street,*  
 San Antonio, en donde vi- *where his parents live. And*  
 ven sus Padres. Y con *with this opportunity you*  
 esto v. m.<sup>d</sup>. tendrá el gusto *will have the pleasure of see-*  
 de ver las muchas y mag- *ing the many and magnifi-*  
 níficas fábricas que hái en *cent buildings that are*  
 Francia, y especialmente *in France, and especially*  
 el Palacio y jardines de *the palace and gardens of*  
 Versailles, que son los me- *Versailles, which are the*  
 jores del mundo. *best in the world.*

*D. P.* Así lo haré, y *D. P. So I will, and I*  
 yóime ahora à hablar so- *go now to speak to my fa-*  
 bre

bre ello à mi Padre que *ther about it, who is at*  
 está en casa. *home.*

*A.* A Diós pués, pero *M.* Farewel then, but  
 déxese ver mañana, y ha- *let me see you to-morrow,*  
 blarémos mas sobre esto. *and we will speak more up-*  
*on this subject.*

*D. P.* Está bien ; à Dí- *D. P.* It is well ; fare-  
 os. *well.*



## Colóquios Españóles è Ingléses. *Spanish and English Colloquies.*

### Colóquio quarto.

### COLLOQUY IV.

*Sóbre várias Matérias, én- Upon several Subjects,*  
*tre quátro Camarádas, between four Compan-*  
*Diégo, Fernándo, Tho- nions; James, Ferdi-*  
*más, y Eduárdo. nand, Thomas, and Ed-*  
*ward.*

*D.* **Y**'A que hémos co- *J.* **N**OW we have  
 mído, vámonos *dined, let us go*  
 à passeár al jardín, que *walk in the garden, which*  
 dicén es buéno pára la di- *they say is good for digestion,*  
 gesti3n, y escusarémos de *and we shall avoid sleeping*  
 dormír la siésta. *the afternoon nap.*

*F.* Dezís bién, que ésta *P.* You are in the right,  
 costúmbre de dormír es *for this custom of sleeping is*  
 muí perezósa, y si no es *very hurtful, and unless it*  
 en tiempo de grandísima *be when the heat is excessive,*  
 calór, mejor es divertír- *it is better to take some di-*  
 nos. *version.*

*T.* No gastémos el ti- *T.* Let us not spend time  
 émpo en ceremónias, que *in ceremonies, for it is very*  
 A a 3 *es*

es muí mal gastádo, y no ill spent, and I do not love  
gústo déllas. them.

E. A mi no me agrá- E. I like them not, but  
dan, mas la cortesía siém- civility is always good.  
pre es buena.

D. Repáren bien en lo J. Take good notice of  
que viéren, y verán mú- what you see, and you will  
cha curiosidád en éste jar- see much curiosity in this  
dín, que es úno de los me- garden, which is one of the  
jóres que se hállan en éstas best that are in these parts.  
pártes.

F. ¡Estos andámios son F. These walks are very  
muí agradables por la agreeable for the shade of  
sombra de los árboles, y the trees, and the sweet  
lo odorífero de las múrtas. scent of the mirtle.

T. ¡Otra buena calidád T. They have another  
tiénen, que es, ser largos good quality, which is, that  
para évitar las muchas they are long to save the of-  
vuéltas à que obligan los- ten turning there must be in  
córtos; y lo ángo que short ones; and their  
puéden andar seis persónas breadth, that six persons  
à la par con descánso. can walk abreast in them.

E. Las éras tan límpias E. The beds are so neat  
que se puéde dormir en that they are fit to sleep on  
éllas; y según la yérba them; and the grass so green,  
está vérde parécen mullí- that they look soft, and in-  
das, y comvídan à echárse vite to lie down upon them.  
en éllas.

D. ¡Esta enramáda es D. That arbour is de-  
deleitósa en el veráno, es- lightful in summer, exposed  
puésta à tódos los viéntos to all winds to refresh, and  
para refrescár, y libre de free from the sun-beams.  
los ráyos del sol.

F. ¡Esta grúta con tódo, F. However this grotto,  
en mi opinión, le háze mú- in my opinion, is much be-  
cha ventája en lo fresco, y yond it for coolness, and a-  
en lo apacible, semejáse greeableness, it looks very  
múcho con lo natural, y natural, and has the orna-  
góza los adórnos del arte. ments of art.

T. Aquélla

*T.* Aquélla fuénte es bella, y aquélla cascáda háce un ruído que parece alégra, y al mílmo tiémpo adorméce los sentidos con lo incessáble del fonído.

*E.* Adelantémonos un póco à ver los frutáles, y gozár de su frúta.

*D.* Pára mi no la hái mas deliciosa que los hígos, y aquí los hái en perfección.

*F.* Yo me conténto con duráznos, quándo son grádes y madúros, cómo los déste arbol.

*T.* ¡Estos melocotónes me llévan à mi los ójos, y tienén éllos un gústo soberáno.

*E.* Por no querér lo que ótro quiére, pués tódos se han diferenciádo, yó escójo pára mi éstas Péras bergamótas, y regalémonos cáda qual confórme à su apetíto.

*D.* No nos dexémos llevár, cómo les niños, de la frúta, que Diós crió pára el susténto, y no pára engolosinárnos. Escuchémos un ráto el dulce cánto de los pajarillos, que sin ayúda de maéltros hácen una musica, quán-

*T.* *That fountain is beautiful, and that cascade makes a noise that seems to exbilarate, and at the same time lulls the senses asleep with the incessant sound.*

*E.* *Let us advance a little to see the fruit trees, and enjoy the fruit.*

*J.* *None is more delicious to me than figs, and here they are in perfection.*

*F.* *I am satisfied with peaches, when they are large and ripe, as these on this tree.*

*T.* *These melocotones charm my eyes, and they have a sovereign taste.*

*E.* *Because I will not be for the same as another is, since you have all varied, I make choice of those bergamot pears, and let us treat ourselves every one to his own appetite.*

*J.* *Let us not be deluded like children, by the fruit, which God made for sustenance, and not to indulge our appetite. Let us a while listen to the sweet singing of the little birds, who without the help of masters make such musick, as is the more*

to mas natural, mas maravillosa. *wonderful, the more natural it is.*

*F.* Ellos los unos de los otros aprénden, y los que mas habilidád tiénen sálen mas diestros, cómo éntre los hombres; que cáda discípulo sále conforme al talénto que Diós le dió, y no conforme al maéstro. *F. They learn of one another, and those which have the best capacity prove most skilful, as it is among men; for every learner proves according to the talent God has given him, and not according to the master.*

*T.* El Ruiseñór es milágro de la naturaléza, y hace ventája à todos los demás. No lo he vísto, péro afirman que es tanta à véces la fuérza que pónen en cantár, que se cáen muértos. *T. The nightingale is a wonder in nature, and surpasses all others. I have not seen it, but it is affirmed, that they sometimes strain themselves so much with singing, that they drop down dead.*

*E.* La calándria no le quéda à debér mucho al ruiseñór, y no se fi à véces no le iguála; ni es ménos de estimár al gilguéro, però sóbre tódos es el canário. *E. The lark comes not far behind the nightingale, and perhaps sometimes equals him; nor is the goldfinch less valuable, but the canary bird is beyond them all.*

*D.* De los cantóres havéis nombrádo los principales y merécen ser estimados; però que haya paxaros que apréndan à formar voz humana, y hablar palábras distintas, es lo mas de maravillar, y he oído yó mismo un papagáyo que cantáva de tal manera, que cuántos le oían sin vérle, juzgávan que éra persona humana. *J. You have named the chiefest of the singers, and they deserve to be valued; but that there should be birds that learn to form an human voice, and speak distinct words, is most to be admired, and I my self have heard a parrot that sung after such a manner, that all who heard and did not see him, concluded it was some human person.*

*F.* También hablan las marícas, y los tórdos; però jamás con la perfección que los Papagáynos; y es digno de reparár que teniéndolas estas àves pícos y no bócas cómo nosotros, puedan formár palabras, lo qual por ésto éllas hacen allá en el gaznate.

*T.* Múcho hái que considerár en el hablár y cantar de las aves; però también me parece que merece nuéstra atención aquella prodigiósa variedad de colóres, que se halla éntre ellas, porqué apenas el arte ha llegado à igualárlas.

*E.* Mui hermosas las produce nuéstra *Európa*, però no llégan con múcho à las que se hallan en la *Asia*, y la *América*.

*D.* Conversádo acércase de las aves nos hallámos éntre éstos estanques, que se hallán mui bién proveídos de todos los géneros de peces que víven en semejantes águas, y hái diferentes géneros déellos.

*F.* Lo principal en estos estanques son picas, o lúfos, y carpas; però en éste río se cogen infinitas truchas, y à su tiempo salmones que suben de la

*E. Magpies, and black-birds, also talk; but never so perfectly as parrots; and it is worth observing, that those birds having beaks, and not mouths like us, they can form words, which they do within their throats.*

*F. Much reflexion may be made upon the talking and singing of birds; but I am of opinion that the prodigious variety of colours, that is found among them, deserves our observation, for art has scarce been able to match them.*

*E. Europe produces very beautiful birds, but they do not come near those that are found in Asia, and America.*

*D. Discoursing concerning the birds we are come among these ponds, which are very well stored with all the sorts of fish that live in such waters, there are several sorts of them.*

*F. The chiefest in these ponds are pikes, or jacks, and carps; but in this river an infinite number of trouts are taken, and in the season, salmon, that come up  
mar*

mar à desovar, y después *from the sea to spawn, and*  
 en su sazón los salmonzillos *afterwards at their time the*  
 que báxan à criarse en *small salmon that go down*  
 la mar. *to thrive in the sea.*

T. 'Esta es otra de las *T. This is another of the*  
 maravillas de la natura- *wonders of nature, or to*  
 léza, o hablando con mas *speak more properly, of the*  
 propiedad, de la divina *divine wisdom, the immen-*  
 sabiduría, la inmensidad *sity of the sorts of fishes,*  
 de géneros de peces, sus *their different shapes, that*  
 diferentes formas, aquél- *hideous magnitude of some,*  
 la espantosa grandeza de *and the strange smallness of*  
 los unos, y la rara peque- *others.*  
 ñez de otros.

E. Mucha es la distin- *E. There is a great di-*  
 ción en los tamaños, cómo *versity in sizes, as also in*  
 también en la figura, o *the figure, or make, but as*  
 hechura, pero en lo que *for beauty, I know not of*  
 toca à hermosura, no sé *any that is among them all,*  
 que se halle en alguno dél- *on the contrary most of them*  
 los, ántes los mas son dif- *are misshapen, and no way*  
 formes, y poco agradables *pleasing to the sight, having*  
 à la vista, sin tener cosa *nothing agreeable to the eyes,*  
 que contente à los ojos, a- *besides their being dumb, and*  
 demás de ser mudos, y *having no voice.*  
 faltárles voz.

D. Si no pueden entre- *J. Though they cannot*  
 tener los ojos, ni los oídos; *entertain the eyes, nor the*  
 aloménos no les falta con *ears; however, they do not*  
 que satisfacer el gusto; *want something to please the*  
 pues no hai mayor regalo *taste; for there are no*  
 que el que nos dan la mar, *greater dainties than those*  
 y los ríos, en tan vários *the sea, and rivers afford*  
 platos cómo déllos se sa- *us, in such variety of dishes*  
 can, si no faltan buenos *as are taken from them,*  
 cocineros que los sépan *if there be no want of cooks*  
 guisar. *that know how to dress*  
*them.*



*F.* No quiero despreciar lo que tanta parte del mundo estima; pero para mi mas vale una pierna de carnero, o un lomo de vaca que quanto las aguas producen; y si vámos a las aves, éstas en delicadeza sobrepujan quanto hai en el universo para el sustento humano.

*T.* Digo que tenéis buen gusto, y me atengo yo a la carne que cria carne, y satisface, dexando el estómago bien proveído para en adelante; siendo el pescado de la naturaleza del elemento en que se cria, que por mas que se harte una persona, luego se halla con hambre, porque no queda substancia.

*E.* No puedo ir contra esse parecer, pero con todo vemos que hai gentes en el mundo que mas viven de pescado que de carne, y noobstante son robustas, y en las grandes mesas tienen en mucho el salmon, las langostas, las ostras, y otros muchos géneros; y los pescados salados, y en escabeche dan mas nutrimento, entre los quales se pueden contar el abadéjo, el esturion, y el atún.

*F.* *I will not undervalue that which so great part of the world values; but for my part I had rather have a leg of mutton, or a surloin of beef, than all that the waters produce; and if we go on to the fowls, they in delicacy exceed all the world affords for the sustenance of men.*

*T.* *I say you are in the right, and I am for flesh which breeds flesh, and satisfies, leaving the stomach well furnished for the time to come; whereas fish is of the nature of the element it is bred in, so that though a man eat never so much to satiety, he is presently hungry again, because no substance remains.*

*E.* *I cannot oppose that opinion, however we see there are people in the world who live more upon fish than upon flesh, and nevertheless they are strong, and at great tables they highly value salmon, lobsters, oysters, and many other sorts; and fish that is salted, or pickled affords more nutriment, among which may be reckoned poor jack, sturgeon, and tunny fish.*

*D.* Con qualquier cósa *D.* *Whatsoever it is that*  
 que nos criémos es ciérto *we are bred with, it is cer-*  
 que hemos de crecer, y *tain that we shall thrive,*  
 hallárnos bién; assi vé- *and do well; thus we see*  
 mos que no hái hombres *there are no men stronger,*  
 mas fuértes y bien dispu- *and lustier than those of*  
 éstos que los de algunas *some of the very northern*  
 pártes mui septentrioná- *parts, where from their in-*  
 les, dónde défde la niñez, *fancy, their main sustenance*  
 fu principal susténto, es *is barley, or oaten bread,*  
 pan de cebáda, y avéna, *some milk, roots, without*  
 algúna léche, raíces, sin *being ever acquainted with*  
 sabér que cósa es víno, y *wine, and very little with*  
 mui póco de cárne, o pes- *flesh, or fish.*  
 cádo.

*F.* Los que se crían con *F.* *Those who are dainti-*  
 regálo no pueden con é- *ly bred cannot bear that sort*  
 stos mantenimientos. La *of food. Nature is satisfied*  
 naturaléza con póco se *with little, but the body*  
 conténta, péro háse de ha- *must be innured to it from*  
 cér el cuérpo à éllo défde *the first years, for after-*  
 los priméros años, que des- *wards it is too late. Let*  
 pués es tárde. Mirémos *us look upon our squeamish*  
 nuéstras dámas melindró- *ladies, if they should have*  
 fas, si les pusiéran delante *such things set before them,*  
 lo que son regálos pára *as are dainties for our coun-*  
 nuestras labradóras, no les *try women, not one morsel*  
 entrára bocádo en el cuér- *would go into their stomach.*  
 po.

*T.* Yá que se ha hablá- *T.* *Since so much has*  
 do tánto del comer, razón *been said of eating, it is but*  
 ferá no nos olvidémos que *reasonable we should not for-*  
 también se ha de beber, y *get that we are also to drink,*  
 dexándo aparte el águá *and leaving aside the water*  
 que crío Diós en general *which God created not only*  
 no sólo pára los hombres, *for men, but also for all the*  
 sinó también pára cuántos *creatures he has placed in*  
 animáles ha puésto en este *this world in general, wine*  
 mún-do, es el víno el mas *is the most sovereign of all*  
 soberáno

soberáno de cuántos li- *the liquors that have been*  
 quóres hasta este día se han *known to this day, or that*  
 conocido, o que las edá- *future ages, and human in-*  
 des venidéras, y la humá- *vention will ever find out for*  
 na invención hallarán pa- *the benefit of rational crea-*  
 ra bién de las criatúras ra- *tures.*  
 cionáles.

*E. Los vinos que pro-* *E. The wines Spain a-*  
*dúce sólo España apénas* *lone produces are hardly to*  
*se puéden contár, pués* *be reckoned up, what then*  
*que será de tódas las ótras* *must there be in all other*  
*tiérras? Hablar déssó fué-* *countries? To talk of that*  
*ra núnca acabár. El ví-* *would be endless. Wine in*  
*no en generál tiéne mú-* *general has many virtues*  
*chas virtúdes templada-* *moderately used, and with-*  
*mente usádo, y sin ser me-* *out being obliged to have re-*  
*nefter acudir à los médi-* *course to physicians, or an-*  
*cos que nos las dígan, o* *cient authors, experience*  
*à los autóres antiguos, la* *teaches us, that it gives*  
*ésperiéncia nos enséña que* *strength, makes the coun-*  
*da fuerzas, alégra el ró-* *tenance chearful, fortifies*  
*stro, fortifica los nérvios,* *the nerves, helps the sight*  
*ayúda à la vísta de los ójos,* *of the eyes, cherishes the sto-*  
*esfuérza el estomágo, há-* *mach, causes good digestion,*  
*ce buena digestión, despi-* *sharpens the appetite, causes*  
*érta el apetito, háce buen* *sound sleep, drives away me-*  
*suéño, quíta la tristeza, y* *lancholy, and rejoyses the*  
*póne alegría en el corazón,* *heart, which are sufficient*  
*que son bastántes alabán-* *commendations, and known*  
*zas, y verdádes conocí-* *truths, which no man can*  
*das, que no hái quien las* *deny, and besides all this it*  
*puéda negar, y sin tódo* *is so agreeable to the palate,*  
*esto es tan agradáble al* *that so many are ruined on-*  
*paladár que por ésse solo* *ly for that pleasure.*  
*gústó hai tantos que se pi-*  
*érden.*

*D. En verdád que ha-* *J. In truth you have*  
*véis acertádo en no can-* *been in the right in not tir-*  
*ñarnos con los disparátes* *ing us with the absurdities*  
de

de muchos de los antiguos, con que siempre nos están empalagando los modernos que quieren ganar fama de muy leídos, porque son tan enfadosas sus reglas, que no hai paciencia que baste para ellas. Uno nos enseña quanta agua se ha de mezclár con el vino; otro pone tassa en las veces que se ha de beber; otro nos dice hasta que edad nos hemos de abstenér; otro no quiere que lo béban las mugeres; y assi otras mil parátas conforme à lo que cada uno dellos tenía entonces en la cabeça.

*F.* Yo no entiendo para que son tantos preceptos, todo hombre templado sabe lo que en este caso le conviene, sin que sean menester cuantos viejos de dos mil años; y los borrachos se rien, y reniegan de todas essas vejézes. Quanto y mas que hai mozos que no necesitan menos de un trago de vino que los viejos, y hai estómagos que requieren doblada la cantidad que otros. Pues decir que no lo béban las mugeres tambien tiene su pedazo de locura, como si sus cu-

*of many of the ancients, with which the moderns who would gain the reputation of having read much are always cloying us, for their rules are so disagreeable, that no patience can bear with them. One of them teaches us how much water must be mixed with our wine; another fixes the number of glasses that is to be drunk; another tells us till what age we must abstain; another will not allow women to drink it; and thus a thousand fopperies, according to what every one of them had at that time in his head.*

*F.* I do not understand what so many precepts are for, every moderate man knows what is fit for him in this case, without standing in need of old stories of two thousand years; and drunkards laugh at, and curse all those antiquities. Besides that, there are some young men who have no less occasion for a glass of wine than the old, and there are stomachs that require double the quantity as others. Then to say that women must not drink it, is also a piece of madness; as if their bodies were not human, and did érpos

érpos no fuéran humanos, *not stand in need of that*  
y no necesitáran de aquél *comfort as well as men.*  
alívio también cómo los  
hombres.

T. Que mayor locúra  
puéde haver que el ir à pe- *T. What greater mad-*  
dír conféjo de los muértos *ness can there be than to go*  
para lo que estamos vién- *ask advice of the dead, for*  
do con los ójos, y palpán- *those things we see with our*  
do con las mãos? Però *eyes, and feel with our*  
está éssa costúmbre tan in- *hands? But that custom is*  
troducída, que no sólo en *so established, that the hea-*  
las conversaciones entrán *then philosophers are not on-*  
los philosophos gentíles, *ly thrust into conversation,*  
fin que ni para que; mas *without head or tail; but*  
los mismos predicadores *the very preachers stun us*  
nos atúrden con sentén- *with sentences from Plato,*  
cias de *Platón*, de *Seneca*, *Ec. as if there were no ho-*  
de *Plinio*, de *Sócrates*, &c. *ly fathers, and christian*  
cómo si no huviéra, fan- *doctors to have recourse to.*  
tos pádres, y doctóres  
christianos à quién acudir.

E. No háí cósa mas e- *E. Nothing is more noto-*  
vidénte que los grandes *rious than the great bene-*  
biénes que háce el vino al *fits human race receives*  
género humano; però *from wine; but at the same*  
también es gran lástima *time it is a great pity that*  
que la demasía cáuse tán- *the excess of it should occa-*  
tos daños, y no es de es- *sion so many mischiefs, nor*  
pantár, porqué según ré- *is it to be wondered at, for*  
glas de philosophía la cor- *according to the maxims of*  
rupción de lo mejor es la *philosophy, the corruption of*  
peór, es à saber, que *the best things is worst, that*  
quánto mejores son las có- *is, how much the better*  
sas en si mismas tanto *things are in themselves, so*  
mas perniciosas son, quán- *much the more pernicious*  
do o éllas se corrómpen, *they are, when either they*  
o nosotros usámos mal *are themselves corrupted, or*  
déllas. *we make an ill use of them.*

D. Bien

D. Bién haveis reparádo en éllo, porqué es cierto que no hai cósa que mas máles acarrée que el demasiádo beber. Quántas muértes, quántos alborótos, quántas deshonestidádes ha ocasionádo la embriaguéz; y quántos milláres, sin hacer daño à ótros han destruído su salud, è incurrido en infinitas desgracias, por havérse facádo de juício con éste abominable vicio; sin hablar de la deshónra, o por mejór decir infámia de ponérse un hombre en peór éstado que las béstias mas brútas, por tan estragádo apetito cómo es el beber con demasia.

F. En múchas pártes del mundo, no las quiéro nombrár por no ofendér à nádie, y por no ser necesario, pués tódos los conócen, se ha introducido tánto ésta maldíta costúmbre, que el emborrachárse no se tiéne por afrenta; ántes hái lócos, que no les puédo dar ótro título, que se précian de emborrachár à ótros, y cuéntan éstas fealdádes cómo si fuéran las mayores hazánas. Y me avergu-

J. *You have observed right, for it is certain that nothing produces more mischief than too much drinking. How many murders, how many uproars, how many lewd practices has drunkenness occasioned; and how many thousands, without doing harm to others have destroyed their own health, and fallen into infinite misfortunes by having put themselves beside their reason by this abominable vice; or to speak of the dishonour, or to speak more properly of the infamy of a man's putting himself into a worse condition than the most brutal beasts, for the sake of so depraved an appetite as drinking too much.*

F. *In several parts of the world, I will not name them to avoid giving offence to any body, and because it is not necessary, since all men know them, this cursed custom has so far taken place, that to be drunk is not looked upon as a disgrace; on the contrary there are mad men, for I can give them no other title, who value themselves upon making others drunk, and relate those shameful actions, as if they were the greatest*  
énço

énzo de decílo, hái yá exploits. *And I am ashamed to tell it, there are now women that can match the most infamous men in this vile practice, exposing themselves to any folly; for when they have lost their reason, there is little trusting to the rest.*

*T.* Con ser cósa natural el beber águá, no se han contentádo los hombres con élla; que en las tiérras adónde no náce víno, han inventádo ótros géneros de breváges, éntre los quáles el mas ufádo es la cervéza, la qual hácen tan fuérte que à vecés soprepúja el víno, aunque no es tan sána; con que le fálta lo buéno, y le tóbra lo málo, y en particular lléna los cuérpos de ventosidad.

*E.* Pués la cidra, aunque es mas natural, y le háce múcha ventája à la cervéza, no puéde competir con el víno, siendo muí crúda; con que cáusa desconciérto en los que no se han bién acostumbraído à élla.

*D.* También se bébe el zúmo de las péras, y es tenído por mas pernicioso que la cidra. La alója es cósa regaláda en el veráno,

*J.* The juice of pears (perry) is also drunk, and is looked upon as more mischievous than cider. Mead is very delicious in summer,  
B b

veráno, si se repára en so- *if we only look to our pa-*  
 lo el apetito ; pero si mirá- *late ; but if we regard*  
 mos la salud, es muí fría *health, it is too cold for the*  
 pára el estómago, y por *stomach, and therefore it is*  
 ésto se ha introducido el *become customary, to tem-*  
 mesclarla con ún póco de *per it with a little brandy ;*  
 água ardiente ; pero aún *but even in that case it is*  
 en ésto es menester andar *requisite to use caution, that*  
 con tiénto que no sea de- *it be not too much.*  
 masiada.

*F.* En buena conversa- *V. We are got into a ve-*  
 ción nos hemos metido, *ry fine discourse, that if any*  
 que quién nos oyése, pu- *should hear us they might*  
 diéra tenérnos en opinión *take us for good drinkers,*  
 de buenos bebedóres, sin *though we have not deserv-*  
 haver merecido tan mala *ed that bad name. Let us*  
 fama. Volvamos pues à *then return home, whilst*  
 casa mientras se hace hó- *supper-time comes on, for it*  
 ra de cenar, que yá pré- *will soon draw near, and*  
 sto se irá llegando, y no *we shall not want something*  
 faltará en que entretener- *to divert us.*  
 nos.

*T.* Tenéis mucha ra- *T. You are much in the*  
 zón, pues agora da el re- *right, for the clock now*  
 lóx las siete, y es bueno *strikes seven, and it is good*  
 cenar temprano, para no *to sup early, to avoid go-*  
 acostarse con el estómago *ing to bed with a full sto-*  
 cargado, y tener tiempo *mach, and to have time to*  
 de parlár, y divertírnos. *chat and to divert ourselves.*

*E.* 'Eso muí bien se *E. That can be very*  
 hace sobre cena, y mas *well done after supper, es-*  
 con un traguíto de vino *pecially with a moderate*  
 moderado, que así alégra *glass of wine, for so it*  
 el corazón. *cheers the heart.*





Coloquios Españóles è Inglés.  
*Spanish and English Colloquies.*

Colóquio quinto.

COLLOQUY V.

*Entre dos Dámas, dos Caballéros, y dos Criádas.* Between two Ladies, two Gentlemen, and two Maid-Servants.

*Sóbre várias Matérias.*

Upon various Subjects.

D. I. **V**ENÍd acá Ma-  
ría, y compo-  
nédme éste tocádo ; no os  
detengáis en impertinén-  
cias, bién sabéis que no  
presúmo de mi, ni deséo  
enamorár à nádie ; básta  
para mi el adórno decen-  
te, para no parecer ridí-  
cula.

I Lady. **C**OME hither  
Mary, and  
order this head-dress for  
me ; do not dwell upon im-  
pertinence, you know I  
have no conceit of my self,  
nor do I desire to make any  
body fall in love ; it is e-  
nough for me to be decently  
dressed, not to appear ridi-  
culous.

Cr. I. Es v. m. muí  
fácil de contentár, dichó-  
fa yó en servir à quién  
tiéne tan buen gústo ; y  
bien desdichádas de las  
que han de estár quátro  
hóras en pié para compo-  
nér úna Dãma, y por cá-  
bo les parece que no hái  
cósá bién hécha.

I. Serv. Madam, you  
are easily pleased, I am  
happy in serving one that  
has so good a fancy ; and  
unhappy they who must be  
four hours standing to dress  
a lady, and after all they  
think nothing well done.

D. I. Si en mi hallá-  
res cósa buena, no quiéro

I L. If you see any thing  
that is good in me, I would

que me lo digas, que parece adulación, cuéntalo, si quisiéres, en mi ausencia; lo malo que en mi viéres, dímelo à mi, que te lo agradeceré; y callalo afuéra.

Cr. 2. Mi Señora Doña Susána está aquí.

D. 1. Pues la tienes allá, sin decirle que éntre? Como os hacéis Señora tan estraña; siendo tan amigas, para que usáys de cumplimiéntos, sabiendo que no gusto dellos?

D. 2. No parece cortesía entrarse sin avisar; y aunque nuestra amistad parece disculpa, siempre es bueno el decóro, y dicen que la demasiada familiaridad causa desprecio.

D. 1. 'Eso no se entiénde éntre nosótras; pero aquí viene Don Juan, que es persona de mucho mérito, y muí entretenido.

Cabal. 1. Mil años viva quien tanta honra me hace, mereciendo yó tan poco; aunque no estói sin mérito, pues trahigo aquí à Don Rodrigo, en quien serán bien empleadas éssas alabanzas.

*not have you tell me of it, for it looks like flattery, you may tell it, if you will, in my absence; what ill you see in me, tell me of it, and I will thank you; and conceal it abroad.*

2 Serv. My Lady Susanna is here.

1 L. Do you keep her there, without bringing her in? Madam, why do you make your self so great a stranger, when we are such friends, why do you use compliments, knowing I do not love them?

2 L. It does not look like good breeding, to come in without giving notice; and tho' our friendship seems an excuse, yet decency is always good, and it is a saying, that too much familiarity breeds contempt.

1 L. That is not to be understood between us; but here comes Don John, who is a person of much worth, and very good company.

1 Gent. Long may they live who do me so much honour, when I deserve so little; tho' I am not quite void of merit, for I have brought Don Rodrigo, on whom those commendations may be well bestowed.

*Cab. 2.* No quiero responder, no piensen éstas Señoras que venimos de concierto à decir bien de nosotros mismos. *2 Gent. I will not answer, lest these ladies should think, that we have agreed to speak favourably of our selves.*

*D. 1.* Sienténse v<sup>s</sup>. m<sup>s</sup>. sin ceremonias, que es tiempo perdido el que se gasta en ellas. *1 L. Be pleased to sit down without ceremony, for all the time that is spent in it is lost.*

*Cab. 1.* No es ceremonia el respeto que se debe à las Dámas; ni es lisonja decir lo que está patente à todos; y por ésto podré afirmár que éntre las ótras perfecciones que acompañan à mi Señora D<sup>ña</sup> Isabel, se esméra en escoger criadas; qué si no estuviéran presentes dos tales bellézas, pareciéra soberána la desta donzél-la, à quien Diós hága dichósa. *1 Gent. The respect that is due to Ladies is no ceremony; nor is it any flattery to utter that which is apparent to all men; and therefore I may affirm, that among all the perfections that attend my Lady I-D<sup>ña</sup> Isabel, she excels in the choice of her maids; for if there were not two such beauties present, that of this maiden would seem surprizing, God make her very fortunate.*

*D. 1.* Si le decís à la mugér que es hermosa una vez, el diáblo se lo dirá diéz, según la vulgar opinión; por ésto mejor es callár las alabanzas, aunque sean verdaderas, que no ponerles motivos de vanidad, que siémpre sóbran en nosótras. *1 L. If you tell a woman once that she is handsome, the devil will tell her so ten times, according to the vulgar notion; for which reason it is better to forbear praises, though they be true, than to give them occasion for vanity, which is always overflowing in us.*

*D. 2.* No sé que tienen los hombres, que por mas que apetézcan las hermosas cómo háya dinéros se casan con las féas. *2 L. I know not what ails men, that though they are never so fond of beautiful women, provided there be money, they marry the ugly.*

*Cab. 2.* 'Ellos dicen que las tóman à péso, sin mirár en la hechúra. *2 Gent. They say they take them by weight, without regarding the fashon.*

*D. 1.* Si no fuéра así, muchas desgraciádas se fuéran vírgenes à la sepultura. *1 L. If it were not for that, many unfortunate ones would carry their maidenheads to their graves.*

*Cab. 1.* Despoblárase déssa manéra el mundo, pues es verdád conocida, que pára úna buena cara hái tres malas, y mas de quátro que apénas se pueden llamar passadéras. *1 G. That way the world would be unpeopled, since it is a known truth, that for one good face there are three bad ones, and above four that can scarce be called tolerable.*

*D. 2.* Por lo que se ha dicho, hái tantos mal cafados; porqué tomándose à péso, no pueden con la carga, y dan con élla en el suelo, buscándo ótros entretenimiéntos. *2 L. That which has been said is the reason that there are so many unhappy couples; for as they take one another by weight, they cannot bear the burden, but let it drop to seek other diversions.*

*Cab. 2.* No fálén siémpre desgraciádos los casamiéntos por las malas caras, antes mas véces por las peóres condiciónes. *2 Gent. Marriages are not always unhappy by reason of the bad faces, but oftner on account of the worse conditions.*

*D. 1.* Pues así es, me parece que cómo hái Tribunáles pára todos delítos, le havía de haver particular pára los que cométen los casados; no digo sólo pára los adultérios, pero también para castigár las culpas que se cométen entre marido y mugér en no traiárse cómo deben con amor, y respéto, *1 L. Since it is so, I am of opinion, that as there are Courts for all crimes, there ought to be in particular for those that married persons are guilty of; I do not mean only for adulteries, but also to punish the faults that are committed between husband and wife in not treating one another as they ought, with*  
dexándose

dexándose llevar de sus *affection, and respect*, giving way to their passions, érde la paz pará siémpre. *which destroys some for ever.*

*Cab. 1.* 'Essos juéces *1 G. Those judges ought*  
havían de tener don de *to have the gift of prophecy;*  
prophecía; que de ótra *for citherwise it would be*  
manéra fuéra imposible *impossible to decide who had*  
averiguár quién tenía mas *been most to blame in those*  
cúlpa en éstas pendéncias *home broils; and for the*  
caféras; y las mas véces *most part the women are*  
son las mugéres las que- *the plaintiffs, the men being*  
xófas, callándo los hóm- *silent to avoid discovering*  
bres por no descubrir su *their shame.*  
afrénta.

*Cab. 2.* Pués se ha ha- *2 G. Since mention has*  
bládo de juicios, aunque *been made of judgments,*  
no séa à éste propósito, *though it be not to this pur-*  
fino les desagráda à é- *pose, if it be not displeasing*  
stas Señóras, diré úno no- *to these Ladies, I will re-*  
table del Rey Don Pédro, *late a very notable one of*  
que por ser desgraciádo, *King Peter, whom because*  
le llamáron el cruél. *he was unfortunate, they*  
*called the cruel.*

*D. 2.* Díga v. m. mui *2 L. Tell it, in God's*  
en buena hóra, pués no *name, Sir, since we are*  
tenémos obligaci6n de a- *not bound to confine our*  
tárnos à úna matéria, y *selves to one subject, and*  
la variedád es agradáble. *variety is pleasing.*

*Cav. 2.* Con éssa licén- *2 G. Upon that permis-*  
cia dígo, que un Arcedi- *sion, I say, that an Arch-*  
áno de la Iglésia de Sevíl- *deacon of the church of Se-*  
la, mató à un zapatéro, *vil killed a shoemaker, and*  
y un hijo fúyo fué à pe- *a son of his went to demand*  
dir justícia. Condenóle *justice. The ecclesiastical*  
el Juéz Ecclesiástico en *Judge condemned him not to*  
que no dixesse mífia un *say mass in one year. Soon*  
año. Désde à p6cos dí- *after King Peter came to*  
as vino el Rey Don Pédro *Sevil, and the dead man's*  
a Sevilla, y el híjo del *son complained to him of*  
*muerto*

muérto se le quexó de la *that murder. The King ask-*  
dicha muérte. El Rey le *ed him, whether he had*  
pereguntó, si havía pedí- *demanded justice. He told*  
do justícia. El le contó *him the case as it was. The*  
el caso cómo passaba. *king said to him, Have you*  
Dixo el Rey, Serás tu hóm- *courage enough to kill him,*  
bre para matálle, pues no *since they will not do you*  
te hacén justícia? Si Se- *justice? Yes, Sir, answered*  
ñór, respondió el zapaté- *the shoemaker. Do so then,*  
ro. Pues házlo así, dixo *said the king. The next day*  
el Rey. El día siguién- *the arch-deacon walking ve-*  
yendo el Arcediáno bién *ry near the king in a pro-*  
cerca del Rey en una pro- *cession, the injured man*  
cessión, llegóse el agravi- *stept up, and stabbed him*  
ado, y dióle dos puñalá- *in two places, so that he*  
das de que cayó muérto. *dropt down dead. The of-*  
Prendióle la justícia, y *ficers apprehended him, and*  
mándo el Réy que le trux- *the king ordered that he*  
ésien ánte el, y pregun- *should be brought before him,*  
tóle, porqué havía muérto *and asked him why he killed*  
el hombre. El mózo dixo, *that man. The young man*  
Señór, porqué mato à mi *said, Sir, because he killed*  
padre; y aunque pedí ju- *my father, and though I*  
stícia no me la hiciéron. *demanded justice, it was*  
El juéz ecclesiástico, que *not done me. The ecclesi-*  
cerca estába, respondió *astical judge, who was by,*  
por si, que se la havía hé- *answered for himself, that*  
cho, y muí cumplída. El *he had done him justice, and*  
Réy quiso saber la justícia. *very fully. The king would*  
El juéz respondió que le *know what justice it was.*  
havía condenádo que en un *The judge answered he had*  
año no dixesse missa. El *condemned him not to say*  
Réy díxo à su alcáde, Sol- *mass in a year. The king*  
tád ésse hombre, y yó le *then said to the goaler, Dis-*  
condéno, que en un año *miss that man, and I con-*  
no cosa zapátos. *demn him not to sow any*  
*shoes in a year.*

D. 1. Si mirámos en el *I L. If we look upon*  
modo de proceder, bién *the manner of the proceed-*  
*se*

se ve que no es conforme à las leyes ; mas si en las leyes no se hálle la justicia, razón es que no fálte por ótra vía. El matár al clérigo el ofendido, parece sacrilégio también como vengánza, según la opinión christiana, y con todo tiene su justificación, siendo por mandádo de un Réy, que es juez supremo, y por no havér otro camino de castigár tan gráve delito : pues el no decír missa en un año no era péna competente à tal maldád, y las que cometen las personas dedicadas à Diós, merecen mayor castigo que las de los seglares.

*Cab. 1.* No pudiéra averlo decidído mejór el mas famoso letrado ; y éste caso me tráhe à la memoria lo que hizo el Alcalde Calderón. Fuése á queixár à el un criádo de unos Religiosos, de que habiéndoles servído el tiempo à que estáva obligádo por concierto, no le querían pagar, porqué se quedáse con ellos, pareciéndoles bien su servicio. El Alcalde embio à llamar al pádre Procurádo, *I G. The ablest lawyer could not have decided it better; and this case puts me in mind of what the Alcalde Calderon did. A servant belonging to certain religious men went to complain to him, that having served them the time he was obliged to by contract, they would not pay him, that he might stay with them, they liking his service. The Alcalde, or judge, sent for the father procurator, in-*  
treating him as a favour, supli-

suplicando por merced *that he would come to his*  
 viniése à su casa, à tratar *house, to discourse about a*  
 sobre cierto negocio; y *certain affair; and charg-*  
 avisó à un Alguazil, que *ed an Alguazil, (or officer,)*  
 en viniendo le tomase la *that when he came, he*  
 mula, en que venia, y la *should take the mule he rode*  
 pusiese à buen recaudo. *on, and secure her. When*  
 Venido el, recibiole el *he came, the Alcalde re-*  
 Alcalde con mucha cor- *ceived him very courteously,*  
 tesia, y le rogó pagase a- *and desired him to pay that*  
 quel pobre hombre, que *poor man, who had a mind*  
 se queria ir à su tierra. *to go away into his own*  
 El procurador se sonrió, *country. The procurator*  
 diciendo, v. m. no es nu- *smiling, said, Sir, you are*  
 estro juez, sino de los se- *not our judge, but only for*  
 glares, si algo debemos à *laymen, if we owe that*  
 este hombre, pidalo ante *man any thing, let him de-*  
 nuestro juez, el qual le *mand it before our judge,*  
 hará justicia. Con esto *who will do him justice.*  
 se despidió, y pidiendo su *With this he took his leave,*  
 mula, dixo el mozo, que *and enquiring for his mule,*  
 un Alguazil se la havia lle- *the servant said an Algua-*  
 vado. Bolvió à quejarse *zil had carried her away.*  
 al Alcalde, el qual le res- *He went back to complain*  
 pondio: Señor, vuestra *to the Alcalde, who answer-*  
 reverencia no me podrá *ed him. Your reverence*  
 negar que la mula es se- *cannot deny but that your*  
 glar. Como tal la guar- *mule is of the laity. As*  
 dó, hasta que pague el *such he kept her, till the*  
 procurador al criado. *procurator paid the ser-*  
*vant.*

D. 2. Buena gracia tu- 2 L. *Indeed the Alcalde*  
 vo por cierto el Alcalde. *was very pleasant. All judges*  
 Tales debieran de ser to- *ought to be like him, for the*  
 dos los jueces, para aliv- *benefit of those who cannot*  
 io de los que no le hal- *be otherwise relieved. And*  
 lán por otra manera. Y *since we are upon judgments,*  
 pues va de sentencias, vá- *take this also. There was*  
 ya tambien esta. Trahían *a controversy in an univer-*  
pleyto



pleito en una universidad *sity, about precedency be-*  
 sobre quién iría delante, *tween the doctors of law,*  
 los doctóres jurístas, y los *and the doctors of physick.*  
 de medicina. Preguntó el *The judge asked the parties,*  
 juez à las partes; *When a man is carried to*  
 do llévan alguno à justi- *execution for being a thief,*  
 ciar por ladrón, qual va *which goes foremost, the*  
 delante, el que ajustician, *criminal, or the executio-*  
 o el verdúgo? Respondi- *ner? They answered, the*  
 éron, el que ajustician va *criminal goes before. If it*  
 delante. Si así es, díxo *is so, said the judge, let the*  
 el juez, vayan delante los *lawyers go foremost as*  
 jurístas cómo ladrones, y *thieves, and let the physi-*  
 sígan los médicos cómo *cians follow them as exe-*  
 verdúgos. *cutioners.*

*Cab. 2.* Ya que hémos *2 G. Since we are fal-*  
 dado con los médicos, *len upon physicians, I will*  
 daré yó mi badajáda. En *let my clapper go. At pope*  
 la mésa del pápa *Alexán-*  
*dro vi. se disputaba un*  
 día, si éra provechoso *it was argued one day,*  
 que *whether it were advanta-*  
 huviéssse en la republica *gious to the public to have*  
 médicos? La mayor parte *physicians. The majority*  
 túvo que no; y alegaron *affirmed it was not, and*  
 en su razón, que *Róma e-*  
 stúvo 600 años sin ellos. *alledged to make good their*  
 Díxo el papa, que el no *assertion, that Rome sub-*  
 éra de aquel parecer; por- *sisted 600 years without*  
 qué à saltár ellos, crece- *them. The pope said he*  
 ría tanto la multitud de *was not of that opinion; be-*  
 los hombres, que no ca- *cause if there were none of*  
 brían en el mundo. *them, the multitude of men*  
*would increase so much,*  
*that the world could not*  
*contain them.*

*D. 1.* No digámos, mal *1 L. Let us not speak ill*  
 de los médicos, pués en *of physicians, since when*  
 teniendo neccesidad los ha- *we shall be in want, we*  
 vémos de llamar aunqué *must send for them, though*  
 nos

nos pése, y ellos à véces *ever so much against our*  
 nos hacen mal porque as- *wills, and they sometimes*  
 sí lo queremos, cómo le *do us harm because we will*  
 pudo suceder à un hom- *have it so, as might hap-*  
 bre mui rico, que havi- *pen to a very rich man,*  
 éndose hallado algo in- *who having found himself*  
 dispuesto la nóche antes, *somewhat indisposed the*  
 embió à llamar un médi- *night before, he had a phy-*  
 co ; el qual venido, havi- *sician called ; who being*  
 éndole tomado el púlso, *come, and having felt his*  
 preguntó, si comía bién? *pulse, asked, whether he*  
 Respondió, que sí. Bol- *did eat his meat heartily?*  
 vió à preguntár el me- *He answered he did. The*  
 dico, si dormía bién? *physician asked again, whe-*  
 Respondió, que sí. Re- *ther he slept well, he answer-*  
 plicó el médico, Pues yó *ed he did. The physician*  
 os daré con que se os quí- *replied, Then I will give*  
 te todo ésto. *you something that shall re-*  
*move all that.*

*Cab. 1.* Buena respuésta; *1 G. A good answer ;*  
 y bién empleado el qui- *and it is not done amiss to*  
 tárle la salud à quién no *deprive one of his health,*  
 está contento con élla. A- *who is not satisfied with it.*  
 unqué no paréscan tan a- *Though it looks not so exact*  
 justado en todo, por haver *in all points, since it con-*  
 cura y salud, diré lo que *cerns curing, and health:*  
 me ha venido à la cabé- *I will tell what is come in-*  
 za. Descalabró uno à su *to my head. A man broke*  
 mugér, por ciérta terri- *his wife's head for her in-*  
 bilidad que en élla había, *tolerable temper, and had*  
 y curóla con mucha cósta *her cured with much cost*  
 y cuidado, tanto que élla *and care, in so much, that*  
 decía éntre sí : Yo estói *she said to herself: I am*  
 segura de aquí adelante no *safe enough, that for the*  
 óse mi marido hacérme *future, my husband will*  
 mal, por no gastar ótro *not dare hurt me, for fear*  
 tanto cómo ha gastado. *of being at so great an ex-*  
 Comunico éste pensami- *pence as he has now been.*  
 énto con sus vezinas y no *She told her neighbours*  
falso

falto quién se lo contáſſe al *what ſhe thought, and ſome-*  
marído. Calló el háſta *body told her huſband. He*  
que éſtúvo ſaña, cuándo *took no notice till ſhe was*  
llamándo al cirujáno ánte *well, when calling the ſur-*  
élla, y ſabído lo que mon- *geon before her, and under-*  
tába la cúra, le dixo. A- *ſtanding what the cure came*  
qui tiene v. m. lo que le *to, he ſaid to him, Sir,*  
débo, y ótro tánto pára *here is what I owe you,*  
ótra vez, ſi ſe le ofreci- *and as much more for ano-*  
ére que lo háya meneſtér *ther time, if my wife ſhall*  
mi mugér. *happen to have occaſion.*

D. 2. Táles mugéres 2 L. *Such women de-*  
tal tráto merécen : que a- *ſerve ſuch uſage: for though*  
unque no es de hábres *it does not become men of*  
de porte ponér las mános *faſhion to ſtrike them, there*  
en éllas, lénguas hái, y *are ſuch tongues and tem-*  
condiciónes que obligan *pers as oblige people to do*  
à lo que no ſe pienſa. Por *what they never thought.*  
eſto ſe díce que el pádre *Therefore they ſay the fa-*  
da el dote, y Diós la bu- *ther gives the portion, and*  
éna mugér. Pero hái *God the good wiſe. But*  
hombres tan ſufrídos que *there are ſome men ſo pa-*  
por tódo paſſan ; tal éra *tient, that they bear with*  
un cornúdo, à quién ſen- *all things ; ſuch a one was*  
tenció la juſticia, que le *a cuckold, who was adjudg-*  
azotáſſe ſu mugér, y que *ed in court to be whipped*  
ſi no le diéſſe récio le di- *by his wiſe, and in caſe ſhe*  
eſſe à élla el verdúgo. El *did not ſtrike hard, the ex-*  
buén hábtre volvió la *ecutioner was to ſtrike her.*  
cabéza, y díxo, Dáme *The good man looked about,*  
récio à mi *Catarína, no*  
te den à ti. *and ſaid, ſtrike me hard*  
*Catherine, that they may*  
*not ſtrike you.*

Cab. 2. No éra tan ſu- 2 G. *A ſon-in-law was*  
frído un yerno que rogó *not ſo patient, who deſired*  
à ſu ſuégro que caſtigáſſe *his father-in-law to chaſtiſe*  
ſu hija, porqué ſi el la ca- *his daughter, becauſe if he*  
ſtigába ſería muí peór, y *did it himſelf, ſhe would be*  
el ſabía que le hacía traí- *worſe, and he knew ſhe*  
*cion.*

cion. Respondió el suegro, repoláos hijo, que por vida de entrámbos, lo mismo hizo su madre hasta que llegó à los sesenta. Ella lo perderá, que así lo hizo ella. Por esto se dice, que se van al cielo los cornudos, porque tanta paciencia no puede quedar sin premio.

D. 1. Algo groseros, con perdon, son estos cuentos, y por mudár, ya que en lo último se habló de ir al cielo, diré lo que he oído acerca de irse al infierno. A un buen predicador, porque decía las verdades, le daban un obispado en las Indias, en tiempo del Emperador Carlos quinto. Propusole el secretario de estado, y el respondió desta manera. Sépa vuestra señoría, que el oficio de obispo es muy gran trabajo, para quien le ha de servir como es obligado; y así conociendo yo mi flaqueza de no le poder administrar como debo, creo que puesto en el sería caminar al infierno, pues ir por las Indias, pareceme gran rodeo.

L. Begging your pardon, these tales are somewhat coarse, and to change, since in the last there was mention of going to heaven, I will say what I have heard about going to hell. Because a good preacher spoke the naked truth, they offered him a bishoprick in the West-Indies, in the days of the Emperor Charles the fifth. The Secretary of state proposed it to him, and he answered thus. Your lordship must understand, that the office of a bishop is very troublesome, for one that will execute it according to his duty; so that I being sensible of my incapacity to perform it as I ought, do think that if I were once settled in it, I should be in the way to hell, and to go by the way of the West-Indies, is very far about.

*Cab.* 1. Grandéza de ánimo christiano fué no admitir un obispado, cófa háрто rára en nuéstras dias, quándo mas se trabaja por ganár úna mitra que por ganár el ciélo. Si es generosidad rehusár lo que no se possée, no lo es ménos dár con máno liberal y buena grácia lo que yá es propio. Esta virtud estúvo en su punto en el *Cónde de Uréna*. Llegó à el *Don Pedro de Guzman*, à suplicalle le mandásse dar algun trigo, porque estába fálto de pan, que aquél año se havia cogído póco. Dixo el Conde à su secretáριο le hiciéffe un libramiénto pára un mayordómo súyo, de mil hanégas de trigo, y miéntras el secretáριο le escribía, quedó hablando con *Don Pédro*. Venído el secretáριο con el libramiénto, halló que decía, Daréis à *Don Pédro* mil hanégas de trigo, de que yo le hágo mercéd. Rásgó el libramiénto, y con algúna cólera dixo al secretario, No havéis de decír, finó que el *Señór Don Pédro de Guzmán* me háce mercéd de recibír de mi. Esta es la verdadéra

1. G. *It was a christian act of generosity not to accept of a bishoprick, a thing very rare in our days, when more pains is taken to get a mitre, than to gain heaven. If it is generosity to refuse what we have not in possession, it is no less so to give freely, and with a good grace that which is our own already. This virtue was in much perfection in the Count de Ureña. Don Pedro de Guzman came to desire he would order him some corn, because it was scarce with him, that year having yielded very little. The Count commanded his secretary to write an order to one of his stewards for a thousand bushels of wheat, and whilst the secretary was writing, he discoursed with Don Pedro. When the secretary brought the order, he found it run, You shall deliver to Don Pedro a thousand bushels of wheat, which I favour him with. He tore the order, and with some heat said to the secretary, You are not to say so, but which Don Pedro de Guzman does me the favour to accept from me. This is true nobility, to give as becomes the giver, nobléza,*

nobléza, dar conforme à *and not to the receiver, and*  
 quién da y no à quién re- *to save him that asks the*  
 cíbe, y quitar la vergüén- *shame by the way of giving.*  
 za à quién píde con el  
 módo de dar.

D. 2. Mas gustóla ma- 2 L. *The subject we have*  
 téria es la que tenemos én- *in hand is more agreeable*  
 tre mános que la pasáda, *than the last, in as much as*  
 cuánto es mas de estimar *virtue is more to be valued*  
 la virtud que el vicio. Pá- *than vice. To go on with*  
 ra proseguir con élla, al *it, an old gentlewoman*  
 Dúque de *Alva* suplicó ú- *prayed the Duke de Alva*  
 na duéña le ayudáse pára *to give her something to-*  
 casár una hija. El Duque *wards marrying off a daugh-*  
 le mandó dar véinte du- *ter. The Duke ordered her*  
 cádos. El camaréro à *twenty ducats. The gen-*  
 quien lo mandó dióle do- *tleman he ordered to do it,*  
 ciéntos. Al tomárle des- *gave her two hundred.*  
 pues la cuenta halló pu- *When he came afterwards*  
 éstos docientos ducados *to take his accounts, he*  
 en lugar de véinte. Díxole *found two hundred ducats*  
 al camaréro cómo pusistes *set down instead of twenty.*  
 aqui docientos ducados, *He said to the gentleman,*  
 no haviéndo de ser finó *How came you to set down*  
 veinte. El camarero res- *two hundred ducats, where-*  
 pondió. Señor, yó oí *as there should be but twen-*  
 docientos ducados. Re- *ty. The gentleman answer-*  
 plicó el Dúque. Bendito *ed, my lord, I understood*  
 sea Dios, que te dió me- *two hundred. The Duke*  
 jóres oídos, que à mi lén- *replied, God be praised, for*  
 gua. Y pasó en cuenta *giving you better ears, than*  
 los docientos ducados. *me a tongue. And so he*  
*passed the two hundred du-*  
*cats in the account.*

Cab. 2. Bien enmendó 2 G. *He made good a-*  
 la falta en el dar con la li- *mends for the error in giv-*  
 beralidad de consentir en *ing by his liberality in con-*  
 lo dádo. El Cónde de *senting to what had been*  
 Féria tenía tanta grandé- *given. The Count de Feria*  
 za

za de animó, que dáva à *had such a generous soul,*  
 tódos quántos le pedían. *that he gave to all that*  
 Tenía costúmbre de dezír *asked him. He was wont*  
 à su mayordómo, Dad à *to say to his steward, Give*  
 fuláno tréinta, o quarénta *such a one thirty, or forty*  
 escúdos; dad à citáno ci- *crowns, give such another*  
 en escúdos, o ciento y *an hundred, or an hundred*  
 cinquenta, de manéra que *and fifty, so that he never*  
 núnca decía cósa señálada. *said any thing certain. The*  
 El mayordómo le díxo, *steward said to him, when*  
 de que v<sup>a</sup>. s<sup>a</sup>. mánda dar *your lordship orders some-*  
 algo, díce tréinte o qua- *thing to be given, you say*  
 rénta, y afsí de ótros nú- *thirty or forty, and so of*  
 meros, con qu<sup>a</sup> quédo *other numbers, so that I*  
 confúso, sin saber à que *am at an uncertainty, not*  
 me aténga. Respondió *knowing which to lay hold*  
 el Conde; Por tu vída *of. The Count answered,*  
 te atén siémpre à lo mas, *I desire you will always*  
 no múdes mi condición. *hold to the most, do not*  
*flint my nature.*

D. I. Céssen un ráto *I L. Let us for a while*  
 las pláticas, y sirvánse v<sup>a</sup>. *cease this discourse, and be*  
 m<sup>a</sup>. de tomár algún re- *pleased to take some refresh-*  
 frésco, o colación. Aquí *ment, or collation. Here is*  
 hái chocoláte, téa, dúl- *chocolate, tea, sweat-meats,*  
 ces, y un trágo de víno, *and a glass of wine, that*  
 pára que escója cáda qual *every one may choose what*  
 lo que mas le agradáre; *he likes best; for talking,*  
 que ésto de hablár, síno *though it be no labour,*  
 es trabájo, gásta el alién- *spends the breath, and it*  
 to, y es menestér dar al- *is convenient to give some*  
 gún alívio al estómago, *support to the stomach, for*  
 que son muchas las horas *there are many hours be-*  
 éntre la comída y la cena. *tween dinner and supper.*



Coloquios Españóles è Ingléſes.  
*Spanish and English Colloquies.*

Colóquio ſexto. COLLOQUY VI.

*Entre dos Capitánes, y dos Cortefános.* Between two Captains,  
 and two Courtiers.

1 Cap. **B**Uen encuen- 1 Cap. **W**ELL met,  
 tro, Señóres, Gentlemen,  
 dos à dos; conque eſtá- two and two; ſo that we  
 mos iguáles, no nos lle- are equal, we ſhall have no  
 varémos ventája en la ſuperiority in converſation;  
 Converſación; y ſi huvi- and if we ſhould happen to  
 éremos de reñir, à páres fall out, we are ready pair-  
 venímos. ed.

1 Cor. A eſſa cuenta, 1 Cour. After that rate,  
 mas vále no eſtár tan iguá- it is better not to be ſo equal,  
 les, que en términos de than juſt fitted to make  
 armár pendéncias. quarrels.

2 Cap. Bien dice v. 2 Cap. You are in the  
 m<sup>d</sup>. que acá éntre Amí- right, Sir, for here among  
 gos ſólo ſe ha de tratár de friends we muſt only talk of  
 Paz; la Guerra há de ſer peace; War muſt be with  
 con los enemigos del the King's enemies.  
 Rey.

2 Cor. Y éſta para v. 2 Cour. And that is for  
 m<sup>s</sup>. que han tomado por you, Gentlemen, who have  
 eſſe camíno; que noſó- taken to that way; for we  
 tros múi bien nos hallá- are very well ſatisfied with  
 mos con la quietúd de la the reſoſe of the Court.  
 Corte.

1 Cap. A noſótroſ nos 1 Cap. This has fallen  
 há cabído eſto en parte, to our lot, and the other to  
 y à



y à v. mds. lo otro ; Ca- yours ; every one suits him-  
da úno se acomóda con self to that he was born  
aquéllo paraque nació. for.

1 Cor. Fuérza es que 1 Cour. There must of  
háya de todo en éste mun- necessity be of all sorts in  
do : 'Unos hizo Diós pá- this world : God made some  
ra la Milícia, ótros pá- for warfare, others for the  
Palácio ; únos pá- Court ; some for religious  
giólos, ótros para tratan- men, others for trades ;  
tes ; unos para ofícios some for mechanic employ-  
mechánicos, ótros pá- ments, others for Peasants ;  
labradóres ; únos pá- some to command, and o-  
mandár, y ótros para fer- thers to serve.  
vír.

2 Cap. La misma va- 2 Cap. The same va-  
riedad que se hálla en los riety that is found in sever-  
diferentes estádos, vémos al states, we see in the ca-  
en las Capacidades y dis- pacities and dispositions of  
posiciones de los hombres. men. There are some per-  
Personas hái que son há- sons qualified for all posts,  
biles para todos los pue- but they are few ; and  
stos, pero son pocas ; y those if they are fortunate,  
estas si son afortunadas rise from one to the other,  
van subiendo de úno en till they attain to great ho-  
ótro hásta alcanzár múi nours. On the contrary  
grandes honras. Al con- there are others, that being  
trário hái ótros, que no very undeserving obtain  
teniendo habilidad pá- what they please ; and ge-  
cósá algúna, alcanzan lo nerally speaking, the most  
que quieren ; y general- deserving are unlucky, I  
mente hablando, los mas speak of the good soldiers.  
beneméritos son desgra-  
ciados, digo de los bué-  
nos soldádos.

2 Cor. Lo mismo su- 2 Cour. The same hap-  
cede en la Corte, en don- pens at Court, where only  
de solo aquellos que em- those that spend all their  
pléan todo su talento en talent in making much of  
agafajár las Dámas y agra- the Ladies and pleasing  
C c 2 dárlos,

dárlas, son losque mé- *them, are the persons that*  
 dran. *thrive.*

1 *Cap.* Eſſo es verdad; 1 *Cap.* *That is true ;*  
 y quantos hémos viſto al- *and how many we have*  
 canzár puestos de mucha *seen advanced to poſts of*  
 reputación por ſóla ſu *much reputation, only for*  
 deſvergüenza, ò por ſu *their impudence, or their*  
 dinéro, quedandote atrás *money, the deſerving per-*  
 las perſónas de mérito. *ſons being laid aſide.*

1 *Cor.* Quien es enco- 1 *Cour.* *He that is baſh-*  
 gído guárdſe de entrár *ful muſt take heed of going*  
 en córtés ; ningúnos mé- *to courts ; none thrive like*  
 dran como los deſcarados, *foreheads of braſs, flatte-*  
 aduladóres, y losque tié- *rers, and thoſe that have*  
 nen deſpéjo. *confidence with themſelves.*

2 *Cap.* Los ſoldádos 2 *Cap.* *We the ſoldiers*  
 tenemos algo de eſſe ví- *have ſome ſhare in that*  
 cio, porque de ótra fuer- *vice, becauſe otherwiſe we*  
 te no fuéramos de prové- *ſhould not be fit for war :*  
 cho pára la guérria : tres *we have three motives to*  
 motivos tenemos para ex- *expoſe ourſelves to ſo many*  
 ponernos à tantos trabájos *hardſhips and dangers ;*  
 y pelígrós ; que ſon, por *which are, for the Faith,*  
 la Fé, por la honra, y *for honour, and for pro-*  
 por el provécho. Los *fit. We the ſoldiers,*  
 ſoldádos (Díós nos per- *(God forgive us) though we*  
 dóne) aunque hagámos *make war againſt the In-*  
 guerra à Infiéles, mas *fidels, human advantages*  
 nos muéven las médras *have more influence over us*  
 humanas, que las esperan- *than the hopes of heaven.*  
 zas del Cielo. La hon- *Honour is a ſovereign mo-*  
 ra es un motivo ſoberáno ; *tive ; and though they ſay,*  
 y aunque dicen, que hon- *that the ſame bag cannot*  
 ra y provécho no cáben en *hold honour and profit,*  
 un ſáco, yo digo que hon- *I ſay that honour with-*  
 ra ſin provécho es ſombra *out profit is a ſhadow*  
 ſin ſubſtancia. Quién ga- *without ſubſtance. Who*  
 nó mas honra que el fa- *is there that gained more*  
 moſo Capitán Belíſário? *honour than the famous*  
 Y qui-

Y quien mas desgraciá- *Commander Belisarius?*  
do? *And who more unfortunate?*

2 *Cor.* Grande fué la 2 *Cour.* *Great was the*  
Caída de *Belisário*, y no *fall of Belisarius, nor was*  
fué menór la de *António* *that of António Pérez*  
*Pérez*; aquél fué Gene- *less; the former was the*  
ral del Imperador *Justinian's* *Emperor Justinian's*  
*Gen-eral*, y éste *Miníſtro* fa- *neral, and this favorite*  
vorecido del Rey *Don* *Minister to King Philip*  
*Pbelípe* el ſegundo; el ú- *the ſecond; the one a great*  
no Gran ſoldádo, el ótro *soldier, the other no less a*  
no menor Cortefáno. Fal- *Courtier. Belisarius want-*  
tóle la ventúra à *Belifá-* *ed the fortune to have it in*  
*rio* de poder, y tener à *his power, and have a*  
donde huír; túvola *Antó-* *place to fly to; António*  
*nio Pérez*, en eſcapárſe y *Pérez* *had it in making his*  
hallár un Rey de Frán- *escape, and finding a King*  
cia que le ſuſtentáſſe con- *of France to maintain him*  
forme à ſu Calidad. *according to his quality.*

1 *Cap.* Ahí ſe vé lo 1 *Cap.* *That ſhows how*  
póco que háí que fiár en *little truſt is to be repoſed in*  
las grandézas de éſta ví- *the grandours of this life.*  
da. Dos de los mayó-es *Two of the greateſt men*  
hombres que húvo en el *there have been in the*  
mundo, el úno ſacádos *world, one of them his eyes*  
los ójos, el ótro pueſto *put out, the other put up-*  
en un tormento; el úno *on a rack; the one beg-*  
mendigando por las cál- *ging in the ſtreets, the other*  
les, el ótro huyéndo por *flying to ſave his life; and*  
librár la vída, y éſto *not for any offence of either*  
ſin culpa de ninguno de *of them.*  
ellos.

1 *Cor.* Que un Rey 1 *Cour.* *For a King to*  
caſtígue à ſus Vaſállos *puniſh his ſubjects for being*  
por deſleáles, es juſticia; *diſloyal, it is juſtice; to per-*  
péro que persíga ſin pie- *ſecute his ſubject without*  
dad un Vaſállo, ſolo por *mercy, only for having*  
haverle

haverle obedecido, es in- *obeyed him, is such an hor-*  
 humanidad tan horrible, *rid inhumanity, that the*  
 que apenas se hallará fe- *like of it can scarce be found*  
 mejante entre las mas bár- *among the most barbarous*  
 baras naciones. Mucho *nations. Some authors*  
 han escrito algunos Au- *have writ much in com-*  
 tores en alabanza de a- *mendation of that King, but*  
 quel Rey, pero quien *whosoever shall read his life*  
 leyere su vida con aten- *with attention, will find*  
 ción, hallará que el fué la *that he was the ruin of*  
 ruína de España. *Spain.*

2 Cap. Loque à nosó- 2 Cap. *What concerns*  
 tros nos importa, es pro- *us, is to endeavour to rise,*  
 curar subir, sin ponernos *without standing to consider*  
 à pensar si podremos caer; *whether we may fall; the*  
 la dificultad está en lo pri- *difficulty consists in the first*  
 méro, y venga después *part, and let what will af-*  
 loque viniere. *terwards follow.*

2 Cor. Habilidad y bu- 2 Cour. *There must be*  
 en ánimo es menester pa- *capacity and a good heart*  
 ra todo, y lo cierto es, *for every thing, and it is*  
 que el que no tiene su pun- *certain, that he who has*  
 to de Ambición, mas es *not some share in ambition,*  
 para un convento que pá- *is fitter for a monastery than*  
 ra el mundo. *for the world.*

1 Cap. Quién le há 1 Cap. *Who has told*  
 dicho, que en los Con- *you, that there is no ambi-*  
 ventos no se hálle ambi- *tion in the convents? Do*  
 ción? No vemos todos *not we see every day, there*  
 los días que son demasiá *are too many that trouble*  
 dos los que revuelven el *all the world to rise to be*  
 mundo para ser Superi- *Superiors, and even Bi-*  
 ores, y aún Obispos? *shops?*

1 Cor. Es cierto, y 1 Cour. *It is certain,*  
 harto nos dan en que en- *and we have enough to do*  
 tender. *with them.*

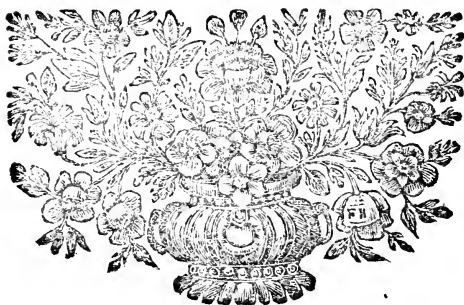
2 Cap. Dexémoslos al- 2 Cap. *Let us leave*  
 lá, y solo digo, que nu- *them there, I only say,*  
 estira

estra veréda es múi estre- *that our path is very nar-*  
 cha, y cáda pállo se há *row, and every step is to*  
 de ír ganando à fuégo y *be gained with fire and*  
 à sangre; y si despues *blood; and if after all we*  
 de esto se alcanza algo, *attain something, an unhap-*  
 lléga una desdicháda bala *py ball comes and over-*  
 y dá con tódo en tier- *throws it all.*  
 ra.

2 Cor. Aunque noso- 2 Cour. *Although we*  
 tros no estámos tan su- *are not so subject to so ma-*  
 jétos à tantos trabájos y *ny hardships and fatigues,*  
 fatigas, neccesidádes, frí- *wants, colds, heats, bad*  
 os, calóres, malos días y *days, and worse nights, to*  
 peóres nóches, à tantas *so many wounds, and to*  
 herídas, y à tantos ries- *so many dangers, fatal effects*  
 gos, (efectos fatáles de la *of war; notwithstanding,*  
 guerra): sin embargo, *I assure you, that we have*  
 les asseguro, que no nos *war and dangers enough in*  
 faltan guerra y pelígras *courts, although we do*  
 en la corte aunque la ha- *make it after another man-*  
 cémos de otra fuerte; no *ner; we do not make our*  
 ensangrentámos las espá- *swords bloody, we spend no*  
 das, no gastámos pólvora; *powder; bullets do not kill;*  
 no mátan las bálas; *all victories are gained by*  
 todas las vitórias se gá- *contrivance and stratagems;*  
 nan por ardídes y estra- *wit, the pen, and tongue*  
 tagémas; el ingénio, la *work, and not force. It*  
 pluma, y lengua obran, *is true, that there reign*  
 no la fuerza. Es verdád, *envy, hypocrisy, flattery,*  
 que allí reinan la invídia, *deceits, falsities, frauds,*  
 hypocresía, lisonjas, en- *and other sorts of wicked-*  
 gáños, falsedádes, fráu- *ness, that I am ashamed*  
 des, y ótros maldádes, *to make them public, I be-*  
 que, à no avergonzarme, *ing one of them; but from*  
 por fer uno de ellos, las *what is said you may in-*  
 dixéra; pero de lo dicho *fer what passes there.*  
 v. m<sup>ds</sup>. puéden inferir lo-  
 que allí se passa.

1 y 2 Caps. Si esta es 1 and 2 Caps. If that be  
 la vida de la Corte, vi- the Court life, we rather  
 vámos y murámos nosó- chuse to live and die in the  
 tros en la campaña ; don- field ; where we fight  
 de nos reñimos con nu- with our enemies, and  
 éstros enemigos, y tratá- deal justly with our  
 mos verdad con los a- friends.  
 mígos.

*F I N I S.*



1.  
2.  
3.

4.  
5.  
6.  
7.  
8.  
9.  
10.





# John Adams Library,



IN THE CUSTODY OF THE  
BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY.



SHELF N<sup>o</sup>

ADAMS  
193.14

